THE ANNALS OF TACITUS
BOOKS I.—VI.
AN ENGLISH TRANSLATION
WITH INTRODUCTION, NOTES AND MAPS

By GEORGE GILBERT RAMSAY

M.A., LITT.D., LL.D., PROFESSOR OF HUMANITY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF GLASGOW
EDITOR OF 'SELECTIONS FROM TIBULLUS AND PROPERTIUS,' 'LATIN PROSE COMPOSITION,'
'LATIN VERSIONS,' ETC.

Quis illo verius narrat aut brevius? Quis narrando
magis docet? In moribus, quid est quod non tangat?
in affectibus, quod non revelet?

J. Lipsius.

LONDON
JOHN MURRAY, ALBEMARLE STREET

1904
PREFACE.

I have attempted in this volume an ambitious, many will think a hopeless, task: to give a version of the first six books of the Annals which shall be close and faithful to the original, and yet shall not read as a translation; which shall satisfy the strict demands of modern scholarship, and yet give to the English reader some idea of the power, the dignity, the greatness, of the great historian of Rome.

The addition of notes was indispensable to enable the English reader to understand and enjoy the text. Tacitus wrote for a circle familiar with every detail of Roman life, and I have thought it necessary to include in the text only such references as he might himself have made.

ERRATA.

Page xxxii. line 12, for 'Signor' read 'Count.'
Page xxxvi. line 28, for 'General' read 'Général.'
Page xxxviii. line 3, and page lxvii. note 3 and 4, for 'under the patronage of' read 'with the political reflections, etc., of.'
Page lxvii. line 1, and page lxix. line 5, for 'Sir Henry Savile,' and page lxx. line 5, and page lxxi. line 8, for 'Sir George Savile,' read 'Gillyflower.'
Page lxviii. line 5, for 'chevau' read 'chevaux.'
Page lxxvii. line 7, for 'it' read 'the phrase nihil integri.'
Page lxxvii. line 21, for 'iv.' read 'vi.' and line 32, for '36' read '25.'
Page 117, line 1, for 'Cherusci' read 'Chauci.'
Page 126, line 12, for 'Cato' read 'Catus.'
Page 259, note 4, lines 6 and 7, for 'adopted from the gens Aelia into the gens Seia' read 'adopted from the gens Seia into the gens Aelia.'
Page 337, line 2, for 'Cnaeus' read 'Gnaeus.'
I have attempted in this volume an ambitious, many will think a hopeless, task: to give a version of the first six books of the Annals which shall be close and faithful to the original, and yet shall not read as a translation; which shall satisfy the strict demands of modern scholarship, and yet give to the English reader some idea of the power, the dignity, the greatness, of the great historian of Rome.

The addition of notes was indispensable to enable the English reader to understand and enjoy the text. Tacitus wrote for a circle familiar with every detail of Roman history, life and manners, and there is hardly a chapter which does not contain historical or other matter which needs explanation. The notes, it is hoped, will make it unnecessary for the reader to consult ordinary books of reference, as well as help the student to become acquainted with the results of recent historical research on the various points of constitutional law and usage for which Tacitus is so important an authority. For this purpose I have made frequent reference to the great German works of Mommsen, Marquardt, Friedlaender, and others, as well as to the writings of Professor Pelham, Mr. Rushforth, Mr. Greenidge, and other labourers of our own in the same field.
I have also put into the notes what I have to say upon the larger historical questions which present themselves in these books, and particularly those connected with the character and government of Tiberius and the qualities of Tacitus as an historian. In the case of a character so complex, so full of contradictions, as that of Tiberius, and of a writer so careful as to his main facts, but so often warped in his comments upon them, as Tacitus, I have thought that it would be more helpful to discuss these questions in connection with the particular passages on which our judgment must be founded, with the aid of such light as external evidence can supply, than to begin by summing up the whole case in a general introduction.

In preparing the translation, I have had constantly in my hands the admirable edition of Mr. Furneaux. I have taken it as my guide throughout, though not always agreeing with his interpretations. Nor can I admit the possibility of many of the alternative renderings of passages which are suggested both by him and by other commentators. Tacitus has often been called obscure; but in my opinion, a scholar who has studied his style will very seldom feel serious doubts as to the way in which a passage should be taken. I have also frequently consulted the editions of Orelli, Ruperti, Nipperdey, and other well-known editors; I have made use of P. Fabia's excellent "Onomasticon Taciteum" (Paris and Lyons, 1900); and the help afforded by the "Lexicon Taciteum" of Gerber and Greer, now at length completed, has been invaluable.

The text followed has been in almost all cases that of Halm, which was that adopted, with few
exceptions, by Mr. Furneaux. Variations from that
text have been mentioned in the notes. I have care-
fully examined the famous Medicean MS. No. 1. (our
sole authority for Annals I.—VI.) in regard to all
difficult or doubtful readings, and have satisfied myself
of the extreme accuracy of Halm’s recension.

I owe much to the help and encouragement
of many kind friends. Mr. Furneaux expressed to
me the opinion that the time had come for a fresh
translation, and warmly encouraged me to under-
take the work. Dr. J. G. Frazer, Mr. A. O. Prickard,
Mr. E. D. A. Morshead, and Professor Harrower,
each looked over some portion of the translation in
manuscript, and gave me valuable suggestions. The
Ven. Archdeacon Aglen has most kindly read over
the whole of the proof sheets, and enabled me to
remove many blemishes. But my greatest debt of
all is to the acute word-by-word criticism of one
whose fine sense of what is pure and perspicuous
in English recalls the well-known passage in which
Cicero speaks of the beautiful simple Latin which
he had heard spoken in his youth by the cultivated
ladies of the time.

G. G. RAMSAY.

The University, Glasgow,
December 1, 1903.
# CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>INTRODUCTION</td>
<td>xv–lxxx</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FAMILY STEM OF THE CÆSARS</td>
<td>facing 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ANNALS, BOOK I.</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOOK II.</td>
<td>100</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOOK III.</td>
<td>184</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOOK IV.</td>
<td>259</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOOK V., CHAPTERS 1–5</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>SUPPLEMENT TO BOOK V.</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOOK V., CHAPTERS 6–11</td>
<td>354</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOOK VI.</td>
<td>359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MAPS</td>
<td>after 424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>INDEX</td>
<td>425</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
LIST OF MAPS.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Map Description</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ITALIA</td>
<td>after 424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THE ROMAN EMPIRE (WESTERN HALF)</td>
<td>424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>THE ROMAN EMPIRE (EASTERN HALF)</td>
<td>424</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>FOUR PORTRAITS</td>
<td>Frontispiece</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
INTRODUCTION.

TACITUS AND HIS TRANSLATORS.

M. DUREAU DE LA MALLE, the most famous of the French translators of Tacitus, tells us that many capable critics and distinguished writers among his countrymen had regarded the production of a really good translation of Tacitus as 'une oeuvre impossible.' Our own scholarly translators, Messrs. Church and Brodribb, in their preface to the Histories (1864) write: 'It has been said that Tacitus never has been translated, and probably never will be.' With that opinion, so far as it concerns English translations, they pronounce their agreement: 'They are all very unsatisfactory; ... the best of them, that of Murphy, is in no sense a translation.' Our own great authority on Tacitus, the late Mr. Furneaux, expressed to me the same view: 'You will find but little help,' he wrote, 'from earlier translators. Wherever there is a difficulty, they evade it.'

The two latter judgments doubtless were pronounced rather from the scholar's point of view; that quoted by M. de la Malle from the point of view of style. But I can quote an opinion of a different kind, which was remarkable as coming from an acute critic and man of the world, interested in literature, though not a classical scholar in the special sense of
the term. The late Lord Blackburn was a great reader, of the classics as well as of other literature; but being a busy man, he read his classics through the medium of translations. Studying them in that way, he said, he had been able to recognise and appreciate the greatness of all the great authors of Greece and Rome, with the single exception of Tacitus. He had read all the versions of the works of Tacitus on which he could lay his hands; but not one of them had helped him to understand the secret of his prodigious reputation, or even to comprehend why he should be regarded as a great writer at all.

As a lover of Tacitus, I was greatly struck by this remark. That a classical scholar like M. Furneaux, steeped in the peculiarities of Tacitean idiom, should pronounce existing translations of Tacitus inadequate, was only to be expected; but that a cultivated English reader could find none capable of making him feel that Tacitus is a great writer—this criticism, if just, conveys a condemnation far more sweeping and fundamental than the criticisms that 'all existing translations are unsatisfactory' in point of correctness, or that a really adequate translation of Tacitus, from a literary point of view, is 'une œuvre impossible.' It implies that the ideas of Tacitus as well as his language, his matter as well as his manner, are inaccessible to the English reader.

To classical students, the merits of Tacitus, as a narrator, as a moralist, and as a stylist, are obvious and commanding. He has been regarded by many as a perfect literary artist. Racine has pronounced him 'le plus grand peintre de l'antiquité.' M. Nisard says of him: 'Le plus près de l'idéal de l'histoire, telle que nous la concevons, avec la forte culture
moderne, est Tacite. Competent judges have classed him as one of the four, possibly one of the three, great historians of the world. Can it be the case that his great qualities are as a sealed book to all who cannot read him in the original?

If Tacitus has never been adequately translated, it has certainly not been from the want of scholars to attempt the work, or of a public to appreciate their efforts. Few ancient authors have been translated so frequently, and into so many languages, as Tacitus; few, if any, have exercised so great a fascination over men of letters, philosophers and statesmen; none have been appealed to more confidently in times of acute political disturbance. From the moment when his works were rescued from oblivion, they excited the admiration of all votaries of the new learning. Men of letters were charmed by the originality and splendour of their style, philosophers and moralists by the profound knowledge of human nature which they display; statesmen and politicians admired their high imperial tone, the grandeur of their moral ideas, and their note of aristocratic disdain. Even the vulgar could relish an historian who lashed the vices of the great, and endure a philosopher whose philosophy was so curiously tempered by superstition. Wherever men groaned under the heel of despots, great or small, they were captivated by the pure air of liberty breathed by Tacitus, and by his merciless portraiture of tyrants.

'Dès qu'il a peint les tyrans,' says an enthusiastic admirer, 'ils sont punis. . . . Tacite apprit alors aux souverains du monde qu'il y avait au dessus d'eux un

---

1 'Les Quatre grands Historiens' (C. Lévy, 1884).
2 See nn. on Ann. ii. 69, 5; iv. 20, 5: 58, 4; vi. 23, 5: 20, 8.
pouvoir qui les jugeait, qui les représenterait à la postérité avec tous leurs vices à nu : et que ce pouvoir était l'histoire."

At the time when the works of Tacitus were discovered, the grandeur of Imperial Rome had still a potent influence over men's minds. The dream of universal dominion, the order of Roman administration, still excited the imagination of statesmen; in Tacitus they found at once an historian and a critic of that Empire at her zenith, from whom they could gather countless lessons in matters of government, statecraft, and public conduct.

To all classes alike, Tacitus seemed to speak as one having authority. He was more than a philosopher or a mere man of letters. By birth a noble, he had moved in the best society of Rome, had lived on intimate terms with Emperors, and knew all the secrets of the political history of his time. As an advocate and an orator, he had conducted some of the great state trials of the day; as a member of the Senate, he was familiar with the procedure, the prejudices, the impotence, of that body; he had witnessed and taken a part—probably a moderate and discreet part, like that which he so commends in the case of Manius Lepidus (iv. 20, 4)—in some of its most infamous acts of servility. Having climbed up the political ladder, and filled every ordinary office, whether secular or sacred, up to the highest, he was familiar with all the details of Roman government and administration; having been in turn 'guerrier, avocat, magistrat, juge, financier, pontife,' there was no department of human life on which he could not speak from the practical standpoint of a man of affairs,

1 Panckoucke, pref. p. 7.  
2 M. de la Malle, pref.
TACITUS THE MOUTHPIECE OF EVERY AGE.

as well as from the lofty moral pedestal of a Stoic and a philosopher.

It was little wonder, then, that amid the general burst of enthusiasm which greeted the recovery of the lost treasures of antiquity in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries, the works of Tacitus should have been welcomed with peculiar fervour. He supplied texts for every school of political thought, illustrations for every phase of human character. Every class, every people, were able to draw from him maxims which seemed to fit their own case. In every country, at every period, under every variety of political and social condition, men found in Tacitus a mouthpiece for the ideas and the feelings of their time.

One writer calls him 'le prince des historiens;' M. de la Malle describes him as, 'l'écrivain le plus parfait de l'antiquité;' and an earlier translator, M. Perrot d'Ablancourt, speaks thus of him in his dedication to Cardinal Richelieu:—

'Il est depuis quinze cent ans l'Oracle de la Politique; on l'a traduit en toute langue; il est en estime chez tous les peuples. On a fait des sentences de toutes ses lignes, des mystères de toutes ses paroles. C'est lui qui a engendré toute la Politique de l'Espagne et d'Italie; c'est dans ses doctes écrits qu'on s'est instruit en l'art de régner; c'est chez luy que les Princes de la maison d'Autriche consultent encore tous les jours dans la nécessité de leurs affaires. . . . C'est votre Eminence qui a sceu mettre en usage ces grandes maximes, et qui laissant à nos ennemis les moins généreux, a réuny sous l'Empire de Louis le Juste la magnanimité de François Premier et la politique de Louis Onzième.'

Henri IV. of France commanded his own physician, Rodolphe le Maistre, to undertake a translation of Tacitus,—
's'étonnant que le Tacite, tant estimé sur tous autres écrivains, n'eust encore rencontré une plume française pour le rendre plus intelligible; veu le grand bien qui en pouvait réussir aux Rois, aux Princes, aux chefs d'armées, aux conseillers d'État en temps de guerre et de paix,'

and Le Maistre, in his preface, pronounces Tacitus to be 'le seul authour digne des roys and des grands princes pour la connoissance de bien gouverner leurs Estats;' his History is 'remplie de maximes d'Estat qui paraissent autant d'oracles pour l'instruction des Rois.'

M. Achille de Harlay, Sieur de Chanvallon, Marquis de Breval, etc., tells us in the preface to his translation (1644) that he has spent the best years of his life 'in the School of Tacitus,' whom he regards as 'le maistre et l'Oracle universel des secrets de l'art de gouverner depuis plus de quinze cent ans.' And in dedicating his translation to Anne of Austria, Queen of France, he demands a safe conduct for his author, because 'il est accoutumé d'entrer dans les Cabinets des Princes, et de pénétrer bien avant dans le secret de leur conseils. Il donne des préceptes à tous les autres souverains.' M. de la Mothe-Josseval d'Aronsel, in the dedication of his 'Discours Politiques sur Tacite' to the Duke of Savoy (1683), carries this idea further still,—

'Tacite, savant comme il est dans les affaires d'État, et dans les intrigues de Cour, sait parfaitement de quoi il faut entretenir et instruire les Princes. C'est de la vie de son Tibère que Louis Onzième, Roi de France, aprit à dissimuler, et, par conséquent, à régner. C'est lui que Louise de Savoie consulta pour sauver la France après la prise du Roi François, son fils, à la Bataille de Pavie. C'est lui que Filipppe II., Roi d'Espagne,
A TEACHER FOR KINGS AND STATESMEN. xx

Votre Trisâeul maternel, appelloit à toutes ses plus secrètes délibérations. C'est à force de le lire et de l'étudier que le Sérénissime Duc Charles-Emmanuel I., Votre Bisaâeul, devint le plus grand politique de son temps.'

Language similar to this is applied to Tacitus in the various editions and translations which appeared in such number throughout Europe during the sixteenth, seventeenth, and eighteenth centuries. Everywhere his name is associated with those of rulers and statesmen. In Germany, Goldhagen and Patzke dedicate their translation of the Annals (1771), to King Frederick the Great, in terms similar to those which have been quoted above; and another German translator, J. S. Müller (1765), in dedicating his work to George III., declares that Tacitus is a teacher to all statesmen, that Augustus and Germanicus are a model for Kings, and that His Majesty has followed the example of Augustus in spreading peace, happiness, and good government over the nations of the earth.

So too in England, where, until recent times, Tacitus has met with less attention than on the Continent. In 1598, Richard Grenewey dedicates his translation to 'the Rt. Hon. Robert, Earle of Essex and Earle Marshall of England;' Thomas Gordon (1728), the merciless critic of previous translators, seeks a patron in Sir Robert Walpole, First Commissioner of the Treasury; while Murphy (1793), in presenting his work to the Rt. Hon. E. Burke, asks—

'To whom can Tacitus, the greatest statesman of his time, be so properly addressed as to him whose writings have saved the country? Scenes of horror, like those which you have described, were enacted at Rome, and Tacitus has painted them in colours equal to your own.'
INTRODUCTION.

Murphy's dedication brings us down to the time of the French Revolution, and we may be sure that the French, with their rare capacity for reading into their own times the lessons of the past, did not fail to call on Tacitus to take his part in the contests of those days. In the reign of 'Le Grand Monarque,' the great tyrant-hater was comparatively neglected. His political teaching was little suited to the atmosphere of the French Court. He was admired mainly for his style; he supplied ideas and inspiration to Corneille, to Bossuet, and to Racine. But when the time of the philosophers came on, and the ideas of the Revolution were in the air, Tacitus again became the rage; his uncompromising note of freedom, his Stoical theory of a state of nature, delighted the disciples of Jean Jacques Rousseau, who himself published a version of the first book of the Annals, in 1781.

It was at this moment that M. Dureau de la Malle gave his translation to the world (1790). His preface is a reflection of the political sentiment of the hour. It breathes the same heroic spirit of self-renunciation which inspired the famous meetings in the Tennis-Court of Versailles in 1789; it recalls the constitution-mongering of the Abbé Sièyes. The author frankly recognizes the necessity of the change at Rome from Republic to Monarchy; but he severely hectors Augustus for his method of bringing it about. Instead of employing craft and evasion when he came to the ordering of the Empire, Augustus should have taken the Senate into his confidence. He should have deplored, in a spirit of bitter contrition, the violence and the crimes which had raised him to power, and have explained, by a survey of recent history, the necessity for establishing a strong central government.
He should then have produced a constitution, complete in all its parts, for the future government of the Empire. This constitution having been read aloud by a quaestor, Augustus himself should have explained all details, answered all objections, and finally, in a moment of supreme self-sacrifice, he should have surrendered his power into the hands of the Senate. M. de la Malle puts into his mouth a speech of glowing eloquence suitable to such an occasion, ending as follows:—

'Ah! sortons au plus tôt de cette triste prééminence qui nous prive de l'amitié et de la vérité! Que je goûte la douceur de vivre avec mes égaux! Et vous, Sénateurs, songez maintenant à cimenter, par les liens d'une constitution durable, la liberté des citoyens, et la tranquillité de l'État. Jamais de plus grands objets n'auront été soumis à vos délibérations. Songez que de ce jour va dépendre le destin de toute la terre dans toute la suite des siècles!'

Such a speech as this, M. de la Malle assures us, would have been received with universal acclamation. The past of Augustus would have been forgotten and forgiven, all power would have been put back into his hands, and the Empire, established henceforth on a legal constitutional basis, would have been spared all the agonies to which it was subjected by the fiction of republican freedom on which it was founded.

A few years later, the name of Tacitus is heard once more, in the midst of the horrors of the Revolution. Mr. Gaston Boissier¹ has supplied us with two notable instances of how the words of Tacitus breathed again and burned in those dark days. When Madame Roland was a prisoner in the Sainte Pélagie, awaiting the summons to the scaffold, and within ear-shot of

¹ Tacite (Hachette et Cie, 1902), pp. 191-194.
the raging mob outside, she used to comfort herself by reading Tacitus:—

‘J'ai pris pour Tacite,' she writes, ‘une sorte de passion; je le relis pour la quatrième fois de ma vie, avec un goût tout nouveau. Je ne puis me coucher sans en avoir savouré quelques pages.’

Still more remarkable was the use made of Tacitus by Camille Desmoulins in the pages of the 'Vieux Cordelier.' Not daring to fulminate openly against the excesses of the revolutionary tribunals, he found in quotations from the Annals an indirect mode of denouncing the reign of terror and suspicion under which Paris was groaning. He could tell, in the words of Tacitus, how in Rome, under Tiberius—

‘men kept their counsel from their nearest and their dearest, and avoided meeting or speaking to their neighbours; how they looked with suspicion on dumb and lifeless things, on the very walls and roofs of houses; how at one moment they would desert the streets in terror, at another come back to shew themselves, afraid because they had appeared to be afraid.’

Or under cover of recalling the cruelty of Tiberius, he could depict the still more bloodthirsty atrocities of a Parisian mob:—

‘There lay the bodies, huddled together, in untold number; victims of both sexes, high and low, of every age, singly or in heaps; no relative or friend might stand by, or shed a tear over them, or even cast a look at them for more than a moment. . . . Terror had cut them off from all commerce with their kind, and cruelty, waxed wanton, had closed the door of pity to them.'

Parallels like these went home. They were received with rapture by the trembling many, they stung to fury the powers of the day; and, on the

1 Ann. iv. 69, 6; and 70, 4.  
2 Ann. vi. 19, 3-5.
motion of Robespierre himself, the third number of the 'Vieux Cordelier' was burned, like the history of Cremutius Cordus,\(^1\) in the Jacobin clubs.

But Desmoulins was not yet to be silenced. He went on quoting Tacitus; and in his seventh and last number he demonstrated that the inhumanity of a Tiberius or a Nero was as nothing compared to that of his own countrymen. M. Gaston Boissier thus describes the issue:—

\[
\text{'On comprend que ces protestations éloquentes aient soulevé la fureur des Jacobins. Il ne leur suffit plus cette fois de brûler le numéro qui les contenait. Ils traduisèrent l'auteur devant le Tribunal révolutionnaire, qui l'envoya tout de suite à l'échafaud, pour lui apprendre à aller chercher dans les historiens anciens des leçons de justice et de miséricorde.}
\]

\[
\text{'Ce jour-là, Tacite, seize siècles après sa mort, se trouva réaliser l'idée qu'il nous donne de l'histoire, quand il l'associe à la morale, et veut en faire, suivant ses expressions, la conscience de l'humanité.'}
\]

This was a noble testimony to Tacitus; but an act of homage of a not less notable kind was rendered to him by Napoleon. Early in 1804 there had appeared at Parma a handsome volume containing a translation of Annals, Book I., by Ludovico Vittorio Saviola, with a dedication: 'All' invito Napoleone Buonaparte, Primo Consule della Republica Francese, e Presidente della Republica Italiana.' In the preface, Napoleon is described as 'massimo negli studj di guerra come di pace;' and his patronage is claimed for the great champion of human liberty at that auspicious moment when the nations have been redeemed from bondage. Whether moved by this hint, or not, Napoleon did not fail to study his Tacitus; and took an early opportunity of expressing his opinion of

\(^1\) Ann. iv. 35, 5.
him. On the 18th of May, 1804, the First Consul of the Republic had been crowned Emperor; on the 5th of December, 1805, he fought the battle of Austerlitz; and on the 11th of January, 1806, the Institute of France conveyed to him their congratulations in terms of high compliment. They told him that History, as well as Literature, would record his triumphs; adding that 'l'Institut, en anticipant sur les éloges que l'histoire vous réserve, est, comme elle, l'organe de la vérité.'

This allusion to the verdict of history was not acceptable. In his reply, Napoleon fell foul of Tacitus, and suggested to the aged secretary of the Institute, M. Suard, that he should write something to correct the errors and false judgments of the historian. M. Suard is said to have replied with dignity that the 'fame of Tacitus stood too high for any one to think of pulling it down.'

But Napoleon was in earnest; his dislike of Tacitus was no freak of the moment. So, as M. Suard proved refractory, an article decrying Tacitus, 'from a learned and devoted pen,' appeared in the Journal des Débats of February 11th. It was followed by a second article—possibly aided by notes from the Emperor himself—on the 21st. In these articles the claims of Tacitus to admiration are called in question; his mysterious oracular style is derided, and the reasons for the imperial displeasure are thus disclosed:—

'La haine des tyrans qui semble avoir guidé la plume, et enflammé le génie, de Tacite, était une recommandation bien forte pour lui auprès d'un parti qui haissait essentiellement l'autorité, et qui ne pouvait souffrir le frein de gouvernement.'

That the great Napoleon, at the very acme of his fortunes, should have winced under the lash of

1 M. Panckoucke, pref., pp. 63-70.
Tacitus, and have cherished the vain hope of silencing him, supplies an illustration as notable as any that history can give of the 'oracular sentence' of Ann. iv. 35, 6–7:—

'One can but smile at the dulness of those who think that the authority of to-day can extinguish men's memories to-morrow; nay rather, they who would penalize genius do but extend its power: whether they be foreign tyrants, or imitators of foreign tyranny, they do but reap dishonour for themselves and glory for their victims!'

The first-discovered portion of the works of Tacitus, containing all that we possess of Annals xi.–xvi. and of the Histories, was received in 1427 by Poggio Bracciolini, from the hands of his travelling agent, Nicola Nicoli of Florence; but the famous Medicean MS. No. 1, our sole authority for Annals i.–vi., was not brought to Rome and delivered to Cardinal Giovanni de Medici, afterwards Pope Leo X., till the year 1509.

The Editio Princeps of Annals i.–vi. was published in 1515, by order of the Pope himself. Leo was so much struck by the 'gravity of the historian, and the beauty of his style,' that he specially committed the task of editing those books to the scholar Philip Beroaldus; and, lest the text should be 'spoilt or disfigured' by the incompetence or carelessness of unworthy hands, he granted to him the exclusive right of publication for a period of ten years, threatening all who should dare to print any other edition with pains of excommunication, in addition to a fine and confiscation of such printed copies. One hardy editor, a Professor at Milan, ventured to disobey the order. He was straightway summoned to Rome to answer for his conduct; and though he failed to appear, he sent a
humble apology, pleaded ignorance of the papal prohibition, and was graciously forgiven.

From that day to this, a continuous stream of editions, translations, commentaries, 'réflexions politiques,' and other treatises on Tacitus, has been poured upon the world, and there seems little likelihood that the flood will ever cease. The Catalogue of the British Museum devotes no less than 41 columns to the heading 'Tacitus;' and that list would seem to be far from complete. M. Panckoucke, writing in the year 1837, gives a detailed list of no less than 1055 separate publications dealing with Tacitus (including re-impessions), no less than 393 of these being translations into Italian, French, German, or English, either of the whole or of a portion of his works. The number of these has been largely added to since 1837; there are translations into Spanish, Dutch, Roumanian, Swedish, Danish, Russian, Bohemian, Croatian, Portuguese—in fact, into every civilized language.

But while translators have been thus numerous, one and all, in undertaking the task, have pronounced success impossible. They are all keenly alive to the imperfections of their predecessors, and are often severe in their castigation of them. Each flatters himself that he will improve upon what has gone before; but it is too often only to fall into still greater errors or weaknesses of his own. In the preface to his translation of the Annals (1790), M. de Meilhan echoes the feeling of many a translator of Tacitus, and reminds us of the mutinous soldiers in Pannonia, who trembled when they looked on Drusus, and then again grew confident when their eyes fell upon their own ranks:
'En relisant ma traduction à côté du texte, la plume m'est souvent tombée des mains, et j'ai abandonné l'ouvrage; je lisois les traductions, et je reprenais courage.'

If we analyse M. Panckoucke's list of translations of the whole or part of Tacitus, we find that France stands at the top with 153; next comes Germany with 142; Italy can boast of 63, England of only 35. If only translations of the entire works be counted, the numbers are: French, 49; Italian, 25; German, 16; and English, 9; England standing at the bottom of the list in point of number, and, as a whole, it must be admitted, in point of quality also. Italy was first in the field; and if an appraisement were made by a competent judge of the comparative merits of existing translations of Tacitus in the four languages named above, it is probable that he would award the palm to the Italian. It is obvious that the Latin languages possess, in their forms and structure, a great advantage over English and German for the purpose of reproducing the special peculiarities, both of thought and style, of the most Latin of all Latin writers. Italian and French alike have a crispness and precision, a capacity for keen contrast and brilliant condensation, which enable them without effort to adopt the language and the ideas of the most compressed and epigrammatic of writers. This seems especially true of the early Italian, which had acquired the suppleness and brilliancy of the new tongue, without losing the strength and stately brevity of the old Latin. Its compact grammar, its clever economy of pronouns, its compressed verbal forms, and, above all, its hammer-like use of participles, adapt themselves naturally to the massive
INTRODUCTION.

sentences of Tacitus; and one is tempted to think that no pen but that of a Machiavelli, or of a Dante who should write in prose,\(^1\) could do full justice to the oracular strength, the pregnant conciseness, the sustained dignity, and the sombre brilliance, of the great Roman historian.

Two early translations of Tacitus stand out pre- eminent—that of Georgio Dati, who translated the Annals and Histories into ‘la lingua Toscana’ in 1563, new editions appearing in 1589 and 1598; and the still more famous version of Bernardo Davanzati Bostichi, who published the first book of the Annals in 1596, and afterwards all the Annals and the Histories. This translation has enjoyed extraordinary popularity. There are editions of 1600, 1637, 1641, 1658, 1696, 1760; no less than eight appeared between 1790 and 1828; and new editions are still from time to time produced.

Davanzati was a Florentine, doing business as a banker in Lyons. He was led to translate Tacitus accidentally, not from any desire to improve upon the work of Dati, which he held in high esteem.\(^2\) Encountering one day a lettered Frenchman, he fell into a dispute with him as to the comparative merits of the Italian and French languages. The Frenchman disparaged Italian, denying to it the qualities of brevity and vigour; whereupon Davanzati undertook, for a kind of wager, to translate into Italian the tersest of all Latin writers with a brevity that should equal or exceed his own. This promise he fulfilled by publishing in 1596, ‘Il primo Libro degli Annali,’

---

\(^1\) That is, in the style of the Divine Comedy; for Dante’s prose writings are not remarkable for condensation.

which he announces on the title-page as 'expresso in volgare Fiorentino per dimostrare quanto questo parlare sia breve e arguto.' In his preface, he contests the claim of French to be considered, like ancient Greek, the supreme language of literature; repudiates the charge that Italian is 'lunga e languida;' and pronounces the vulgar Florentine dialect to be the best of all tongues for representing the strength of Tacitus, though well aware that 'there are some who will not admit that anything vulgar can be good, or that anything Florentine can be best.'

To prove the brevity of the Florentine dialect as compared with French, or even with the Latin of Tacitus himself, he translated the first book of the Annals as a test, asserting that the Florentine dialect could express in 100 words a meaning for which the Latin required 108, and which could not be expressed with less than 160 words in French.

Davanzati's work is certainly a marvel of condensation; but he scarcely makes good his boast of employing fewer words than Tacitus. Selecting a few fairly typical chapters, we find that in the first chapter of Ann. i. Tacitus employs only 123 words (counting enclitics as separate words), whereas Davanzati employs 162; in i. 4, Tacitus has 145 words, Davanzati 177; in i. 49, Tacitus has 133 words, Davanzati 155; in ii. 23, Tacitus has 139 words, Davanzati, 173. If, however, we deduct from the total of Davanzati the definite and indefinite articles, and the preposition _di_ or _de_, which represents the Latin Genitive, his boast is all but justified. In the first passage referred to above (Ann. i. 1) the total number of words used by Davanzati on this method of counting comes out as only 127, as compared with the 123 of Tacitus.
No other translator has attained a brevity like this. For the same passage, M. de la Malle employs 196 words to represent the 123 of Tacitus; Messrs. Church and Brodribb, whose version is not more lengthy than is consistent with good English, use 197; while Murphy, who touches the high-water mark of verbosity, requires no less than 300 words. In the second passage named above (i. 4), Murphy uses 324 words for the 145 of Tacitus, as compared with the 177 of Davanzati, the 282 of the French translator, and the 262 of Messrs. Church and Brodribb.

Such a mode of calculation, however, as Signor C. Cesare Balbo remarks in the preface to his brilliant translation (Turin, 1832), is somewhat puerile. True brevity of style depends upon other things than mere economy of words; and that of Davanzati was not obtained without the loss of other elements in the style of Tacitus which it is of the first importance to preserve. The brevity of Tacitus will continue to be the despair of modern translators. It is not merely that modern languages, because of their loose syntactical structure, demand a larger outlay of words than the inflected languages of the ancients; but that the Latin language, and especially the language of Tacitus, makes large demands upon the intelligence of the reader; permits the frequent omission of words—pronouns, particles, and even verbs and substantives—which we regard as essential to the sense; can often use a single word where we would employ a whole phrase or clause; and thus admits of a close packing of ideas which would be fatiguing, if not incomprehensible, to a modern reader.

For languages differ from one another, like material substances, in density. From Lucretius to Lord
LANGUAGES DIFFER IN DENSITY. xxxiii

Kelvin,¹ atomists have told us how the differences between solids, liquids, and gases, are to be accounted for by the greater or the lesser intervals between the molecules of which they are composed. Solid bodies have small intervals or no intervals at all, rare bodies have long intervals, between their atoms. It is the same with languages; and Latin may be described as a very solid language. It admits of ideas being closely packed together, almost in juxtaposition, with scarcely any medium for them to move in. Latin authors, no doubt, differ widely from one another in the use which they make of the condensing property of their tongue. Cicero, as was natural for a man whose main business was to address the many, spreads out his meaning over a multitude of words. Tacitus, addressing a highly educated coterie alive to every political and literary allusion, sympathizing with all his opinions and his prejudices, can pack his thoughts as closely as the seeds in a pomegranate.

English cannot put so much into so little. It requires that the writer shall set out his ideas with some space between them; and the ordinary modern reader expects to find the meaning drawn out in full, without having to spend upon its interpretation thought and labour of his own.

Italian purists admit the terseness, the force and accuracy of Davanzati's version, but they find fault with him for his use of popular and vulgar idioms. They accuse him of going down into the streets and markets to find language to put into the mouths of noble Romans, and of degrading the dignified utterances of Tacitus into a plebeian jargon, fit only for

¹ See Lord Kelvin on the 'Size of Atoms,' ('Popular Addresses,' vol. 1.).
fish-wives and street-porters. It is true that Davenzati is crabbed, and often rough, and that, for the sake of a phenomenal brevity, he has sacrificed that smoothness in which the Italian ear delights; but it is also true that much of the strength of his style is due to its popular element, and that the racy vernacular expressions which he takes from the mouths of common folk give a truer idea of the vigour of Tacitean phrase than the more polished and sonorous equivalents of most translators.

The false notion that dignity of style is to be attained by using pompous and grandiose diction was the bane of Tacitean translators in the eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries. Alike in Italy, France, and England, there was a period when the grand manner of the age of Louis XIV. tended to banish simplicity from letters, to bring homely phraseology into contempt, and to enthrone pomposity, pedantry and affectation in their place. How carefully such qualities were cultivated can be seen from the 'Discourses upon Tacitus' with which T. Gordon prefaces his translation (1737):

'No language whatever,' he says in his preface, 'will make Tacitus plain to vulgar understandings. . . . I have indeed little complaisance for those who think (if any who understand him can possibly think) that the common English style will at all suit that uncommon writer, whose manner is as peculiar and affecting as his thoughts.'

Gordon accordingly condemns the vigorous translation of Richard Grenewey (1598) as 'a mean performance; he starves the meaning even where he best conveys it.' What he most admires in Tacitus is his 'grandeur and dignity;' and he deems it necessary to apologise for his 'paucity of words' by
reflecting that, 'let his words be ever so few, his thought is always redundant.'

Now Tacitus is always dignified, but he is never pretentious, stilted or affected; the dignity of his language flows naturally out of the ideas which he puts before us. The criticism that, being an uncommon writer, he cannot be translated into common English, arises from a false conception of what constitutes a good style. It is founded on the confusion between the common and the commonplace which has wrought such havoc with English writing in the past. Dignity of style depends upon dignity of idea, and is more often attained by directness and simplicity of diction than by pompous phrase or high-flown figure. The man who is always thinking of his own dignity is the least likely to maintain it. It is the same with style. Our own Bible shows how literary dignity can be combined with simple language; Horace and Shakespeare have taught us how the common talk of common folk can be lifted into the realm of poetry, adding to the strength and richness of our literary resources.

Another early translation of some fame is that of the Annals and Histories by Andrea Politi (Rome, 1604 and 1611). The title-page bears that the translation is into 'Vulgar Senese:' Politi having chosen the Sienese dialect, not only, perhaps, because the people of Siena were proud of the purity of their Italian, but also for the same reason that made Davanzati adopt the vulgar Florentine, considering that its crispness and vernacular strength made it a better vehicle for the style of Tacitus than the more polished literary language of the day. Politi's translation is often racy, it has much of the fine vigour of
style which marks the earlier writers, but it has no pretension to accurate scholarship, and makes little effort to reproduce the exact thought of the original.

Among the Italian translations of the nineteenth century, two are especially worthy of notice; that of Ludovico Valeriani, published in five huge volumes at Florence in 1818; and that of C. Cesare Balbo (1832), who, while acknowledging the accuracy, brevity and strength of Davanzati's version, condemns him for employing a plebeian dialect. In his own version he hopes by combining 'il frassegiar del Davanzati, la chiarezza et la simplicità del Politi e la ricchezza di parole del Valeriani,' to produce a version which may be regarded as a true Italian Tacitus.

Among the numerous French translations there are some which deserve special mention. Of the half-dozen or so which belong to the sixteenth century, the most famous is that of Rodolphe Lemaistre, already mentioned, undertaken by the command of Henry IV. (1594–1610). His work enjoyed a great reputation; enthusiastic testimonies by his admirers are prefixed to the edition of 1636. Among these is a Latin poem by de Chalas, ending thus:

Silvert
Aeternum Tacitus, nisi excitasses,
Sorderet Tacitus nisi expolisses.

These lines are thus rendered into French by M. Hardy, Receveur General du Mans—

'Tacite estoit muet en France,
Incognu et non intendu,
Sans que Le Maistre l'a rendu
Orné de pleine intelligence.'

The verse sorderet Tacitus nisi expolisses gives a true measure of what was expected of a French translator
FRENCH VIEW OF TRANSLATION. xxxvii

down to the end of the eighteenth century. He was to adorn, not merely to reproduce, his original; he was to bring forth a literary work which should have a style of its own, in which the defects of the original should be removed, and its harshness smoothed down, to suit the literary taste of the time.

This doctrine is put forward in all seriousness by a later French translator of some note, M. d'Alembert, Perpetual Secretary of the French Academy, whose 'Morceaux Choisis de Tacite' appeared in 1784. In his 'Observations on the art of translating in general, and of translating Tacitus in particular,' he tells us that as all good writing must have 'harmonie et facilité' of style, a translator has to consider how far literal exactness of rendering must 'céder aux grâces de la diction sans trop s'affoiblir;' and how far he must sacrifice 'l'énergie à la noblesse, la correction à la facilité, la justesse rigoureuse à la méchanique du style.' He complains that the rigorous laws of the French language, its uniformity of construction, has made it 'l'écuil des traducteurs, comme elle est celui des poètes;' and he protests against the idea that translators should regard themselves only as the copyists, rather than as the rivals, of the authors whom they translate. It should be their aim to embellish the original where possible, and to remove its defects, if there are any; 'for his own part,' he adds, 'whenever he has been in doubt between two or more interpretations of a passage of Tacitus, he has always chosen that which he thought the most beautiful.'

Between the translation of Le Maistre and that of M. de la Malle, other notable French versions are that of Perrot d'Ablancourt (1640); that of M. Amelot
de la Houssaie with 'Réflexions Politiques' (1690), upon which is based the English work published under the patronage of Sir Henry Savile (1698); and that of M. l'Abbé de la Bléterie (1768). All these have gone through various editions.

D'Ablancourt has a fine style, he is vigorous and pointed; but he takes little pains to keep to his text when he thinks he can improve upon it. No one could recognise the vigour of the sentence Clamor vulnera sanguis palam; causa in occulto; cetera fors regit (i. 49, 2) in his intolerable expansion of it: —

'L'air retentit des cris des mourans, le camp se remplit d'horreur et de carnage. Le malheur est visible, et la cause est incertaine; la sagesse a présidé au conseil, la fortune préside à l'exécution.'

He thus excuses himself for the freedom of his translation:—

'Il est bien difficile d'etre exact en la traduction d'un auteur qui ne l'est point. On est constraint d'ajouter quelque chose à la pensée pour l'éclaircir, quelquefois il en faut retrancher une partie pour donner jour a tout le reste.'

The same phrase 'donner jour' is no less quaintly illustrated by the translator Achille de Harlay (1644), who says of Tacitus, 'Ayant à donner du jour à des lieux fort obscurs, je me suis trouvé obligé d'ouvrir toutes les fenestres.' Unfortunately this policy of 'the open window' has more often permitted the meaning of Tacitus to escape, than allowed any new light on it to stream in.

D'Ablancourt's version is roughly handled by M. l'Abbé de le Bléterie. 'To deal with his author thus,' says he, 'is to treat him like a rough diamond
which needs to be cut before it will sparkle.' 'D’Ablancourt traite son auteur avec une license effrénée. . . . Il le mutile, le disloque, le décharne, le dessèche, et sous prétexte de lui donner plus de santé, il lui laisse à peine un souffle de vie.' . . . The admirers of d’Ablancourt have called his work 'La belle infidèle . . . Je souscris à leur jugement; mais j’ajoute qu’elle est belle sans être piquante, et qu’elle est infidèle jusqu’à la trahison.'

M. Amelot de la Houssaie had previously criticised d’Ablancourt; and indeed he tells us that his own translation arose out of a sharp controversy which he had carried on with his nephew, M. Fremont d’Ablancourt, as to the merits of his uncle’s translation. Much Billingsgate seems to have passed between the two. In response to De la Houssaie’s strictures, the nephew, taking up the cudgels for his uncle, had challenged De la Houssaie to do better: ‘Qu'Amelot de la Houssaie nous donne une traduction de Tacite plus forte, et plus élégante.' ‘En voici une!' retorts la Houssaie, ‘que je soutiens être plus exacte, plus nerveuse, et plus conforme au génie et au caractère de l’auteur.'

The Abbé finds equal fault with De la Houssaie’s version, but for the opposite reason:—

‘Rien de plus servile et de plus rampant; nul choix, nulle finesse dans les tours, point d’expressions saillantes, point d’agrément dans le style; un bégaiement perpétuel, un language froid et trivial. . . . C’est Tacite en laid et revêtu de haillons.’

This criticism can scarcely be justified. De la Houssaie is often vigorous and apt in his translations; but a modern scholar would censure him, not for his servility, but for his freedom. He often adds whole
sentences to elucidate the meaning; but he seldom hits the exact point in really crucial passages. The Abbé's censure is of a piece with that which condemns Davanzati for his 'vulgarity,' and which holds that what is common in language must necessarily be unclean. The 'Notes politiques et historiques' with which De la Houssaye liberally garnishes his translation, have enjoyed a great name; but they are often of the most commonplace and school-boy order, little worthy of appearing on the same page with Tacitus.

M. de la Bléterie himself is often brilliant in his renderings. Like other translators of his time, he treats the text with freedom; but there is a true Tacitean ring in some of his phrases, and he has furnished many hints to his French successors. A few instances may be given. Tiberius suspected Asinius Gallus of being 'un citoyen qui voulait bien sortir de sa sphère' (plus quam civilia agitaret, i. 12, 6); the language of Tiberius in the Senate 'étoit un labyrinthe d'incertitudes et d'ambiguïtés' (in incertum et ambiguum magis implicabuntur, i. 11, 4). The well-known epigram applied to the centurion in i. 20, 2 (vetus operis ac laboris, et eo immittior quia toleraverat), he translates thus: 'Endurci de longue main à la fatigue, au travail, il étoit impitoyable parcequ'il avait souffert;' and for the difficult sentence, Sed dum veritati consulitur, libertas corrumpebatur (i. 75, 2) he gives the perfect translation, 'La Justice y gagnait; mais aux dépens de la liberté.' With this rendering we may well compare that of Grenewey, who, as often elsewhere, goes straight to the point with a homely phrase: 'but whilst he laboured for justice, libertie went to wracke.'

In one special point M. de la Bléterie happily imitates the style of Tacitus. It is one of his methods
of gaining force to string together three strong words
with no copula between them. Sometimes the three
words have no special emphasis, securing only brevity
and swiftness, as arma classem socios (i. 45, 3); vestem
arma tentoria (i. 17, 6); simulacra montium fluminum
praetiorum (ii. 41, 2). In other cases they have the
effect of a climax, coming down with hammer-like
force, like the three knocks which prelude the rising
of the curtain in a French theatre: Arminius manu
voce vulnere sustentabat pugnam (ii. 17, 5); barbari
laccensunt circumgrediuntur occurrant (i. 64, 1); bellum
impeditum arduum cruentum (iv. 46, 5). In imitation of
such phrases the Abbé thus describes the attitude of
the mutinous troops upon the arrival of Drusus in the
camp: ‘Tout était morne, negligé, hideux.’

But while the Abbé was severe on older translators,
he was soon himself to fall under the lash of M. de
Meilhan (1790), who, while admitting that M. de la
Bléterie had a profound knowledge of antiquity and
of his author, accuses him of using—

‘des expressions triviales et bourgeoises ... Au
style le plus nerveux il substitue un jargon ridicule,
et l'on voit souvent dans sa traduction un pédant
de collège qui veut prendre le langage d'un homme
du monde.’

M. de Meilhan’s estimate of Tacitus is worth
quoting for its extravagance:—

‘Tacite, j’ose le dire, a fixé les limites de l’esprit
humain; sans faire de traité sur aucun sujet, il les a
tous approfondis.’

He derides those who have spoken of the present
age as ‘le siècle de lumières’;—

‘Je dois croire que ceux qui parlent ainsi n’ont pas
lu les ouvrages de Tacite. En effet, quelle découverte
peut être à faire après lui en morale et en politique, dans ces deux sciences qui n'en font qu'une par leur accord intime?'

To judge of the merits of M. de Meilhan's own translation, we need do no more than refer to two passages, in the first of which he gives the dullest of all the dull equivalents which have been offered for one of the raciest comments to be found in Tacitus. In the year A.D. 19, four thousand freedmen, infected with Egyptian and Jewish superstitions, were deported to Sardinia, ostensibly to put down brigandage; Tacitus adds, *Si ob gravitatem caeli interissent, vile damnun* (ii. 85, 5). M. de Meilhan translates thus: 'Et l'on exposa sans regret au mauvais air de cette île des hommes vils dont la perte importoit peu à la république.' Again in ii. 87, 3, he gives a model of loose and ineffectual translation by rendering *unde angusta et lubrica oratio sub principe*, etc., by 'On peut juger de l'embarras et du danger où se trouvaient les citoyens qui avoient à parler d'un prince qui,' etc.

We have seen that a great impetus was given to the study of Tacitus in France by the ideas and the events of the Revolution. J. J. Rousseau himself published in 1781 a translation of the Annals, Book i.; and in 1790 appeared in three octavo volumes the translation of M. Dureau de la Malle, which has kept its place ever since as the standard French translation, and has gone through many editions. In its latest form, it has been included by M. Nisard in his 'Collection des Auteurs Latins' (1860 and 1882). The preface explains that considerable liberties have been taken with the original. Inaccuracies have been corrected, the results of modern scholarship have been made use of, and recognizing that the eighteenth century writers
attached an undue importance to elegance and euphony of language, the editors have taken pains to cut down the exuberance of the style. They present the work, therefore, 'non comme un travail nouveau, mais comme un travail depuis longtemps jugé bon, et rendu meilleur peut-être par une sévère révision.' How far the improvement has been secured, may well be questioned. The version as now revised is doubtless closer to the original, but it is less readable; it is not exact enough to satisfy a scholar by its aptness of phrase or by its reproduction of the spirit of the original, and it has lost that note of individuality which marked the writer and the time at which he wrote.

The version of M. de la Malle is a quarry from which almost all his French successors have drawn materials. One of the best of these is M. Louandre, whose polished translation of the whole works, dedicated to M. Thierry, was published in 1845. It was 'couronnée' by the French Academy, and has been several times reprinted. M. Louandre admits having taken much from his predecessors; but he claims to have improved upon them all. He has transcribed many passages literally from De la Malle; in many more there are traces of imitation.

But the most glaring example of appropriation is to be found in a collection of translations entitled 'Les auteurs Latins,' published by Hachette et Cie., between the years 1843 and 1866. The title-page bears that the Latin Authors are 'expliqués d'après une méthode nouvelle par deux traductions françaises, l'une littérale et juxta-linéaire, l'autre correcte et précédée du texte Latin, par une société de Professeurs et de Latinistes.' Each page contains (1) the
INTRODUCTION.

Latin text; (2) a literal word-for-word translation, each Latin word being given with its French equivalent; and (3) a "correcte" translation of the whole, i.e. one written in good literary style. In the case of Tacitus, it turns out that the 'correct' stylist chosen to undertake the work, instead of giving a version of his own, has thought it best to give an almost verbatim copy of the version of M. de la Malle. There are occasional variations on minor points; but whole chapters are copied direct from De la Malle, and that without one word of alteration or acknowledgment.

This practice of reproducing previous translations is denounced by M. de Burnouf, whose own vigorous translation of the works, in six vols., appeared between 1827 and 1833. He protests against the view that a good literary effect can be produced by piecing together fragments borrowed from many sources. A translator, he well remarks, not less than an original author, should have a continuous and sustained style of his own; his language should be that of his day, his scholarship should be up to date, and he should avoid the error of previous translators in making it their aim to transfer 'l'air et l'esprit français à l'antique Italie.' Yet even M. Burnouf, though he boasts that his translation is entirely original, sometimes sins against his own rule.

Of all the French scholars who have expended labour upon Tacitus, perhaps none have served him better than M. Panckoucke. He began his Tacitean labours in 1803, when he published some fragments of the Agricola, which he thought might be interesting in connection with the descent upon Great Britain then contemplated by Napoleon; and he continued them until 1838, by which time he had added,
at various dates, some eighteen volumes to the body of Tacitean literature. These include translations and editions of the entire works, with introductions, notes, treatises on various minor points, and a bibliography complete to date.¹

A careful study of the various translations enumerated above will show that, while occasionally brilliant in their rendering of single passages or phrases, they never reached, or attempted to reach, the severe standard of accuracy demanded by modern scholarship. With the single exception of Davanzati, the principles which they followed in their treatment of the original resulted in the production of paraphrases, rather than of translations; and their aim was inconsistent with that severe and close attention to the meaning of every word and every sentence without which no version can claim for itself the merit of fidelity. During the course of the past century, exact scholarship has made immense strides. In the interpretation of ancient texts, it demands a rigid accuracy which was not possible before; and it condemns the looseness and affected ornateness of style which was considered a merit in translators a hundred years ago.

But accuracy is one thing, baldness is another. The demand for verbal accuracy, coupled with the requirements of examiners and the needs of the examined, gave birth, in this country, to a style of translation destitute of all literary form, which gives to the modern reader no sense of the intrinsic beauties of ancient literature. It is only of recent

¹ I have not made mention of German translations, of which there are many of much merit. But German scholarship is more celebrated for its learning than for its style; and I soon found that a German translation, however good, could afford no guidance for a translation into English.
years that such works as the Plato of Mr. Jowett, to
name only one example out of many, have rescued
the translator's art from the evil repute into which
it had fallen. A new school of translators, both of
verse and of prose authors, has shewn how accurate
scholarship, clothing itself with the grace of literature,
can reach a higher and finer level of fidelity; and
how, along with a strict regard for the literal sense,
our English tongue can be so used as to convey to
the mind and to the ear alike some sense of those
qualities which we admire in the classical writers.

To give the mere words of an ancient author,
without regard to his spirit, or to the peculiar manner
in which he set forth his ideas, is not enough. As
Mr. Matthew Arnold puts it—

'To suppose that it is fidelity to an original to give
its matter, unless you at the same time give its
manner; or, rather, to suppose that you can really
give its matter at all, unless you can give its manner,
is just the mistake of our pre-Raphaelite School of
painters, who do not understand that the peculiar
effect of nature resides in the whole and not in the
parts.'  

No translation of any author, least of all of an
ancient author, can ever be perfect. No two peoples,
no two periods, think exactly in the same way; and in
all great authors, matter and style are inextricably
interwoven. All that the best translator can do is
to offer an approximation to his original; but that
approximation must include, so far as in the trans-
lator's power lies, both the elements on which the
greatness of a work depends—its form as well as its
matter. He may have to sacrifice something of both
to meet the exigencies of his own language; and the

finer niceties of style can never be transplanted from one language to another. The translator can only aim at representing, by methods congenial to his own tongue, the main features of his author's style, the general character which stamps the whole; but unless he can do this to some degree, as well as set down faithfully his author's matter, one half of his purpose is unaccomplished.

Whether a translation of Tacitus, fairly fulfilling these conditions, can ever be produced, may well be doubted. His style is unique. Latin differs essentially from English in construction, in order, in idiom, in range of thought: in Tacitus all these points of difference are accentuated to a high degree. He has mannerisms, and methods of producing effects, which are entirely his own, and which are foreign to our language; and which, if introduced into it, would be regarded as blemishes in the style. Indeed, some of his peculiarities, if regarded by themselves, must be deemed blemishes even in the Latin; but these are all redeemed by the higher virtues which give the style its character and place it beyond the reach of criticism.

For these reasons a literal translation of Tacitus into English that shall read as English may be pronounced an impossibility. Apart from all question of English style, such a translation would fail in the two essential aims which a translator has in view. It would give no idea of the manner of the author; and in numerous cases it would give little or no idea of his matter. Let any one try the experiment of reading aloud, to an educated but not classical friend, a page or two of the Annals translated word for word into English; he will find that sentences constantly occur
which present no meaning at all, or only a very confused meaning, to the listener. The scholar who is acquainted with the Latin, reads into a translation, however bald and literal, the meaning which his knowledge of the original enables him to supply; but the unlearned reader, having no such help, requires the thought to be put into an English dress before it can be recognized. Mr. Matthew Arnold tells us that the translator of Homer should care for no judgment but that of—

'scholars who both know Greek and can appreciate poetry. Let him not trust to what the ordinary English reader thinks of him; he will be taking the blind for his guide.'

A similar dictum can scarcely be applied to Tacitus. Of the scholarship of a translation, of course, none but scholars can judge; but as regards the English, I should be inclined to say that no translator of Tacitus could feel safe unless he had submitted his version to the opinion of some competent judge of English who had no knowledge of the Latin.

It does not follow, however, that because a translation does not pretend to be literal, it must give up its claim to be exact and faithful to the original. On the contrary, the literal translation must often be departed from in order that the sense may be more completely and accurately conveyed. It is the sense, not the words, that has to be rendered; and the sense cannot be conveyed unless it is thrown into the grooves of thought and speech in which the ideas of the reader naturally run. Mr. M. Arnold well illustrates this by comparing Pope's version of Iliad xix. 420 with that of Cowper. Pope's translation has hardly a word taken literally from the Greek; but it
is more near to Homer than the literal rendering of Cowper.

But again, if the translator has to give up the idea of a literal version, he must equally beware of paraphrase. The earlier translators of Tacitus, like our own Murphy, and to a lesser extent Gordon also, find it necessary to amplify or supplement the original, to omit something here or add something there, in order to make the condensed, and what they call the obscure, style of Tacitus intelligible. Amplification, doubtless, is frequently necessary; not only because English cannot be made so short as Latin, but also because in English it is not always the shorter expression that is the more forcible. And some omission at times may be pardoned. To give a little less than the meaning of an author so charged with meaning, so subtle in suggestion, as Tacitus, is less misleading than to give more; and a translator may be forgiven if he fail to squeeze out to the last drop all the meaning of a Tacitean sentence. But to attempt to add anything of his own is sheer impertinence.

This fault the early translators constantly committed. They did not grapple at close quarters with their text. They did not dissect every sentence so as to discover what association each word in it was intended to convey. They had not the scholarship needed for the purpose. They were apt to take an impressionist view of a passage, and to import into it, for effect's sake, their own notions. They make their author square with the fashions of their time; they arm Achilles with an arquebus, and clothe Dido in a sacque; they introduce things which Tacitus never could have seen, suggest ideas which he never could have thought of, and so tinge the whole with
anachronism. The modern scholar will avoid mistakes like these. He will examine his author's meaning, bit by bit, as he would the parts of a puzzle; he will steep himself in his spirit, and seek to understand how he looked at things, with what colour he sought to invest them; and then he will ask the question which M. de la Bléterie says he was always putting to himself, 'If Tacitus had lived in my day, how would he have expressed himself?'

The translation thus arrived at will be free and idiomatic; but it need not be loose or inexact. The translator must express the whole sense, neither more nor less; but he must not be kept from writing good English out of fear that he may be accused of making elementary mistakes in Latin; he must not follow the example of the authors of the Revised Version, who seemed more afraid of being credited with blunders in their Greek than desirous of hitting off happy equivalents in their English. Yet he must not shirk difficulties, nor take refuge behind vague generalities which leave no crisp and definite impression on the mind. He is bound so to translate as to enable a competent scholar to perceive how he has taken the construction; but he is not bound to satisfy the demands of a pass-examiner, or to make the construction plain to every school-boy.

No translation, however accurate, can claim a literary character which does not approve itself, by the quality of its English, to the cultivated English reader. For this purpose, one of the first questions which has to be faced is as to the kind of diction to be employed. Tacitus was a man of the world; and the language of his translator must be such as a man of the world would use. We have seen that at
every past period Tacitus has been claimed as giving voice to the ideas of the time; that claim is not less just at the present day. The world in which Tacitus lived was in many respects very modern; the Rome of his time presented in many points a similarity to the Great Britain of to-day. Rome had a world-wide Empire, which she was being constantly tempted, often almost forced, to extend. The commercial and expansive instincts of her citizens were perpetually leading her into new ventures, and creating difficulties for the home government. Her rule embraced many nationalities, representing various stages of civilization; the necessity for governing each according to its character, with due regard to the interests of the whole, was continually presenting new problems for her statesmanship, and putting a pressure, not to be resisted, upon her central institutions. She had debates in the Senate like our own parliamentary debates, dealing with subjects that are matters of debate still; her system of criminal and civil law, her municipal institutions, her whole Imperial administration, involve ideas, and call into requisition a vocabulary, which are familiar to the Englishman of to-day.

We find social questions discussed in the Annals which are matters of discussion still. Seniors complained that their juniors were no longer paying them the deference which was their due; prohibitive legislation was proposed to check the luxury of the table and of apparel, similar to that which in our own day some would apply to the problem of drink; women were denounced for seeking to emancipate themselves from all control, and for interfering in matters with which they had no concern: Lord Kitchener himself
might have delivered the speech in which Caecina Severus condemned the license which permitted wives to accompany their husbands in a campaign (iii. 33). Tiberius allayed a financial crisis by a measure analogous to a suspension of the Bank Act; in his day Rome, like Great Britain, had been led to place Egypt under a peculiar and anomalous form of government, as holding the key of the Mediterranean and the East; Rome, like Great Britain, had to conduct harassing campaigns of guerilla warfare in Africa; and one of the greatest of the sins of Tiberius in the eyes of Tacitus was that he was 'A Little Englander.'

Thus Tacitus brings us into a region in which we have to deal with political, military, social and economic problems like our own, and which must be set forth in language such as we would nowadays employ. In military matters, terms must be avoided which would bring a smile to a soldier's lips; social and economic facts must be described as our own economists would describe them; in the record of debates in the Senate, only such expressions should be used as might fall from the mouth of a British statesman in our own Houses of Parliament.

In view of this requirement, I am unable to fall in with a suggestion made by an eminent Latin scholar, that in order to equal the brevity and force of Tacitus, it would be well, so far as possible, to make use of Saxon words. In regard to many matters of ordinary life, no doubt, Saxon words are the best and most vigorous words; but in matters of law, government, politics and philosophy, with which Tacitus so largely deals, our own ideas being mainly drawn from Greek and Latin sources, words of Greek
or Latin origin are the appropriate words to use. To replace such terms by words of Saxon origin, not specially known in the same connection, would be an affectation, and would jar upon the English ear. The recommendation to use mostly Saxon words has been urged with more force in the case of Homer; but Mr. Matthew Arnold tells us that even in translating Homer it is dangerous for a translator to start with the idea that any class of words should be excluded from his vocabulary:—

'It is a theory false in itself; because, in fact, we owe to the Latin element in our language most of that rapidity and clear decisiveness by which it is contra-distinguished from the German, and in sympathy with the language of Greece and Rome.'

If this be true of Homer, how much more true of Tacitus, in whom the qualities of 'rapidity and clear decisiveness' stand out pre-eminent? It is difficult at the best to render Tacitean thought at all; and the translator cannot afford to overlook any materials which the richness of our language may offer him for the purpose.

For a similar reason, it is not desirable for a translator to imitate another striking feature in the style of Tacitus—its poetic and archaic element. It may be doubted, indeed, whether this feature was as conspicuous to the audience which Tacitus addressed as it is to his modern commentators. Many traces of archaic usage, many reminiscences of well-known passages of poetry, may be detected in his works; but in the educated circles at Rome, in which Tacitus moved, the masterpieces of Roman literature had long been common property; their most famous

1 'On translating Homer,' p. 7.
passages, their most notable sayings, had passed like proverbs into the educated language of the day. Just as men nowadays make use of Biblical or Shake- spearian phrases without any recollection of the source from which they come, so Tacitus may have introduced phrases from Plautus, Lucretius, Virgil, or Horace, not as deliberate quotations, but as phrases which had become imbedded in the language, and which passed as current in ordinary conversa- tion. Be that as it may, beyond the occasional use of some time-worn expression, some household word, which has been adopted into common speech, any attempt to introduce poetic or old-fashioned diction into the Annals would be grotesque, and would be resented as an affectation.

But while the language of the translator should be modern, it should not be tinged by the special modernisms of the day. He should draw, as it were, from the common resources of the language, use pure and simple English that may be good for all time, and abstain, as far as possible, from phrases and figures which bear the hall-mark of his own particular generation. No doubt he must write primarily for the men of his own time, and is bound to make him- self intelligible to them; and each generation may demand a translation of its own. Nevertheless, in dealing with a great and immortal classic, it will be well for him to use the common and abiding re- sources of our tongue, rather than those which are special and may last only for a day. Modern analogies, which seem at first sight exactly to fit the case, are sometimes misleading. It is tempting to translate the phrase *loco sententiae dixit*, so often used of a speech in the Senate, by our Parliamentary phrase 'got
up in his place and said, etc.' But this would suggest a wrong idea, as the English phrase implies that the member has a right to be heard, which the Roman senator had not. It is tempting to translate *grave conscientiae suae* (vi. 26, 2), 'would be a burden on his conscience.' But this would be a false translation, because the ancients had no consciences—in our sense of the term.

It may be well now to point out some of the main difficulties which confront the translator whose aim it is to render Tacitus with fidelity, and at the same time to express himself in English which shall be pure, natural, and idiomatic. Some of these difficulties are inherent in the Latin; some are peculiar to Tacitus. A few examples may after that be given to show how such difficulties have been met by different translators.

Every Latin author presents difficulties in the way of literal translation. To begin with differences of a minor and obvious kind, Latin enjoys great advantages over English for expressing a meaning briefly and unambiguously in its nice differentiation of pronouns; in its use of gender for adjectives, relatives and nouns; and in its complete system of verbal endings. The literal translator is pulled up at every step by the necessity of altering the order or the construction of the original to avoid ambiguities which arise from the want of these resources. In Latin, the verb-endings render possible the constant omission of the personal pronoun; in English, every pronoun must be expressed, and the translator is apt to involve himself in a constant repetition of the words 'they,' 'themselves,' 'who,' and 'which,' that results in clumsiness and confusion. The loss of the case-
endings in English is less important, as these are made up for, though at the expense of brevity, by the use of prepositions. The loose structure of the English language, and the absence of all trammels of inflection, give it greater freedom and flexibility; but they in turn impose upon the writer the necessity of using more words, and of exercising the greatest care to keep clear of ambiguity.

Again, the logical and orderly Latin mind required to have the nature of the connection between one sentence and another fully set out, and to see the successive points of time in a narrative clearly indicated. Hence an abundant use of relative clauses, and a plethora of inferential, adversative and temporal conjunctions, the repetition of which would be unnecessary and uncouth in English. In a literal translation of Tacitus, the words 'therefore,' 'and so,' 'however,' 'but,' 'for,' etc., would be perpetually recurring; so would words indicative of time, to represent such Latin words as max, dein, dehinc, inde, exin, exinde, interea, interim, inter hac, tum, sed iam, etc. The constant occurrence of the words et or que at the beginning of sentences, in different kinds of connection, is a peculiarity of the style of Tacitus which has hardly been sufficiently noticed by his editors. In such cases, as a rule, the word should not be translated in the English at all.

Other peculiarities in the style of Tacitus which are baffling to the literal translator, and which demand expansion in the English, are: (1) his frequent and gratuitous changes of subject within the limits of the same sentence, as in ii. 53, 3–4, and iv. 48, 4; (2) his sudden changes from an active to a passive form of sentence, and vice versa; (3) his frequent intermixture
of *Oratio Recta* with *Oratio Obliqua*, with corresponding changes of tense and mood; (4) his frequent interchange of past with present tenses. These and similar irregularities may be called blemishes in the style, and they go contrary to the ordinary rules followed by Latin writers. But they all have their purpose and their effect. They all help to arrest the reader's attention and keep it alive; and whether we deem them blemishes or no, they are all essential elements in what may be pronounced the most perfect pictorial style which the ancient world produced.

Another peculiarity of Tacitus which conduces to brevity and to vivacity is his habit of using a simple verb, instead of a verb, or some part of a verb, expressive of mood; in such cases English must supply 'could,' 'would,' or 'might,' or some such word, to complete the sense. Thus in i. 67, 1, Cæcina told his troops that if they made a dash out of the camp *illa eruptione ad Rhenum perveniri*, the meaning being 'that they would reach the Rhine.' Similarly in iii. 71, 3, Tiberius decided that leave of absence *Dialibus non concedi*, i.e. 'could not be granted to them.' In ii. 34, 1, L. Piso declares in the Senate *abire se et cedere urbe*, 'that he would leave,' or 'must leave, the city;' just as we might say colloquially, 'that he was off.' So *neque corpus ullum reperiri* (i. 23, 3), 'that no body was to be found;' *si legatos senatui redditis* (i. 43, 5), 'if you wish to restore;' *cum hastas ingens multitudo non pretenderet* (ii. 21, 1), 'since their hordes could not thrust out their spears;' *simul sexum natura invalidum deseri et exponi suo luxu* (iii. 34, 9), 'the weaker sex would be left unprotected and exposed,' etc. Other instances occur in iv. 39, 6; 40, 8, and 41, 3.

Another form of Tacitean conciseness is to put two
meanings into one sentence, words being used which suggest something that is not actually stated. Thus in iv. 1, 4, Sejanus is said to have furthered his own ambitious ends by means of industry and vigilance, which qualities, we are told, are in themselves baneful quoties parando regno finguntur. Now industry and vigilance are not qualities which can be 'feigned;' they were actually exhibited by Sejanus. The word finguntur is used to insinuate that even his good qualities were simulated; they did not belong to his character.\footnote{The same idea occurs in the last words of book vi., where it is said of Tiberius that in the last and worst phase of his life suo tantum ingenio utebatur.} In iv. 50, 5, Sabinus bids his men, if attacked by night, not to be misled by simulationem quietis, 'a pretence of silence.' There could be no pretence in the silence; what the men were warned against was being misled by the ruse of silence into supposing that there was no enemy at hand. In iii. 43, 4, it is said of the forces of Sacrovir that augebantur vicinarum civitatum studiis et certamine ducum Romanorum. The rivalry between the Roman generals did not increase the forces of Sacrovir; but it gave him an advantage of a different kind, which is implied in the word augebantur. Another remarkable instance occurs in ii. 35, 2, which is commented on in the notes; and one similar to it in ii. 58, 3, where Artabanus petitions the Romans ne Vonacci in Syria haberetur neu proceres ad discordias trahearet. To complete the sense, trahearet must be translated either by 'nor permitted to entice,' or else 'where he had the opportunity of enticing.'

Again, Tacitus often distracts the translator by omitting words which in English are essential to the sense. He will omit the principal verb, as in haec
callidis criminatoribus, iv. 12, 6, and even in dependent sentences, as in spre-\textit{tis quae tarda cum securitate}, iii. 66, 6; or the object of a verb (vi. 24, 4), leaving it to be inferred from the context; or leave for the verb a wrong object, which has already done its duty with another verb. An instance of this occurs in i. 74, 3. Crispinus accused Marcellus of vilifying Tiberius. Having picked out all the worst things that could be said against Tiberius, he ‘cast these up against Marcellus,’ \textit{objiectaret reo}; that is, he accused Marcellus, not of the failings themselves, but of having attributed them to Tiberius. Not unfrequently Tacitus puts the principal idea of a sentence into a subordinate place in it; as in iv. 64, 4, where he says that the ancient Romans ‘had consecrated a statue which had twice escaped the flames;’ when what he really means to say is that ‘a statue consecrated by our ancestors had twice escaped the flames.’ In these and various other ways Tacitus strikes out paths of speech in which the English writer cannot follow him; paths in which the \textit{oratio} open to him may be said, in the words of ii. 87, 3, to become \textit{angusta et lubrica}.

One special difficulty which encounters all translators of Latin prose authors is their use of the periodic style. A Period is a sentence in which several sub-clauses are introduced in subordination to one principal verb, which dominates and completes the whole. The logical Roman mind loved to place the accessory ideas of an argument or a narrative in so many subordinate clauses, so as to bring out the central idea with greater emphasis; and the organic structure of Latin, with its complete case- and verb-endings, its variety of relatives and conjunctions, and
its subtle use of mood, enabled this to be done without confusion. In English the Period is a foreigner; and the attempt to acclimatize it, in imitation of the flowing style of Cicero, did much to impair the native vigour of our language in writers of the later seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. In French, Italian or German, the period is more possible: the possession of gender and verb-endings, and the more precise use of pronouns, enable a writer in those languages to carry the thread of his meaning through a long sentence which would be intolerably involved in English. The following passage from M. Gaston Boissier is a fine example of the period in French:

‘Je crois donc, si j’ai bien interprété la pensée de Tacite dans ces quelques phrases de ses prologues, que la préférence qu’il accorde aux historiens de l’époque républicaine, si sérieux, si pleins de qualités viriles, si instruits des affaires publiques, si étrangers à tout artifice oratoire, et sa sévérité pour ceux de l’Empire, qui, pour plaire à une société de lettrés raffinées, ont trop sacrifié aux agréments de la composition et du langage, qui venus en un temps où la vérité était difficile à découvrir et dangereuse à dire, l’ont trop aisément remplacée par d’autres mérites, permettent de croire qu’au moment où il a commencé ses premiers ouvrages, il avait dans l’esprit la conception d’une histoire simple, grave, sincère, qui tirerait surtout son intérêt de la sûreté des informations, et tiendrait moins à la beauté de la forme qu’à la solidité du fond.’

The structure of English does not readily admit of complicated, yet perfectly lucid, periods like the above. An English period, in unskilful hands, is apt to degenerate into an agglomeration of single phrases with no cohesion but that afforded by prepositions. I had occasion in a recent address, to

1 Tacite, p. 67.
2 ‘Efficiency in Education’ (MacLehose & Son, 1903).
quote the following passage, written by a man of science, as an example of what English may become when science has banished literature from our schools:—

'Electric arc lights have been recently erected in some parts of London on high standards placed a good distance apart, the height being arranged to disperse the powerful light to a distance and to prevent glare, and the distance apart being regulated by the intensity of the light. This arrangement may prove perfectly satisfactory in ordinary weather, but on noticing their erection the doubt at once occurred to me as to the efficiency of such lights in foggy weather, particularly in recollection of some observations referred to by me about twenty years ago in a discussion at the Institution of Civil Engineers on the illumination of lighthouses as to the arc lights which at that period lighted a portion of the Thames Embankment being as readily obliterated by fog as some adjacent ordinary gas lights owing to the relative deficiency of the arc light in red rays, which are the most capable of penetrating fogs.'

Tacitus is not a specially periodic writer; his style indeed represents a reaction from the cloying style of Cicero. But he uses the period every now and then with extraordinary effect; and his writing everywhere shews traces of the periodic style. Some of his most compact sentences may be described as truncated periods; several subordinate ideas are introduced under one principal verb, but they are expressed by single words, usually Ablatives or Participles, loosely connected, sometimes without any connection at all, instead of by complete subordinate sentences. The result may be an apparently shapeless sentence like the following (iii. 39, 2):—

Simulque cuncta prospere acta, caesis populatoribus et

---

1 Letter to the Times of November 7, 1901.
dissentione orta apud obsidentes regisque opportuna erup-
tione et adventu legionis.

The most masterly of the periods of Tacitus occurs in i. 2, and is commented on in the notes to that passage. Another fine example is to be found in i. 74, 2:

'Nam egens, ignotus, inquies, dum occultis libellis saevitiae principis adrept, max clarissimo cuique periculum facesit, potentiam apud unum, odium apud omnis adeptus, dedit exemplum quod secuti ex pauperibus divites, ex contemptis metuendi, pernicie alii ac postremum sibi invenere.'

Such a sentence defies literal translation into English; but Valeriani shews how it can pass naturally, and with little expansion, into Italian:

'Perocchè povero oscuro inquieto, mentre s'insinua con cieche accusa nella ferocia del Principe, poi s'accinge a rovinare i più nobili, fattone grande con uno, abbonnavole a tutti, tal diede esempio che quanti lo seguitarano ricchi di miseri, d'abietti fatti tremendi, trassero gli altri e alfin sè stessi in rovina.'

Another example of a truncated period, in which single words do the office of separate subordinate clauses, may be quoted from ii. 2, 6 and 7, in which Tacitus describes the dissatisfaction of the Parthians with their new king Vonones:

'Accendebat dedignantes et ipse, diversus a maiorum institutis, raro venatu, segni equorum cura; quotiens per urbes incederet, lecticeae gestamine fastuque erga patrias epulas. Inridebantur et Graeci comites ac vilissima utensilium anulo clausa. Sed prompti aditus, obvia comitas, ignotae Parthis virtutes, nova vitia; et quia ipsorum moribus aliena, perinde odium pravis et honestis.'

In this congested passage the ideas which might
be expressed in separate clauses are flung down like
splashes of paint upon a canvas, with scarcely
enough construction to hold them together. To
express the above 54 words of Tacitus, Dati requires
no less than 152 words; but Davanzati, keeping close
to the original, in construction as well as order,
makes 63 words suffice:—

‘Stomacavali anch’egli’ co’ suoi modi diversi dagli
antichi; cacciar di rado, non si dilettar di cavalli; ire
per le città in lettiga; far gli afa i cibi della patria:
ridevansi del codazzo grechescò, del serrare e bollare
ogni cencio; le larghe udienze e le liete accoglienze,
virtù nuove, ai Parti erano vizi nuovi; e ciò che
antico non era, odiavano buono e rio.’

The strength of this rendering is unequalled by
any translator. Not a word is omitted; not an idea
added. M. Perrot d’Ablancourt, who, though he is
often inaccurate and indulges in amplifications, has
something of the grand manner of his time, thus
gives the passage:—

‘Leur colère se redoubleit par la considération des
moeurs de ce Prince, qui n’avait point la passion de
tes Ancestres pour la chasse ny pour les chevaux,
dédaignoit leurs festins, se faisoit porter en litière
dans ses voyages. D’ailleurs ils ne pouvoient souffrir
un Roy des Parthes qui estoit toujours environné
de une troupe de Grecs, et qui tenoit toute la vaisselle
de son Palais enfermée sous la clef. Enfin sa facilité
extrême à recevoir et caresser tout le monde, vertu
inconnue aux Barbares, estoit tachée par eux de
lâcheté et de bassesse; et sans considérer si ces
costumes estoient bonnes ou mouvaises, ils les con-
damnaient toutes également, parce que ce n’estoient
pas celles de leur Pays.’

The French is matchless; but all trace of the
Tacitean style has disappeared.
A period of a more ordinary kind, in a passage of simple narrative, may be given in the English. It occurs in vi. 31, 1-2:—

"C. Cestius and M. Servilius being consuls, Parthian nobles came to the city, the king Artabanus being ignorant. He, loyal to the Romans through fear of Germanicus, just to his subjects, afterwards assumed insolence towards us, cruelty to his countrymen, relying on the successful wars which he had waged with surrounding tribes, and despising the old age of Tiberius as unwarlike, and covetous of Armenia, over which, King Artabanus having died, he had placed Arsaces the eldest of his sons, insults having been added, and envoys sent to ask back the treasure left by Vonones in Syria and Cilicia; at the same time with vain-gloriousness and with threats he threw out talk about the ancient boundaries of the Persians and the Macedonians, and that he would invade the countries possessed by Cyrus and afterwards by Alexander."

The intolerable clumsiness of this sentence is enough to shew how foreign to the genius of English is the Latin period. Such passages must be broken up into a number of separate sentences if we would make English of them; the translator will disregard the Latin punctuation altogether, and will frequently find himself compelled to use twice as many full stops as there are in the Latin, if he would emulate the clearness, the rapidity and the incisiveness of Tacitus.

But if the English writer must eschew the period, he is bound to give especial care to the construction of the paragraph. As Mr. Jowett has pointed out, in a passage quoted below, the main test of excellence in continuous English writing is to be found rather in the ordering of the paragraph than in the construction of individual sentences. The sentences in a paragraph,
however numerous, should all bear upon some one point, and mark a definite stage in the progress of the argument or narrative, leaving on the mind the impression that some one particular part of the subject in hand has been dealt with and done with. In modern English, paragraphs are tending to become inordinately long; it is not uncommon, even in our best written Reviews, to find paragraphs of a page or even two pages in length, each dealing with several subjects. French writers, as a rule, thoroughly understand the logical and rhetorical value of the paragraph; this is one reason why French writing is so luminous. The more flimsy of their number are apt to overdo the use of it, and will sometimes present a page with almost as many paragraphs as lines.

The ancients knew nothing of paragraphs in their writing. They wrote mostly for the ear, not for the eye; and in recitation the natural pauses in the sense would be marked by the voice. Their rolls were written continuously; and the modern division into chapters has been made rather with a view to uniformity of length than to natural pauses in the meaning. It would be a help both to the eye and to the understanding if modern editors would break up Latin texts into paragraphs of various lengths, corresponding to the progress of the subject; instead of which they sometimes run several chapters together, so as to present to the eye a long and tedious block of print. In the present translation, an attempt has been made, as far as possible, to introduce paragraphs corresponding to the sense, while the usual division into chapters and sections has been indicated in the margin for purposes of reference.
We have seen that the translator must frequently break up a long Tacitean sentence into several short English sentences; but, on the other hand, he is obliged often to expand a phrase to make it intelligible. What modern European language could express in four words the fact that the position of Eudemus as family physician enabled him to be constantly present at the secret interviews of Sejanus and Livilla, specie artis frequens secretis, iv. 3, 5? or picture in five words the pestilential condition of a fortress captured after a long siege, pollui cuncta sanie, odore, contactu, iv. 49, 4; or describe in four words how two chiefs fully armed spurred their horses against each other, shouting as they charged, clamore telis equis concurrunt, vi. 35, 4; or, again, express in three words that the degradation of a general's declining years caused the services of his prime to be forgotten, cesserunt prima postremis, vi. 32, 7?

Even Davanzati cannot rival brevity like this; but the following examples may suffice to shew that, in dealing with such pregnant phrases, as well as with the brilliant epigrams or 'sentences,' as they are called, with which Tacitus loves to close an incident, both Italian and French translators can come nearer to the original, in point and finish, than can our own.

The personal encounter between Pharasmenes and Orodes, quoted in part above, is thus described by Tacitus:—

Conspicui eoque gnari clamore telis equis concurrunt.

Richard Grenewey, the Elizabethan translator, is long, but keeps close to the original: 'Pharasmenes and Orodes, ... being in sight the one of the other: and therefore knowing the one the other, with a great clamour of arms and horses ranne one against the
other.' Sir Henry Savile's translator\(^1\) omits one half of the meaning, and is content with 'renouncing each other as they rid too and fro.' Gordon has 'themselves conspicuous to all and therefore known to each other they encountered fiercely, horse to horse, with terrible cries and lances darted.' Murphy, who says of his version that 'he has endeavoured to give a faithful transcript of the original in such English as an Englishman of taste can read without disgust,' renders thus: 'Conspicuous to all, at length they knew each other. At the sight, with instinctive fury, their horses at full speed, they rushed forward to the charge, bellowing revenge, and casting their javelins.' The Oxford translation, revised in 1854, gives: 'Meanwhile Pharsamenes and Orodes... might be seen by all, and therefore soon descried each other. In a moment, they gallop to the encounter, with loud shouts and lances poised.' Messrs. Church and Brodribb translate thus: 'Pharsamenes and Orodes... were conspicuous to all, and so recognized each other, rushed to the combat with a shout, with javelins, and galloping chargers.'

Of the French translators, M. Amelot de la Houssaye is graphic and vigorous: 'Venant tous deux à se connaitre en cête rencontre ils piquent à toute bride l'un contre l'autre, le javelot à la main, et le défi à la bouche.' M. de la Malle, whose version has become common property, gives: 'Aussitôt leur cris, leurs chevaux, leurs lances se croisent.' This translation is copied by M. Burnouf; but by the

\(^1\) The translation of 'the Annals and History of Cornelius Tacitus, made English by several hands,' and under the patronage of 'the Learned Sir Henry Savile,' was published by M. Gillyflower in 1698. The first book of the Annals was translated by Dryden. It is a sorry performance. Gordon has shewn that it was not made from the original, but from De la Houssaye's translation, the French of which he sometimes villainously mistranslates.
addition of two words, he spoils the effect of the whole: 'Et leurs cris, leurs traits, leurs coursiers se croisent à l'instant.' M. Panckoucke is scarcely less vigorous: 'Ils se reconnaissent, ils poussent un cri, lancent leurs traits,' leurs chevaux se heurtent.' Of other translators, Davanzati alone gives us Tacitus himself: 'Perciò conoscituisi, con grida arme e cavalli s'affrontano.' He is closely followed by Valeriani: 'Si fanno l'un all' altro vedere conoscere e con grida armi e cavalli s'affrontano.'

A few instances may next be given of the famous epigrams or 'sentences' of Tacitus. In the course of his noble address on behalf of liberty of speech, Cremutius Cordus commends the wisdom of Augustus in taking no notice of personal insults (iv. 34, 8):—

Namque spreta exolescunt: si irascare, agnita videntur.

Davanzati translates: 'Perchè queste cose sprezzate svaniscono; adirandoti le confessi,' a translation which has evidently afforded the model to the not less pointed rendering of the modern Valeriani: 'Poichè, sprezzate, invilisco; se tene adiri, pajo meritate.'

The French translator M. de la Malle is unusually brilliant in this passage. His version well shews the capacity of French for epigram: 'Car le mépris fait tomber la satire; le ressentiment l'accrédite.' This rendering is appropriated almost verbatim by M. Panckoucke: 'Car le mépris fait tomber la satire; l'irritation l'accrédite.' M. de la Houssaie gives: 'Car c'est étoufer la medisance que de la mépriser; et c'est avouer qu'elle a raison de s'en facher.'

The English translators are good here; and they differ greatly from one another. The Elizabethan

---

1 It is unnecessary to translate  tilis. A hostile charge implies weapons; and the words which follow describe the wound inflicted.
Grenewey, in this and other passages, though more homely and less incisive than Tacitus, has much of his vigour and directness: 'For things of that qualitie neglected vanish of themselves; but repined and grieved at, argue a guiltie conscience.' Sir Henry Savile (who, by the way, begins the speech with 'Gentlemen') gives: 'Calumny falls to the ground when neglected; but we give a countenance to it by having any serious concern about it.' Gordon has an unusually vigorous version: 'For if they are despised, they fade away; if you wax wroth, you seem to avow them for true.' Murphy translates: 'Neglected calumny soon expires; shew that you are hurt, and you give it the appearance of truth.' Messrs. Church and Brodribb (but for the word 'assuredly') are excellent: 'Assuredly what is despised is soon forgotten; when you resent a thing, you seem to recognize it.'

Another notable epigram occurs in iv. 18, 3:—

Nam beneficia eo usque laeta sunt, dum videntur exsolvi posse; ubi multum antevenere, pro gratia odium redditur.

Here Davanzati is as short as Tacitus: 'Perchè i benefici rallegrono in quanto si posson rendere; gli eccessivi si pagano d' ingravitudine e d' odio.' Valeriani is shorter still: 'Poichè i benefizi aggradano sinchè possono ricambiarsi; ove d'assai trascessero, rendesi odio per grazia.'

M. Amelot de la Houssaie, representing the more expansive style of his time, expresses the thought admirably, but uses three words for every one of Tacitus: 'Car les bienfaits ne sont agréables, qu'autant qu'on se trouve en état de rendre la pareille; et quand une fois ils surpassent de beaucoup le pouvoir
de ceux qui les ont reçus, on les paie de haine au lieu de reconnaissance.' M. Panckoucke is excellent and epigrammatic: 'Car les bienfaits ne plaisent qu'autant qu'ils peuvent être acquittés; dès qu'ils vont au delà, au lieu de gratitude, la haine.' Sir George Savile's translator is clumsy and pointless: 'All benefits are pleasing, whilst the receiver is in a condition to make a suitable return; but when once they exceed recompence, hatred and ingratitude ever take place, instead of friendship and acknowledgment.' Murphy, after his wont, not only expands but adds matter of his own: 'He felt himself under obligations to his officer; and obligations (such is the nature of the human mind) are only then acknowledged when it is in our power to requite them; if they exceed all measures, to be insolvent is painful, and gratitude gives way to hatred.'

Another passage which has been the torment of translators occurs in iv. 33, 6:—

_Etiam gloria ac virtus infensos habet, ut nimis ex propinquo diversa arguens._

Davanzati can translate exactly, both as to order and construction: 'Anche la virtù e la gloria ha dei nemici, quasi riprendenti troppo da vicino i loro contrari.' Not less close and exact is Valeriani: 'Han pur la gloria e la virtù i suoi nemici, come d'assai vicino i loro opposti sgridando.'

The rendering of M. d'Alembert, to whom we are indebted for an elaborate treatise on the art of translating Tacitus (1784), is good, but it has no pretence to being a translation: 'L'éclat même de la vertu irrité les méchants, parce qu'elle les démasque et les condamne.' De la Malle is at once incorrect and feeble: 'Il n'y a pas jusqu'à la gloire et à la vertu qui
ne choquent, parce qu'à la proximité elles semblent accuser la honte des contemporains.' M. Panckoucke is no better; de la Houssaye hopelessly mistakes the passage. M. Louandre is fairly good: 'La gloire et la vertu même offensent, comme si lorsqu'elles sont trop près de nous, elles condamnaient ce qui leur ressemble pas.'

Grenewey and Sir G. Savile's translator are quite wrong; the latter gives: 'Add to all this glory and virtue make men jealous, especially since like actions may be differently interpreted.' The best English translation is that of Messrs. Church and Brodribb: 'Again, even honour and virtue make enemies, condemning, as they do, their opposites by too close a contrast.'

Lastly, we have the perfect phrase in vi. 32, 7:

*Cesserunt prima postremis.*

The best translation of it that I have found is that of De la Malle: 'Sa fin fit oublier ses commencements.' But the point of this rendering is taken from the version of M. Guerin (1742), who has: 'Les dernières actions de sa vie ont fait oublier les premières;' and it has been copied in turn by almost all the later French translators. There is a reminiscence of it in Messrs. Church and Brodribb: 'The beginning of his career was forgotten in its end.' More than one English translator has copied the unhappy rendering of Gordon, 'His last character has swallowed up his first.' Grenewey is good, and nearer to the Latin than them all: 'And so his first virtues gave place to his latter vices.'

The above quotations show how brilliant at times Italian and French can be in the translation of the more striking sayings of Tacitus; but it cannot be
said that any of them, except perhaps Davanzati, whose style is too crabbed, perhaps too provincial, to have a high literary character, do justice to the rare qualities of his style as a whole. The French are sometimes inordinately long. M. Guerin is often longer than Murphy himself. He complains that Tacitus employs ‘moins de mots que de sens;’ for French, he says, does not admit of a ‘diction brusque et coupée, qui lui ôterait toute harmonie;’ and so in his own version he usually reverses the proportion between words and thoughts by expanding the original into two or three times its length: see i. 2, or iii. 8, 3; in the latter passage 18 words of Tacitus are expanded into 62.

But Tacitus is not all epigram; and students of Tacitus have as a rule made too much of the gems and too little of the setting. His more brilliant sayings no doubt stand out conspicuously as condensed summaries of the observations of an experienced man of the world. But many men have been great in epigram who were great in nothing else, and who could never have produced a work of sustained dignity and power like the Annals. The greatest merit of Tacitus is the uniformly high level of writing which he maintains throughout. His style never droops; he is never trivial, commonplace, or dull. There is scarcely one dull sentence, one lifeless phrase, in all his works. His whole mode of writing is epigrammatic; his more notable epigrams do not come in by chance, they are not dragged in as ornaments from without; they arise naturally out of the subject, out of the thought, that have gone before. They are but the flash-point of a uniformly brilliant style.
In his most ordinary passages, Tacitus shews himself a master in the art of painting with words. In narrating an incident, a battle, or a campaign, he never wastes a word; he omits nothing that is essential, inserts nothing that does not help the effect, and brings out his points exactly in the order in which they will tell most. He never repeats himself; each stage in the narrative is brought out in a fresh and original way, and all combine to make up the colour with which he invests the whole. He is careless of his constructions; he will use any that serves his purpose; he will pass abruptly from one construction to another, or leave a construction half developed, if he can thereby aid the swift succession of ideas; no one ever realized more completely that grammar must be the servant, not the master, of the thought. The parts of his narrative come out in their proper proportion, because he saw them as a whole. This is what Montesquieu meant when he said: 'Tacite abrègeoit tout parce qu'il voyait tout.'

No better instance can be given of the vigour, vivacity, and variety of Tacitean narrative than the account of the mutiny in the Pannonian and German armies. Both mutinies sprang from similar causes, aimed at the same ends, and ran a similar course. Both were quelled, after much difficulty, by the personal influence of sons of the Imperial House. Yet there is no similarity in the two narratives. The incidents are different; the phrases used are different, the whole course of events is differently determined, and each stage of the story in each case is told with a novelty and freshness that hold the reader's interest to the end.

It is in the reproduction of the general effect of
narratives like these, and in weaving them into an equable and harmonious whole, that the translator's mettle will most be tried. Mr. Jowett has well said that 'the true test of translation is not a good phrase, as a boy at school supposes, or a good sentence, as some scholars imagine, but an equable and harmonious paragraph, or, rather, a harmonious whole.' The large features of the style of Tacitus are independent of all tricks and turns of language, and rise superior to them. The whole is greater than the parts; and no translation of a single phrase can be good, however apt in itself, if it is not of a piece with the whole to which it belongs. To extend a metaphor of Dryden's, it is better for a writer to have his currency all in silver than to mingle farthings with his gold.

The variety of the style of Tacitus has been commented upon by all his critics; it is as conspicuous in his choice of words as in that of constructions. He takes infinite pains so to vary his diction as to avoid a sense of monotony. But the variety is not obtrusive; it corresponds naturally to some variety in the point of view, and leaves no feeling of effort on the reader's mind. The 5th chapter of book iv. contains a list of the Roman provinces, with an enumeration of the forces by which each was occupied; but instead of giving a lifeless catalogue of names and numbers, Tacitus so varies his mode of statement in each case that no impression of dulness or repetition is left upon the mind or the ear. Another example of inconspicuous variety may be taken from the disquisition on law in iii. 25-28. In those chapters the ideas of law and law-making occur over and over again, yet there is scarcely any repetition in the

1 'Life of Jowett, Abbott and Campbell,' vol. ii. p. 204.
language by which they are expressed. Rich as our own tongue is, to emulate the variety of such passages presents a literary puzzle to the English translator.

And there is another and opposite kind of variety in Tacitus which causes still more difficulty to the translator—his use of the same word with different shades of meaning. The Romans had not the analytical mind of the Greeks; they did not differentiate as nicely between the meanings of their words, or find it necessary, like the French, to have a special word for every variety of thing. Every student of Latin knows the difficulty of finding an exact equivalent, in any particular passage, for such words as *officium, religio, civitas*, etc., which according to the context may have a wide meaning or a narrow meaning, an abstract or a concrete meaning; may refer to something outside the mind, or to a consciousness of that thing inside the mind. The student of Tacitus is constantly baffled in the attempt to find the exact English equivalent for *ambitio, mores, conscientia, ludibrium, civilis, artes bonae*, and words of a similar character. Latin writers did not feel the awkwardness of using the same word twice over, in close proximity, with different meanings. Thus in ii. 59, 4, Tacitus applies the term *claustra* to Egypt, as the key of the Mediterranean; in the next chapter, he uses the same word to denote 'the extreme limits of the Empire.' He makes great use of this vague much-embracing quality of Latin words. Much of his suggestiveness, much of his so-called ambiguity, is due to the fact that he, as it were, throws his net widely, using words which cover various shades of meaning, and leaving the reader to divine for himself which is the particular
shade most appropriate in each case. Thus his phrases germinate differently in the minds of different readers; the crop they yield is often out of all proportion to the quantity of seed sown; and it is this quality which accounts for their applicability to all kinds of circumstances other than those which originally called them forth. The English translator is bound to be more definite; he has to commit himself to some one particular interpretation, and so frequently runs the risk of giving a portion of the meaning instead of the whole.

How much meaning may lurk under apparently simple words, may be illustrated by an analysis of the opening words of i. 4. Having described the political situation at the death of Augustus, Tacitus thus sums up the momentous change by which the Republic had been converted into an Empire:—

*igitur verso civitatis statu nihil usquam prisci et integri moris.*

Every word in this clause is full of meaning. The revolution had been complete (*verso civitatis statu*); and it had come to stay (*statu*). It was no transient upheaval like those brought about by Marius and Sulla. The change extended to the whole Empire, to every department of life (*nihil usquam*). Editors differ as to the meaning of *moris*. Some would confine its meaning to 'constitutional usage,' some to 'private morality;' some take it of customs and habits in general. The word probably includes all these and more—life, manners, modes of thought, everything that made up the world of a Roman citizen. There was *nihil prisci moris*: the good old days, the good old life, were gone; everything that to the regretful regard of Tacitus was
great and free and noble in the old Republic had disappeared. *Nihil integri moris*: the forms of the past might remain; the magistrates might be called by the same names (chap. 3, 7); but the heart had gone out of it all, the reality was gone, the touch of change was everywhere. *Integri* is an innocent-looking word; it does not assert innovation, deterioration, corruption; but it implied them all to the mind and to the school which regarded every change as being for the worse. Translations may be searched in vain for an adequate rendering of these few words; they all give some part of the meaning, not the whole.

Nothing is more carefully studied in the narratives of Tacitus than the order. His frequent changes of construction are due partly, no doubt, to his love for variety, but in a still greater degree to a desire to arrange his facts in the most effective order. The ideas determine the grammar; and however much the grammar varies, the thread of the thought runs on continuously. The picture of the sufferings of Drusus in prison (iv. 24, 4) owes half its force to the order of the words. The Senate are aghast that one, hitherto so impenetrable as Tiberius—

*huc confidentiae venisse ut tamquam dimotis parietibus ostenderet nepotem sub verbere centurionis, inter servorum ictus extrema vitae alimenta frustra orantem.*

It is the same with his longer narratives. Nothing can be finer than the way in which the order is developed in the account of the disaster at Fidenae (iv. 62, 63), or of the landing of Agrippina at Brundisium (iii. 1, 2); or in that of the last campaign against Tacfarinas (iv. 23–36), and in other notable passages.

Order plays no less important a part in the
speeches which Tacitus puts into the mouth of various personages. These speeches are masterpieces of compressed rhetoric. The language is simpler, the construction less involved, the cadences more smooth, than in the narrative passages; but their crowning excellence lies in the luminous and effective order in which great ideas swiftly succeed each other, without one word of surplusage. It would not be easy to match the simple pathos of the speech in which Tiberius commends his grandsons to the Senate (iv. 8, 6–8); the loftiness of that in which he declines divine honours (iv. 37, 38); the spirit with which Crementius Cordus vindicates liberty of speech (iv. 34, 35); the dexterity with which Germanicus plays on the feelings of the half repentant soldiery (i. 42, 43): and the most striking point in all these speeches is the unerring instinct with which every idea, almost every word, is introduced at the point where it is most effective.

Now of all the features in the style of Tacitus, his order is the one in which it is most easy for an English translator to follow him. The flexibility of our language enables it to express one thing in various ways, and to place ideas in almost any order by adopting the construction which suits that order best. We have seen that it is not possible in English to imitate the constructions of Tacitus; and that if his swiftness and vigour are to be reproduced, his long sentences must often be broken up into several short sentences in the English. But with some care, by adopting a suitably turned phrase, it is usually possible to observe his order. It is not always possible; for English has its own mode of expressing emphasis as well as Latin, and we often place the emphatic word first in
a sentence where Latin places it last. But, as a rule, the various points in a passage of Tacitus can be marshalled in the order in which he places them, and by preserving his order we preserve one of the most conspicuous features of his style.

That a style so full of interest as that of Tacitus should have tempted many translators into the field, is little to be wondered at; or that so many should have fallen short of the highest success. Masters of prose writing are few in number in any age; Mr. Frederick Harrison tells us that—

'Mastery in prose is an art more difficult than mastery in verse. . . . At the death of Tennyson, we may remember, it was said that no less than sixty poets were thought worthy of the wreath of bay. Were there six writers of prose whom even a log-rolling confederate would venture to hail as a possible claimant to the crown?'¹ . . .

If this be so, it is indeed vain to look for a perfect translation of one of the prose master-pieces of the world, or to hope to interpret adequately an author whose thoughts are dressed in a strange language, and come wafted to us over a gulf of eighteen centuries. Apart from the essential difficulty of saying in one language what has been thought in another, who can catch the tone of a writer so concise, so suggestive, so varied; whose style is always stately, but not stiff, dignified, yet never dull; who is always in earnest, always on the stretch, yet never heavy or pedantic; always fresh, bright, interesting, though unrelieved by one spark of playfulness or humour; who speaks in accents of command, and who strikes in every sentence that note of moral and patrician

¹ Nineteenth Century, June, 1898, p. 938.
hauteur which befitted the Stoic philosopher, and the statesman of Imperial Rome?

In these days when general interest in ancient life and literature has been so greatly quickened, while the exacting demands of modern studies make it more and more difficult for the ordinary student to acquaint himself with the originals, an incomparable service is being rendered to education and to modern culture by those scholars whose finished translations are helping modern readers to realize for themselves what are the qualities in the Greek and Latin classics which have won for them the admiration of mankind. No translation can rise to the level of such a work as the Annals of Tacitus; but if the version here offered shall do something to make Tacitus live again for the English reader, or, better still, induce him to study the original, it will repay the years of solid labour which have been expended on it.
FAMILY OF THE CAESARS.

C. Caesar = Aurelia

Julius Caesar
B.C. 100–44

Julia = Atius

C. Octavius = Atia

Octavia minor = (1) C. Marcellus = (2) M. Antonius
Triumvir
d. B.C. 30

Augustus = (1) Scribonia = (2) Livia Drusilla
B.C. 58–A.D. 99

Livia Drusilla = Ti. Claudius Nero
B.C. 58–A.D. 33

M. Marcellus = Julia
B.C. 43–23

Antonia maior = Julia
b. B.C. 39

Antonia minor = Drusus maior
B.C. 39–A.D. 14

Drusus = Antonia minor
B.C. 38–9

Julia = (1) Vipsania = (2) Tibereus = (1) Vipsania = (2) Julia
B.C. 39–A.D. 37

July
b. B.C. 39–A.D. 14

Nero Caesar = Julia
A.D. 43

Drusus Caesar = Aemilia Lepida
A.D. 43

Caius (Caligula)
A.D. 10–24

Agrippina = Cn. Domitius
A.D. 41

Drusilla
A.D. 15–59

Julia or Livia
A.D. 17–38

Nero, A.D. 37–68

[To face p. 1.
THE ANNALS
OF
CORNELIUS TACITUS.

BOOK I.

1. In the beginning, Rome was ruled by Kings. Lucius Brutus established liberty and the Consulship. The Dictatorship was resorted to in emergencies. The authority of the Decemvirs lasted for only two years; that of the Military Tribunes with Consular Powers for no long period. The tyrannies of Cinna and of Sulla were short-lived; the ascendency of Pompeius and Crassus passed quickly on to Cæsar, the swords of Lepidus and Antonius made way before Augustus: who under the title of 'Princeps' took the whole

1 Chapters 1 and 2 are written with great care. Chap. 1 begins with a short enumeration of the various forms of government set up in Rome from the time of Romulus to that of Augustus. Each is marked by an appropriate word. For the kings, the neutral word habuer, 'governed,' is used. Libertas stands for 'the Republic.' Potestas and ius imply that the powers of the decemvirs and military tribunes were constitutional, and exercised according to law. The rule of Cinna and of Sulla was a dominatio—a rule of violence without pretence of legality. The first triumvirate exercised a potestas, or undue ascendency; it was an extra-legal, rather than an illegal, authority; a combination of influences which, without palpably overriding the constitution, worked it for the sole benefit of the triumvirs. The second triumvirate, of Antony, Lepidus and Augustus, was in its origin purely military (arma); while Augustus established an Imperium, under the title of Princeps.

2 Cinna's dominatio lasted from 87 B.C., when he violated alike his oath and the constitution as Cos. I. (i.e. for the first time), till he was killed in a mutiny at Ancona in B.C. 84, when Cos. IV. It is curious that Tacitus makes no mention of Marius, whose reign of terror was in B.C. 87; nor of Sulla's later career as a legislator. Sulla was dictator perpetuus B.C. 82-79.
world, worn out by civil conflict, under Imperial rule.  

The story of ancient Rome, in her triumphs and reverses, has been related by illustrious writers; nor were men of genius wanting to tell of Augustus and his times, until the rising spirit of sycophancy bid them beware. The histories of Tiberius and Gaius, of Claudius and Nero, were either falsified through fear, if written during their life-time; or composed under feelings of fresh hatred after their fall. I purpose, therefore, to write shortly of Augustus and his end, and then narrate the reigns of Tiberius and his successors;  

unmoved, as I have no reason to be moved, by either hatred or partiality.  

1 The phrase nomine principis sub imperium accept is expresses in the shortest and most exact form the government set up by Augustus: a military despotism under the modest title of princeps. The imperium, conveyed by a lex curiata de imperio, was properly the supreme power, civil and military, exercised by the higher magistrates of the Roman people, whether at home or abroad. In practice, under the Republic, the imperium within the city was so modified by the rights of intercessio, provocatio, etc., that it could only be fully exercised, even by the consuls, outside the city walls, and by provincial governors inside their respective provinces. Hence the term came to denote especially the power of the sword, exercised by every imperator over his troops, or over his province. An extended imperium became the basis of the power of the emperors (see n. on chap. 2, x); but to avoid parading within the city the military nature of his rule, Augustus chose to be designated by the simple title of princeps. That title, under the Republic, had been an honorary designation; it was given as a matter of courtesy to the senior consular in the senate, who was called princeps senatus. Gradually, however, it acquired what Mr. Greenwood (‘Roman Public Life, p. 352) describes as a semi-official character, and came to denote a kind of political pre-eminence over other citizens, as in Cic. ad Att. viii. 9, 4 nihili mallem Caesarem quam princeps Pompeio sine metu vivere; and ad Fam. vi. 6, 5 esset hic quidem (i.e. Caesar) clarus in toga et princeps, Horace applies it in a complimentary manner to Augustus (Od. 1, 2, 50) Hic ames dicit pater atque princeps. Similarly, the young Caesars, Gaius and Lucius, were styled principes iuventutis (chap. 3, 9). In the present passage, Tacitus is speaking of the principate in its ultimate form, as constituted in B.C. 29, without reference to the intermediate form which it assumed in B.C. 27. See n. on chap. 2, x.

2 Tacitus here announces the scope of the Annals, and his reasons for undertaking the work. He is to be the first impartial historian of the reigns of Tiberius, Caligula, Claudius and Nero.

3 Thus ostentatiously does Tacitus proclaim that he has no causas, i.e. no personal reasons, for partiality in writing of Augustus and Tiberius: he has received neither good usage nor ill usage at their hands. Similarly, in introducing his Histories, he says, Mithridates, Otho, Vitellius nec beneficio nec injuria cogniti (Hist. i. 1, 4). How far he makes good this claim in regard to Tiberius is one of the great questions for the reader of the Annals to determine.
When the last army of the Republic\(^1\) had fallen with Brutus and Cassius\(^2\) on the field; when Sextus Pompeius\(^8\) had been crushed in Sicily; and when the deposition of Lepidus,\(^4\) followed by the death of Antonius,\(^6\) had left Augustus\(^6\) sole leader of the Julian party, he laid aside the title of Triumvir,\(^7\) assumed family in turn; to Augustus, Tiberius, Germanicus, Drusus, etc. The full name of Augustus at the time of the triumvirate was *Gaius Iulius Caesar Octavianus*; the termination *anus* signifying that he had belonged to the *Gens Octavia* before passing by adoption into the *Gens Iulia*.

\(^1\) In contrast to the curt sentences of chap. 1, Tacitus now plunges into one of his most carefully constructed periods. In one masterly sentence, he passes in review the whole reign of Augustus; noting the successive stages in its upward progress, the methods by which he paved the way for Empire, the exhaustion, the lassitude and corruption, which led the Roman world to acquiesce in it. In styling the army which fought at Philippi 'the last army of the Republic,' Tacitus declines to acknowledge the legality of the consular powers voted to the triumvirs for five years by a plebiscite carried by the tribune P. Titius in November, B.C. 43.

\(^2\) Brutus and Cassius both committed suicide: Cassius after the first battle of Philippi, B.C. 42; Brutus after the second, fought twenty days later.

\(^3\) Sextus Pompeius Magnus, younger son of Pompey the Great, maintained the Pompeian cause after his father's death, principally in Sicily and by sea, till he was defeated by M. Agrippa in the sea-fight off Naupactus, Sept. 3, B.C. 36.

\(^4\) M. Aemilius Lepidus, the triumvir, attempting a revolt on his own account in Sicily, after the defeat of Sextus Pompey by M. Agrippa in B.C. 36, was deposed by Augustus, and forced into retirement. But he remained *Pontifex Maximus* until his death, B.C. 13, when he was succeeded in that office by Augustus.

\(^5\) After his memorable defeat at Actium, Sept. 2, B.C. 31, Antony fled to Alexandria, where he put an end to himself in the year following, on the approach of Augustus.

\(^6\) Tacitus here speaks of Augustus as *Caesar*. In chap. 1 he is spoken of as *Augustus* in connection with the and triumvirate (B.C. 43), although that title was not conferred upon him until Jan. 16, B.C. 27; and in the same passage the name *Caesarem* refers to Julius Caesar. Tacitus applies the name indiscriminately, and without any addition, to all the members of the imperial

Gradual ascent of Augustus to supreme power.
the Consulship, and professed himself content with the Tribunitian Power for the protection of the plebs. But when he had won the soldiery by bounties, the populace by cheap corn, and all classes alike by the sweets of peace, he rose higher and higher by degrees, and drew into his own hands all the functions of the Senate, the magistrates and the laws. And there

of the consulship, as being in appearance unconstitutional, and received in its place the proconsulare imperium. That power was now extended by the senate so as to embrace all the essentials of the consular imperium which he had held previously; while the tribunicia potestas also was so enlarged in its scope as to carry with it the idea of supreme authority: id summi fasitigii vocabulum Augustus reperit ne regis aut dictatoris nomen adumeret ac tamen appellazione aliqua cetera imperia praeminet (iii. 56, 2). From that time onward the Emperors dated their reigns from the assumption of the tribunicia potestas. The assumption of the seemingly modest, but really extravagant, powers of the tribunate was a master-stroke of political genius; it exactly fitted the leading idea of the policy of Augustus, which was to gather into his own hands the substance, without the name, of power. See Rushforth, 'Roman Historical Inscriptions,' pp. 4-6, and n. on iii. 56, 2. As Mr. Greenidge says, 'Roman Public Life,' p. 337, the trib. pot. was 'the ideal complement of a lasting imperium, valuable for the inviolability it conferred, and for the "civil" and popular colouring which it gave its holder.' The combination of these two powers constituted a democratic military autocracy; analogous to the theory of the Second French Empire—that of military rule supported by a popular vote. 'A plebscitary empire' was the fundamental doctrine of the Imperial party in France so long as it had any practical policy at all.

Augustus held his first consulship in B.C. 43, forcing the senate to vote it to him. His second consulship, held for only a short time, was in B.C. 33: he then held the office for nine years in succession, from B.C. 32 to 23.

In the Mon. Anc. iii. 17, 18, Augustus records that in his 5th consulship (B.C. 39) he gave 1,000 sestercies apiece to 195,000 veterans in his military colonies, as a triumphale congru. He gave the same amount (2,000 drachmacs) to every soldier at the taking of Alexandria, B.C. 30, to save the city from pillage (Dio. lii. 17, 7), and granted to the army generally liberal terms of discharge (Suet. Oct. 49; Dio. iv. 23, 1). Summing up all he had given to the treasury, or in largesses, or to discharged soldiers, Augustus himself puts the total at 3,000,000,000 sestercies; equivalent, in round numbers, to about £20,000,000 of our money (Mon. Anc. vi. 29, 30).

The term annona, here used, applies primarily to the measures taken by Augustus for securing a plentiful and cheap supply of corn to the city; but also, no doubt, to the gratuitous, or nearly gratuitous, distributions of corn periodically made to indigent citizens (frumentationes). These distributions constituted what was practically a gigantic system of outdoor relief. Originally, a small payment was demanded; in B.C. 58, under Caesar's influence, the payment was abolished; and later, all that Caesar ventured to do was to reduce the number of recipients to 150,000 ticket-holders. See Suet. Oct. 41, and Dict. Ant. s.v. Frumentariae Leges. On the care taken by the emperors to regulate the corn-supply of the city, see n. on iii. 54, 6-8.

The senate nominally retained its old functions; but the tribunitian powers of initiation and of veto gave the emperor complete command of its decisions.

All ordinary magistrates exercised their powers subject to the larger powers conferred upon the emperor under one or other of his titles; the powers of the censorship he exercised under the regium legum et morum, or as corrector morum.

In legislation, the emperor held in his own hand the machinery of the senate and of the comitia; but he and his successors assumed also, by degrees, the right of issuing ordinances which
was no one to oppose; for the most ardent patriots had fallen on the field, or in the proscriptions; and the rest of the nobles, advanced in wealth and place in proportion to their servility, and drawing profit out of the new order of affairs, preferred the security of the present to the hazards of the past.

2 Nor did the provinces resent the change; for the rule of the Senate and the People had become odious to them from the contests between great leaders, and the greed of magistrates, against whom the laws, upset by force, by favour, and, in fine, by bribery, were powerless to protect them.¹

3. ¹ Meanwhile Augustus, as buttresses to his rule, advanced Claudius Marcellus,² his sister's son, to the priesthood and Curule Aedileship, while yet a lad; and bestowed the honour of two ³ Consulships on Marcus Agrippa ⁴—a man of ignoble birth, but a stout

¹ Even Tacitus has to acknowledge the breakdown of all justice in the government of the provinces under the republic. The establishment of monarchy was essential in their interests; it was largely caused by the reaction of the provinces upon Rome. The following books afford many examples of consideration shewn to the interests, and even the feelings, of the provincials, such as we look for in vain in republican days. Hence the frequent bestowing of honours upon the emperor by grateful provinces; see iv. 15, 4: 27; Suet. Oct. 59, 60. As to the ultimate effects of the establishment of the principate upon the civilized world, see Greenidge, p. 427: 'The results were comfort and peace; but a comfort that was too often divested of even local patriotism, and a peace that was singularly devoid of intellectual ideals... The subject acclaimed it (i.e. the empire) in its initial stages, although his descendant was to find in it a burden in comparison with which the yoke of the republican proconsul would have seemed a trifle.'

² M. Claudius Marcellus, son of Octavia, the sister of Augustus. He was born B.C. 43; adopted by Augustus, and married to Julia, B.C. 25; made curule aedile in B.C. 23, and died in the same year. It was in his honour that Augustus dedicated the well-known theatre of Marcellus; and that Virgil wrote the noble passage, Aen. vi. 851–889, the reciting of which was said to have caused Octavia to faint with emotion, and which she rewarded with a gift of 10,000 sesterces pro singulo versus ('for each line?') Donat. Vit. Virg. 47. See Prop. iii. 18; Hor. Od. i. 12, 46.

³ In B.C. 28 and 29; he had been previously consul in B.C. 37.

⁴ Marcus Vipsanius Agrippa, born in the same year as Augustus (B.C. 63), was his early companion, and his right hand in all his wars. His daughter Vipsania (by his first wife, Pomponia, daughter of Atticus) was the first wife of Tiberius.
soldier, and partner in his victories. When Marcellus died, he took Agrippa as his son-in-law; and distinguished his two step-sons, Tiberius Nero and Claudius Drusus, with Imperatorial titles, though as yet there was no lack of heirs in his own family.

For he had adopted the two sons of Agrippa, Gaius and Lucius, into the family of the Caesars; and before they assumed the manly gown, had caused them to be styled 'Chiefs of the Youth,' and to be designated Consuls—honours which he had affected to decline, but had most ardently coveted for them. But first Agrippa died; then the two Caesars were cut off—whether by an untimely fate, or through the machinations of their step-mother Livia—the younger of them on his way to join the Spanish army, the elder when returning wounded from Armenia. Tiberius was now the sole surviving step-son of Augustus; for his brother Drusus had perished long

---

1 Two uses of the title imperator under the empire have to be distinguished. What is here meant is the honorary title by which, according to ancient custom, a conquering general was hailed by his soldiers in the moment of victory. Such a title was carefully recorded, and was indicated by the letters IMP, placed after the recipient’s name. It might be bestowed several times upon the same person; it was accorded at times to Augustus. After the year A.D. 22, when this title was conferred on Blaesus, it was never given to any but members of the imperial family (iii. 74, 6, 7). Quite different was the praenomen Imperatoris. This title was first assumed by Caesar, as a distinguishing mark of imperial sovereignty; it was placed, as the words imply, before the name. Augustus adopted it in B.C. 40 instead of his own praenomen Gaius, calling himself Imperator Caesar Divi filius; and his example was followed by most of the succeeding emperors, though not by Tiberius (Suet. Caes. 76; Dio. xliii. 44, 2). It is from this use of the term that the modern title 'Emperor' is derived.

2 Gaius Caesar, the elder of the two, was born B.C. 19, and died in Lycia, A.D. 4, of a wound received in Armenia; Lucius was born B.C. 17, and died at Marseilles, on his way to Spain, A.D. 2.

3 A courtesy title, bestowed for the first time by the equites on the two young Caesars (Cron. Ancyran. iii. 5). From this time onwards, this title was usually bestowed on the probable successor to the empire. For the vague use of the word princeps, cp. the phrases princeps liberos, 'the sons of great men,' Tac. Dial. 40, 1; princeps feminar, Plin. H.N. viii. 32, 119; princi-pibus viris, Ann. iii. 6, 5.

4 One of the many passages in which Tacitus suggests a suspicion of foul play, especially on the part of Livia, without committing himself to a definite assertion of it. See chap. 3, 4, 5, 2; ii. 43, 5; iii. 10, 4, etc.

5 Claudius Drusus Nero, the younger brother of Tiberius, and father of Germanicus (called senior to distinguish him from Drusus the son of Tiberius), was born B.C. 38, three months after his mother Livia had been carried off from his father’s house by Augustus. See chap. 10, 4. He was the more
before. On him therefore all hopes were centred. He was adopted as a son, made colleague in the Imperium, admitted to share the Tribunitian Power, and exhibited to all the armies: his mother no longer intriguing for him in secret, but affording him open encouragement.

For Livia had acquired such an ascendancy over Augustus in his old age, that he cast out on the island of Planasia his only surviving grandson, Agrippa Postumus: an uncultured youth, no doubt, with nothing but brute bodily strength to recommend him, but one who had never been found guilty of any open misdemeanour. And yet so anxious was Augustus to strengthen his position that he appointed Germanicus, the son of Drusus, to the command of the eight legions on the Rhine, and ordered his adoption by Tiberius, although Tiberius had a young son of his own.

Popular of the two brothers. His victorious campaign in B.C. 15, in conjunction with Tiberius, against the Raetii and Vindelici in the Eastern Alps, has been made famous by Hor. Od. iv. 4 and 14. After important successes in Germany, into which he penetrated as far as the Elbe, he was killed by a fall from his horse, B.C. 9.

1 After the deaths of Lucius and Gaius, in A.D. 8 and A.D. 4 respectively, Tiberius was clearly marked out for the succession, not only as the possessor of the imperium and the tribunicia potestas, but also, and in a more marked manner, as the adopted son of Augustus. On the triumphal Arch at Ticianum (Pavia), erected in A.D. 7 or 8, Tiberius is described as ‘son of Augustus, grandson of Divus (i.e. Julius Caesar), Augur, Cos II., and holder of the trib. pot. for the 9th time.’ See Rushforth, P. 42.

2 This phrase refers to partnership in the proconsular imperium. That power, as we have seen above (see n. on chap. 2, 1), received its fullest application in B.C. 23, after which it practically became perpetual. The association of an heir in this power would probably only be partial. Thus Germanicus received in A.D. 11 a special imperium in Gaul and Germany (see chap. 14, 4); and in A.D. 17 the senate voted him a maius imperium, above all ordinary provincial governors, over the provinces of the East (ii. 43, 2).

3 Tiberius received the trib. pot. for five years in B.C. 6. It was again conferred on him A.D. 4 for ten years; or more probably for a period of five years, renewed again (perhaps for life) in A.D. 9 (Suet., Tib. 16). M. Agrippa had previously held the trib. pot. from B.C. 18 to his death in B.C. 12.

A small rocky island 90 miles S. of Elba, now called Pianosa.

The youngest of the three sons of Agrippa and Julia, born after the death of the former (B.C. 12), and put to death by Tiberius A.D. 14, chap. 6, 1.

The words ‘and yet’ (at Hercule) emphasize the inconsistency of Augustus in banishing his own grandson, and yet conferring an important command upon his nephew. In causing Tiberius, who had a son of his own (Drusus junior), to adopt Germanicus, Augustus was introducing into the imperial family the fatal system of rival heirs; and in this
All wars had now ceased except that against the Germans; and even that was being continued rather to wipe out the disgrace of the loss of Quintilius Varus and his legions, than from a desire to extend the empire, or for any profitable end. Tranquillity reigned at home; the magistrates were called by their old names; the younger generation had been born since Actium, the elder, for the most part, during the course of the Civil Wars: how many were there left who had beheld the Republic?

Thus a revolution had been accomplished. The old order had passed away; everything had suffered change. The days of equality were gone: men looked to the Prince for his commands, having no anxiety
for the present, so long as Augustus was of the age, and had the strength, to keep himself, his house and the public peace secure. But when he advanced in years, when his health and strength failed, and his approaching end gave birth to new hopes, some few discoursed idly on the blessings of liberty; many dreaded war; some longed for it.  

But the greater number pulled to pieces the characters of their future masters with comments such as these:—

Agrippa, they said, was a savage, exasperated by contumelious treatment; he had neither the years nor the experience to bear the weight of empire. Tiberius Nero was of ripe age, and a tried warrior: but he had all the old pride of the Claudii in his blood; and, however carefully suppressed, many indications of a cruel temper had escaped him. He had been brought up from infancy in a reigning house; Consulships and Triumphs had been heaped upon him in his youth: even during the years of exile which he had spent in Rhodes, under

1 Tacitus here shortly states the three-fold division of public opinion at Rome at this crisis: (1) Idie and abstract lamentations of liberty by the select few; (2) the opinion of the majority, who felt that nothing but monarchy could avert the horrors of civil war; (3) that of the party of revolution and confusion, ready to welcome war in their greed for res nova.

2 For this hereditary quality in the Claudii, see Liv. ii. 56, 8; Suet., Tib. 2.

3 Here and elsewhere in Tacitus the word familia is used for gens; so in ii. 52, 8 of the gens Puring; and in liii. 48, 2 of the gens Sulpicia.

4 This is an exaggeration. Tiberius had only twice been consul: in B.C. 13 (aged 20), and again in B.C. 7 (aged 35). Suetonius mentions no triumph; only one ovation, with triumphal honours, granted after his German successes, in B.C. 7; the ‘triumphal ornaments’ being, as some thought, first devised on that occasion. See chap. 72, 1. His panygerist, Velleius Paterculus (ii. 97, 5),

mentions the ovation of B.C. 7 as ‘his second triumph;’ ascribing to him a first triumph for his successes in Pannonia and Dalmatia, soon after B.C. 13. In reviewing his life, Velleius praises him for ‘being content with three triumphs, when without any hesitation he could have claimed seven.’ Which was the third triumph indicated here by Velleius is not clear.

5 Adopting exul egerit, the reading of Muretus, for the MS. exulum. Cp. eum Rhodi a gentem, ‘when living at Rhodes,’ ii. 42, 2.

6 The retirement of Tiberius to Rhodes from B.C. 6 to A.D. 2 is one of the mysteries of his life. He had been Cos. II. in B.C. 7; early in B.C. 6 he had been invested with the tribunicia potestas, and charged with an important mission to Armenia. Yet he chose this moment to retire from public life, and shut himself up, under pretence of studying philosophy, in the island of Rhodes. Suet. Tib. 20 suggests three different reasons which may have moved
pretence of retreat, he had done nothing but brood over his resentments, or practise hypocrisy and solitary debauch. And then there was his mother, with all the ungovernable passions of her sex: they would have to serve a woman, and two striplings into the bargain, who would begin by oppressing the commonwealth, and end by rending it in sunder.

Amid speculations such as these, the health of Augustus began to fail. Some suspected foul play on the part of his wife. For a rumour had got him to this step; (1) The profligate conduct of his wife Julia: Tacitus assigns this as the main cause, i. 53, 2. (2) A desire to make way for the two young Caesars, who were now stepping into the position hitherto occupied by himself. (3) A hope that his absence from Rome might prove him to be indispen-
sable. See Dio iv. 9. According to Suetonius, he retired in a fit of sullenness, greatly against the will of Augustus; and when after a time he begged to be allowed to return, his petition was harshly refused. At Rhodes he lived a life of absolute seclusion; he was subjected to slight and insult at the hands of those who sought to curry favour with the young princes (ii. 42, 3; iii. 48, 3); yet he was permitted to return to Rome while those princes were still alive and in high favour, on the condition that he was to take no part in public affairs (Suet., Tib. 13). Whatever the true circumstances of his retreat may have been, it is certain that it was the result of friction between himself and Augustus, and that it left permanent traces for evil upon his proud, sensitive, and vindictive nature.

Reading aliquid quam with Halm and Nipp. for the MS. aliquid quam.

(1) Under cover of quoting opinions expressed at the time, Tacitus does not hesitate to put the vilest interpretation on the enforced seclusion of Tiberius at Rhodes. This is one of his favourite methods of detriment. He first puts a charge into some one’s mouth, keeping himself clear of all responsibility for it; then afterwards, without more ado, assumes its truth. Thus in iv. 57, 4 he asserts of Tiberius as a fact Et Rhodi secreto viiari coetus, recondere voluptates insurserat. Even if we accept as true the evil tales about the later years of Tiberius—and the probability is all the other way—there is no evidence against his private life in Rhodes. All that the scandal-monger Suetonius tells us of his doings in Rhodes points in the opposite direction. He describes him as leading there a quiet, inoffensive life; studious, kindly; humbly avoiding any occasion of giving offence. In vilifying the life at Capri, he knows no bounds; he says nothing against the life at Rhodes.

(2) So in v. 1, 5. Livia is described as mater impotentis, in reference to her exacting demands upon her son: cp. iv. 57, 4. The word impotentia means more than ‘imperiousness’: it implies that total want of control over the passions, feelings and conduct, which Tacitus regards as a peculiarly feminine characteristic. He seldom misses an opportunity of having a fling at women. i.e. Germanicus, and Drusus the son of Tiberius.

(3) Another suspicion suggested, not vouched for. Dio is more precise, though he does not vouch for the truth of his own story. His account is that Livia was alarmed by the visit of Augustus to Agrippa Postumus, and that she determined to poison Augustus before he could change the succession. Augustus being fond of eating figs off the tree, she took him to a tree, plucked figs for him, and ate some herself, contriving to spread poison on those she gave to him (lvi. 30, 2). A likely story! Tacitus himself deals a death-blow to the credibility of such tales when he tells us that ‘Rumour is ever charged with horrors when dealing with the death of princes’ (iv. 11, 3).
abroad that Augustus, some months before, with
the privity of a few special friends, and with Fabius
Maximus① as sole companion, had journeyed to Plan-
asia to see Agrippa. It was said that many tears had
been shed, many signs of affection exchanged, between
the two; and hopes were raised that the young man
might be restored to his grandfather's home.② The
secret of this visit, it was reported, had been betrayed
by Maximus to his wife Marcia, and by her to Livia.
This had come to the ears of Augustus; and when
Maximus died not long after (whether by his own
hand or not was a matter of doubt),③ Marcia had been
overheard lamenting at his funeral, and blaming
herself for her husband's death.

Be that as it may, Tiberius had scarcely reached
Illyricum when he was recalled in haste by a mes-
sage from his mother. Whether on arriving at Nola
he found Augustus still alive, or already dead, was
never known. For Livia had placed a strict guard
upon the palace and its approaches; favourable
bulletins were issued from time to time; until, when
every necessary precaution had been taken, it was
announced in one and the same breath that Augustus
was dead, and that Tiberius was in possession of the
government.

The opening crime④ of the new reign was the

① Paulus Fabius Maximus, consul
B.C. 11, the patron of Ovid. The poet
wrote two poems to this Fabius (Epist.
ex Pont. i. 2 and iii. 3) urgently im-
ploring him to intercede with Augustus
in his favour, and procure his recall
from exile. His death cut off Ovid's
last hope: Certus eras pro me, Fabiae
lux maxime gentis, = Numen ad
Augustum supplice voce loqui. = Occidis
ante preces; Ep. iv. 6, 9-11.
② Dio goes further, and says the fear
was that Augustus meant to name
Agrippa as his successor (iv. 30, 1).
③ That Augustus, at his age, should have
traversed forty miles of open sea, and
that without the knowledge of Livia, is
very improbable; that he could have
thought, at the eleventh hour, of
naming Postumus as his successor, is
quite inconceivable.
④ Another unverified suspicion.
⑤ Tacitus begins his account of the
reign of Tiberius with the grim insinua-
tion that his whole reign was one long
course of crime. So of Nero, Ann. xiii.
1, 1. Prima novo principatu morti Luni
Silani . . . per dolum Agrippinae
murder of Agrippa Postumus. He was taken by surprise, and was unarmed; yet the centurion, though a determined man, had some difficulty in despatching him. Tiberius made no communication on the subject to the Senate. His father, he pretended, had left orders with the officer in charge to put Agrippa to death so soon as he himself should breathe his last. Now Augustus, no doubt, had said many harsh things about the young man's character, and had caused the Senate to decree his banishment; but he never hardened himself so far as to put any of his own family to death, nor is it credible that he should have slain his grandson to secure a step-son's safety. It is more probable that this hurried murder of a youth detested equally by Tiberius and by Livia, was the work of both; the former moved by fear, the latter by her hatred as a step-mother.

When the centurion reported, according to military custom, that he had executed the order, Tiberius replied that he had never given any such order; and that the man would have to answer to the Senate for his conduct. When this became known to Sallustius, 6

---

Advice of Sallustius Crispus.

paratur. Suetonius leaves it an open question whether the order for the death of Agrippa was left as an instruction by Augustus on his deathbed, or was given by Livia, with or without the knowledge of Tiberius. He adds that the death of Augustus was not given out till the murder had been accomplished (Tib. 22).

Suet. (Oct. 65) informs us that Augustus adopted Tiberius and Agrippa on the same day; then disinherited Agrippa ob ingenium sordidum ac ferox; and finally, as he became nihil tractabilior, immo in dies amentior, sent him into seclusion at Surrentum. The word sordidum is to be interpreted by Dio, who calls Agrippa deceptamque; he describes him as given to low pursuits, highly passionate, and violent in his abuse of Livia and Augustus.

As Furn. points out, important criminals might be tried and sentenced either by the senate, or by the ordinary courts of law, or by the edict of the emperor himself. We shall find instances of all these methods in the Annals.

Augustus used coarsely to describe Agrippa and the two Julias (his daughter and grand-daughter respectively) as 'his three sores;' or 'his three cancerous ulcers' (Suet., Oct. 65). That Augustus should have contemplated extreme measures against such a grandson to secure the position of Tiberius does not seem improbable; he never permitted his heart to interfere with his policy. But the real object of Tacitus in exonerating Augustus is to whitewash him at the expense of Tiberius and Livia.
Crispus, who was in the secret—it was he who had sent the written instructions to the Tribune—he was afraid that the charge would be shifted on to his own shoulders, in which case, whether he should tell the truth or not, he would be in equal peril. He therefore warned Livia that the secrets of the palace, the private advice of friends, and the services of the soldiery, were things not to be published abroad:—

_Tiberius must not weaken the powers of the Principate by referring everything to the Senate. The condition of Imperial rule was this: that every one should be accountable to one man, and to one only._

7. 1 Meanwhile all at Rome—Consuls, Senators, and Knights—were plunging into servitude. Men bearing the most illustrious names were the foremost with false professions; composing their features so as not to show too much pleasure at the death of the one prince, or too little at the accession of the other; blending tears with their smiles, and flattery with their lamentations. The Consuls, Sextus Pompeius and Sextus Appuleius, were the first to take the oath of allegiance, which they in turn administered to Seius Strabo and Gaius Turranius—the former assuming the command of his army. It was taken to the emperor in virtue of his _proconsulare imperium_, which extended over the whole empire. By a gradual extension, it became customary to exact this oath from the senate, from all magistrates, citizens and subjects, even in the provinces, on the 1st Jan. in each year, as well as at the beginning of a new reign. The oath bound them to maintain the emperor’s authority against all enemies, even though they were their own children (Orell., Inscr. 3665). For the distinction between this oath and the oath _in acta principis_, see Furn. and n. on chap. 72, 2.

1 Tacitus gives an interesting account of this Sallust, grand-nephew of the historian, by whom he was adopted. He compares him, both in character and career, to Maecenas, whom he succeeded as the confidant and adviser first of Augustus, and of Tiberius afterwards (iii. 30, 3-6). In ii. 40 we find him entrusted with a secret mission to inveigle the pretender Clemens, who attempted to raise an insurrection by personating Agrippa.

2 The phrase _ruere in servitium_ seems to refer mainly to the voluntary taking of the oath of allegiance described below.

4 This was the military oath taken by every soldier to an _imperator_ on his becoming the command of his army.
Commandant of the Praetorian Cohorts, the latter, Superintendent of the corn-market. Then came the Senate, the soldiers, and the people. For Tiberius left all initiative with the Consuls, as though the old Republic were still standing, and as if he himself had not made up his mind to assume the Empire: even the edict by which he summoned the Senate he only put forth in virtue of the Tribunitian authority conferred on him in the lifetime of Augustus.

The edict itself was short, and moderate in tone:—

He desired to take their advice as to the honours to be paid to his father; he himself would not leave the body, nor undertake any other public duty. And yet, no sooner was Augustus dead, than he had given the password to the Praetorians as their commander; he had surrounded himself with guards and sentinels and all the paraphernalia of a court; he was escorted by soldiers to the Forum and to the Senate-house, and he had issued a proclamation to the army as though he were already Emperor: nowhere did he show hesitation save in his language to the Senate.

---

1 The military office of praefectus praetorii (or —), commander of the praetorian guards, and the civil office of praefectus annonae, superintendent of the markets, were now rising into great importance. As to the former, see iv. 2, 1–3. Both officers were appointed by the emperor, and responsible to him alone. The securing and regulating the corn-supply was one of the most important of the imperial duties. Under the republic, it had been discharged by the aediles, and its proper management was essential both for the tranquillity of the city and the security of the emperor. Tiberius speaks of this department being directly under his own control, iii. 54, 8: Hanc, Patres Conscripist, curam instinet princeps; hac omnia funditus rem publicam trahet. At the head of the department was a praefectus annonae of equestrian rank. C. Turanius seems to have been the first to occupy that position. See Rushforth, p. 31. The praefectures of the praetorian guards, of the corn-supply, and of Egypt, were held by Roman knights only, and constituted the three great prizes open to their order. The creation of these offices, the holders of which were responsible only to the emperors, was one of the chief means by which they gradually took all important administrative duties into their own hands. These offices, in fact, constituted a kind of permanent civil service.

2 For annonae, see nn. on chap. 2, 1, and iii. 54, 6 and 7.

3 The anxiety of Tiberius in regard to the attitude of Germanicus and his army is not to be wondered at. There was as yet no imperial law or custom of succession. Tacitus tells us over and over again, as in this passage, that Germanicus was the darling of the Roman people; that he had all the
His chief reason for this attitude was his fear of Germanicus. That prince had many legions under his command, and a vast force of allies; he was the darling of the people; and it might be that he would prefer possession to expectation.

Tiberius had regard also to public opinion. He wanted men to believe that he had been chosen and called to power by his countrymen, rather than that he had crept into it through the intrigues of a wife, or as the adopted son of a dotard. It transpired afterwards that this air of hesitation was assumed deliberately, for the purpose of fathoming the feelings of the leading men; for Tiberius would distort a word or a look into an offence, and treasure it up in his memory.

At the first meeting of the Senate, Tiberius permitted no business to be transacted except that relating to the obsequies of Augustus. The testament was carried in by the Vestal Virgins. Tiberius and Livia were appointed heirs. Livia was to be adopted into the Julian house, and to receive the title of 'Augusta'. His grandsons and great-grandsons

With whom, as in temples generally, it was common to deposit wills, papers, and other valuables for security. The granting of the nomen Augustum to Livia was an extraordinary honour. It was more than a mere compliment; for that title belonged properly to the actually reigning emperor (Rushforth, p. 68), and was never borne by any one else till the middle of the second century. Mommsen points out (Staatsr. ii. 746 n.) that under a less determined ruler than Tiberius, Livia might have asserted her claim to be practically his colleague. The younger Agrippina bore the title as co-ruler with Claudius first and Nero afterwards; her head appears on coins beside that of Nero. See nn. on chap. 14, 3 and iv. 57, 4. The title was conferred upon Augustus on Jan. 15, B.C. 27, as a complimentary surname like Magnus,
came next in the succession; in the third rank were many names of distinction, mostly those of personal enemies, inserted in a spirit of vain-glory, with an eye to the approbation of posterity. The amount bequeathed was not above the scale of a private fortune; but a sum of forty-three and a half million sesterces was left to the people and to the plebs. Each soldier of the Praetorian Cohorts was to receive one thousand sesterces; the soldiers of the Urban Cohorts five hundred; the legionaries, and the members of the Cohorts raised from Roman citizens, three hundred sesterces apiece.¹

The question of funeral honours was then considered. The most outstanding proposals were that

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Amounts bequeathed.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Germainicus, etc., and also in a semi-religious sense to denote the greatness and sanctity of his person. He himself tells us it was given to him in return for his having restored the republic to the senate and the people: pro quo merito meo senatus consulto Augustus appellant sum (Mon., Anc. vi. 16).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>¹ There are some slight differences between the accounts of the will as given by Tacitus, by Suet. (Aug. 101), and by Dio (lvi. 32). But if we put the accounts carefully together (with the necessary insertion of urbanis quingentos after singula nummum milita in the passage before us, and reading ac for aut after the following word legionarius), we may conclude that the sums bequeathed were as follows. The main inheritance—what we should call 'the residue'—was divided between Tiberius and Livia, in the proportion of two parts to Tiberius and one to Livia. Failing them, two-thirds were to go to Germanicus and his three sons, and one-third to Drusus, son of Tiberius. Failing these also, a number of distinguished names were inserted as heirs in the third degree. Suetonius states that Augustus estimated this residue at 150 million sesterces, equivalent roughly (if we take the metal value of a thousand sesterces as £3) to about £1,200,000. There were various legacies (amounts not named) to relatives and others, including some foreign princes. The most considerable legacies were (1) 40 million HS. (£32,000) to the populus Romanus, i.e. the public Treasury (aerarium); (2) 3,500,000 HS. (£28,000) to the plebs, i.e. to the 35 tribes, at the rate of 100,000 HS., or £800, a tribe; (3) 1000 HS., or £8, to each soldier in the praetorian cohorts; 300 HS., or £2 8s., to each common soldier, whether of the legions or of the cohortes civium Romanorum. Reckoning the praetorian guards at 5000 men, the urban cohorts at 3000, and the legionaries (45 legions) at 125,000 in all, the total sum left to the soldiery would amount to £345,000 of our money. The gross amount of the estate bequeathed would work out thus:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To the army HS. 48,000,000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To the populus £40,000,000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To the plebs £3,500,000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>To residue £150,000,000</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>241,500,000</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

making a total of less than two millions of our money, not equal to a third of the amount bequeathed by Mr. Cecil Rhodes for public purposes. This was no great sum for one who had been sole ruler of the Roman empire for nearly half a century, and who, according to his own testimony, had himself received in legacies during twenty years no less than 1400 million sesterces, or something more than eleven millions sterling. |
of Gallus Asinius, that the procession should pass through the Triumphal Gate;¹ and that of Lucius Arruntius,² that the titles of the laws passed by the deceased, and the names of the nations which he had conquered, should be borne before the body. To these Messalla Valerius added that the oath of allegiance³ to Tiberius should be renewed every year; and when challenged by Tiberius to say whether that motion had been made at his instigation, he replied that no man had prompted him: nor would he follow any counsel but his own in public matters, even though he might give offence thereby. Such was the only form of flattery still left untired!

It was carried by acclamation that the body should be borne to the pyre by senators; an honour which Tiberius waived,⁴ in a tone of arrogant condescension. And to the people he issued a proclamation, praying them not to think of burning the body in the Forum,⁵ rather than at its appointed resting-place⁶ in the

¹ This gate was used only for triumphal processions. It was situated at some point in the low ground between the Capitol and the river, affording a natural access from the Campus Martius, in which the procession was marshalled into the city. There were two other gates for ordinary use in this short space, the P. Flumentana, or River Gate, and the P. Carmentalis.
² For Asinius Gallus and L. Arruntius, see nn. on chaps. 12, 2 and 13, 1.
³ See n. on chap. 7, 3.
⁴ Though this honour was thus graciously 'remitted' by Tiberius, it was conferred all the same. The body was carried from Nola to Bovillae by the senators (decuriones) of the various municipalities; from Bovillae it was borne by equites; and on the day of the funeral senatorum humerus delatus in Campanum crematusque (Suet., Aug. 100).
⁵ For the scene at the burning of Caesar's body, see Suet., Jul. 84.; Plutarch, Caes. 68; and above all, Shakespeare, Julius Caesar, Act iii. Scene 2. Augustus erected a temple to Caesar on the spot where the body was cremated, at the low end of the Forum. The platform of this temple, discovered in 1872, may still be seen near the Regia and the temple of Vesta. Close by the temple were the Rostra Julia, ornamented by Augustus with beaks of the ships taken at Actium; it was from that spot that Tiberius delivered the funeral oration on Augustus.
⁶ The well-known Mausoleum of Augustus, built B.C. 29, between the Via Flamina and the Tiber, at the spot where they come closest to each other. It was a huge circular structure, rising in three terraces, planted with cypresses. The first occupant of the mausoleum was M. Marcellus, son-in-law of Augustus, who died B.C. 23: vel quae Tiberine videbis = Funera, cum humilium praeteriabere recentem (Virg., Aen.

C
Campus Martius, nor to repeat the disturbances caused by excess of affection at the obsequies of the Immortal Julius.

On the funeral day, the troops were drawn up on guard, amid the derision of those who had themselves beheld or had heard their elders describe the day when Rome, unripe as yet for slavery, had struck that ill-fated blow for freedom—the day when some regarded the assassination of Caesar as a foul crime, others as a most glorious achievement: whereas now an aged emperor, after a long lease of power, and after providing his heirs with resources against the Commonwealth, had need of a guard of soldiers to keep order over his grave!

There followed much talk about Augustus. People idly marvelled that he had died upon the same day as that on which he had first entered on power; in the same house, in the very room, at Nola, in which his father Octavius had breathed his last. They dwelt upon the number of his consulships, equal to those of Valerius Corvus and Gaius Marius put together; they recounted how the Tribunitian Power had been continued to him for thirty-seven years; how the title of

vi. 874–5). Part of the original building is still to be seen; it was till recently used as a theatre. Close by, adjoining the Via Flaminia, was the aedicular, the walled and shaded enclosure in which the bodies were burned before burial.

1 Chapters 9 and 10 afford one of the most striking instances of Tacitus' power of condensation. There is, perhaps, nothing like it in all historical literature. In two short chapters he gives a masterly sketch, from two opposite points of view, of the career, character, and political motives of Augustus, omitting nothing of essential importance.

2 i.e. August 19th, the day on which Augustus was first declared consul by the senate in B.C. 43, along with Q. Petius. The regular consuls of that year, C. Vibius Pansa and A. Hirtius, had been killed before Mutina in the month of April.

3 Augustus held the consulship thirteen times in all: in the years B.C. 43 and 33; for nine years in succession from 31 to 23 inclusive; and again in B.C. 5 and 2. Valerius Corvus had been consul six times, and C. Marius seven times.

4 i.e. from June 27, B.C. 23 (when the tribunitian power in its extended form was formally conferred on Augustus on the final constitution of the principate), down to his death on August 19, A.D. 14, a period of 37 years and nearly two months.
A.D. 14.]  BOOK I. CHAPS. 8–9.

'Imperator' had been conferred upon him one-and-twenty times:¹ how other distinctions had been heaped on him, or invented in his honour.³

Reflecting men discussed his career in various tones of praise or blame. Some maintained:—

That he had been forced into civil war by regard for his father's memory, and by the exigencies of public affairs, which left no room for law: and civil war was a thing which none could bring about or carry on clean-handed. He had made many concessions to Antonius, many also to Lepidus, in order to secure vengeance on his father's murderers; ³ but when the latter became old and lethargic, and the former lost himself in debauch, no resource was left for the distracted country but the rule of one man. Yet even so, Augustus had not set up his government as King or Dictator,⁴ but under the name of 'Princeps.' ⁵ Under his

---

¹ See n. on chap. 3, 1. The custom is explained in iii. 74, 6. The first recorded instance of this title being bestowed was in the case of Scipio Africanus major, B.C. 209 (Liv. xxvii. 19, 4).

² Such as the title of Augus tus itself, bestowed B.C. 27. For various other honours, see Suet. Oct. 56, 57, 58. The title pater patriae was not new; it had been given to Cicero by the senate (Juv. viii. 244). It was formally conferred on Augustus by a decree of senate B.C. 2, though it had been in popular use long before.

³ As though Augustus had only acquiesced in the cruel and violent proceedings of his colleagues in the triumvirate in order to secure their cooperation in his one great object, the avenging of Caesar's murder. But in fact he only used this pretext as a stalking-horse for his own ambition. The wily youth never spoiled his game by showing his hand; or by making a move too soon. He put up with Lepidus until his ineffectual revolt in Sicily (see n. on chap. 1, 5); he long diplomatised with Antony, and allowed him to waste himself with Cleopatra in the East until he was ripe to be struck down at Actium, B.C. 31.

⁴ The essence of the policy of Augustus was to avoid the appearance of usurping autocratic power. The title of king was hateful to the Romans historically; it suggested to them also the idea of Oriental despotism, and the mere suspicion that he desired it cost Caesar his life. The dictatorship was essentially a temporary office, resorted to in emergencies (ad tempus sumebatur, chap. i. 1); a perpetual dictatorship, like that of Sulla, or a dictatorship for 10 years, such as had been conferred upon Caesar, involved a violation of constitutional principle, and the extinction of constitutional rights. The aim of Augustus was the impossible one of establishing a constitutional autocracy, with himself as constitutional autocrat. In his dexterous hands the contradiction succeeded for a time; but it broke down under his less wily successors, and the fiction of freedom involved Rome in degradations which might have been spared her under an autocracy openly avowed.

⁵ For the meaning of the term princeps, see above, n. on chap. 1, 3. In accordance with his subtle policy of concealing the appearance of power, Augustus assumed the modest title of princeps in a special sense, to imply that, though he was 'Chief of the State' (as Nap. III. styled himself), he was
rule, the frontiers had been pushed forward to the Ocean or to distant rivers;¹ the provinces, the armies, and the fleets of the Empire had been brought into communication with one another. Justice had been dispensed at home; consideration had been shewn to the allies; the city itself had been sumptuously adorned:² and, if some few acts of violence had been committed,³ it had been in order to secure the general tranquility.

On the other side it was said:—

The pleas of filial duty and political necessity were but pretexts. It was lust of power which had prompted Augustus to attract the veterans by bribes;⁴ to collect an army while he was still a stripling and without office, to tamper with the troops of the Consul, and to affect sympathy with the Pompeian party.⁵ After that, by virtue of a decree of the Senate, he had usurped the Praetorship,⁶ with its military and judicial powers; and when Hirtius and Pansa were

only primum inter pares. He says of himself, Mon. Anc. Gr. xviii. 7, ἰδοὺ γὰρ ἰδιὸς μοι ἡ πόλις ἡ παρατήρησις τῶν ἐν συνέκτησιν. No other title could have suited his purpose so well.

¹ The famous frontiers of the Rhine, the Danube, and the Euphrates. But this description is only true in a loose sense. There were considerable populations E. of the Rhine subject to Rome; and the frontier between the Rhine at Mayence and the Danube near Regensburg included much of SW. Germany. The description does not apply to the E. boundary of the empire, from the Euxine to the Euphrates; nor does it take any count of Egypt or Africa. See the careful statement of the imperial forces and their distribution given in iv. 5.

² By his various public works and buildings, his two new fora (the Forum Iulium, nearly completed by Caesar, and the Forum Augustum, ded. B.C. 2), and his reparation of ancient temples, Augustus had changed the whole face of the city. His boast was ‘that he had found Rome a city of brick, and left it a city of marble’ (Suet. Oct. 29), where (and in chap. 39) is given a list of his public works.

³ This refers to the conspiracies mentioned in the next chapter, § 3.

⁴ Augustus began by collecting an army, at his own expense, against Antony, in the summer of B.C. 44. He tempted out the veterans settled at Casilinum and Calatia in Campania by a bribe of 500 denarii apiece (Cic. Epp. Att. xvi. 8, 1). Later, he seduced from their allegiance two legions, Martia and Quinta, which Antony (then consul) was bringing over from Macedonia. For this he received the high-flown thanks of Cicero in the 3rd and 4th Philippics.

⁵ The wily youth entirely hoodwinked the orator, who in the Philippics pours forth all his eloquence in panegyrizing the young Caesar's devotion to the senate, and his loyalty to republican principles.

⁶ After gaining over the two legions of Antony, Augustus affected to embrace the cause of the senate; he induced them to confer upon him the office of praetor, and to send him to join the consuls Hirtius and Pansa in their attack upon Antony, who was then besieging Decimus Brutus in Mutina (Modena).
slain in battle—whether or no those generals were indeed so slain: or had died, the latter, of a poisoned wound, the former, at the hands of his own soldiers treacherously set on by Octavianus—he had assumed command of both armies; he had forced the Senate to make him Consul against its will, and having received an army to oppose Antonius, had turned it against his own country: the proscriptions, the confiscations, were measures which not even their perpetrators could approve. The deaths of Brutus and Cassius, indeed, might be deemed a tribute of vengeance to his father; though even so it were right for private hatred to give way before the public good. But he had tricked Sextus Pompeius by a pretence of peace, and Lepidus under the guise of friendship; later on, he had

1 Hirtius was defeated in a first attack upon Antony, and died of his wounds. Next, Pansa assaulted Antony’s camp with success, but was killed in the attack, April 27th. The death of the two consuls and the flight of Antony left Augustus master of the situation.

2 This suspicion is mentioned both by Suetonius (Oct. 11) and by Dio (xlvi. 39) as current at the time. Suetonius adds that the physician Glyco was arrested on the charge of poisoning Pansa’s wound. The fact of the arrest is confirmed by Brutus in a letter (Brutus ad Cic. i. 6, 2), but Brutus vehemently repudiates the charge, and begs Cicero to secure Glyco’s release. We shall see how often Tacitus records suspicions, while taking care not to commit himself to his truth.

3 After Mutina, Augustus declined to follow up Antony, and began soon to parley with him. Backed by 8 legions, he marched on Rome, and forcibly demanded the consulship; in vain Cicero, now disabused, attempted to organise resistance. The opposition went over to Augustus, or slunk away; a rump of the senate submitted; all constitutional usages were set aside; the farce of a popular election by the comitia was carried through, and Augustus was installed as consul, with his cousin Q. Pedius as colleague, on the 2nd of Sept., one day before attaining the age of 20. By the end of October the second triumvirate was formed.

4 The first act of the new triumvirate was to arrange, with hideous mutual bargaining, for the massacre of their respective enemies. 300 senators, 2000 knights, are said to have been included in the official list; a preliminary batch of 18 contained the great name of Cicero, who was barbarously murdered near Forniae on the 7th Dec. The soldiers were let loose on the city; the grim list was swelled day by day, from motives of private cupidity or vengeance. Plutarch gives most of the blame to Antony, but Suetonius says of Augustus restituit liquidam aiquamdiu collegit, ne qua fieret proscriptio; sed inceptium utroque acerbior exercuit (Oct. 27).

5 Eighteen of the choicest cities of Italy, with their lands, were assigned to the soldiers by the triumvirate in B.C. 43; no less extensive were the confiscations which took place after the campaign of Philippi, in B.C. 42, when Virgil (Ecl. i and 2), Propertius (iv. 1, 130), and Horace (Epp. ii. 2, 50) were deprived of their ancestral properties.

6 Sextus Pompeius, having command of the sea with his fleet in B.C. 39, and threatening Rome with stoppage of her corn-supplies, had to be brought to terms. The treaty of Misenum surrendered to him Sicily, Sardinia, Corsica, and perhaps Achaia also, and admitted him to virtual partnership with the triumvirs.
entrapped Antonius by the treaties of Tarentum and Brundisium, and by giving him his own sister in marriage—a treacherous alliance which Antonius had paid for with his blood. Peace, no doubt, had followed, but it was a peace stained with blood: there had been the disasters of Lollius and of Varus abroad; at home, the executions of a Varro, an Egnatius, and a Iulus.

Nor was his private life spared:—

He had torn Livia, when pregnant, from her husband, going through the farce of consulting the augurs whether she could rightfully marry without waiting for the child to be born; he had permitted the extravagance of a Quintus Tedius and a Vedius Pollio. And lastly, there was Livia:

1 The treaty of Brundisium was negotiated in B.C. 40, to ward off a threatened combination of Antony and Sextus Pompey against Augustus, who, having put down the Perugian revolt, led by Lucius Antony, brother of the triumvir, was now master of Italy. A reconciliation was patched up by the marriage of Octavia, sister of Augustus, to Antony. Again, by the treaty of Tarentum, in B.C. 37, Antony lent Augustus 130 ships to be used against Sextus, while Antony received 20,000 legionaries for his contemplated Parthian expedition. The triumvirate was at the same time renewed for 5 years.

2 M. Lollius, cos. B.C. 21 (Hor. Epp. i. 20, 28), was governor of Gaul in B.C. 38, when three German tribes, the Usipetes, the Tencteri, and the Sygambri, crossed the Rhine, and infested him a severe defeat—soon, however, repaired. Augustus thought it necessary to go to Gaul in person; but Suetonius speaks lightly of the disaster, as maioris infamiae quam detrimenti (Oct. 23). Much more terrible was the disaster to P. Varus, in A.D. 9, who perished with the whole of his three legions. That disaster caused a panic in Rome. Augustus never entirely got over it; for months afterwards he let his hair grow, and he would cry passionately at intervals, ‘O Quintilius Varus, give me back my legions!’ (ib). See n. on chap. 3, 6.

3 Tacitus uses plurals of exaggeration.

4 L. Licinius Murena, the augur (Hor. Od. iii. 19, 10), called after his adoption Terentius Varro Murena, and brother of Terentia, wife of Maelenas, was put to death, along with Fannius Caepio, for a conspiracy against Augustus in B.C. 22, the details of which are involved in mystery (Dio, liv. 3). M. Egnatius Rufus, aedile in B.C. 20, and praetor in B.C. 19, was put to death for conspiracy B.C. 18 (Vell. Pat. ii. 91, 3). Iulus Antonius, son of the triumvir, after enjoying the high favour of Augustus, was put to death B.C. 2 for adultery with Julia.

4 Livia Drusilla, a woman of extraordinary fascination and cleverness, was daughter of Livius Drusus Claudianus. She was first married to T. Claudius Nero, to whom she bore the future Emperor Tiberius. Augustus forced her husband to divorce her, B.C. 38, three months before she gave birth to her second son Drusus. She never bore any children to Augustus. For Tacitus’ studied account of her career and character, see v. i. 1–5.

5 Tedius is unknown. Vedius Pollio was a knight of low birth, a by-word for his wealth and savagery (μόρις, Dio): famous for feeding his lampreys on live slaves (Plin. H. N. ix. 23, 77). He ordered a slave-boy to be thrown into his piscina to be devoured, for breaking a crystal vase; Augustus, who was present, forbade him, and had the rest of his crystals broken and thrown in instead (Sen. de Ira, iii. 40).
a very scourge to the Commonwealth as a mother, no less a scourge to the house of the Caesars as a step-mother.

What honours were left for the Gods, when Augustus ordained temples and images to be set up to himself as to a Deity, with Flamens and Priests to worship him? Even in adopting Tiberius as his successor, he had not been moved by affection, or by care for the public good; but having sounded the depths of that proud and cruel nature, he had sought to win glory for himself by contrast with an execrable successor.

For not many years before, when Augustus was asking the Senate to confer anew the Tribunitian Power on Tiberius, though he spoke of him in terms of compliment, he had let fall some observations that Augustus allowed no temples to himself to be set up in Italy; and in the provinces only in conjunction with the worship of Rome, such as was commonly set up to proconsuls. In the noble speech attributed to Tiberius by Tacitus (iv. 37), Tiberius speaks as if only one such dedication had been permitted before that time, at Pergamum. The humurous insouciance with which Augustus himself regarded such honours is illustrated by an anecdote told by Quintilian (vi. 3. 77). The people of Tarracon, in Spain, reported to him that a palm-tree had sprung up out of an altar dedicated there to him; 'Which shews,' he remarked, 'how frequently the fire on the altar is kindled.'

This atrocious innuendo is mentioned slightly by Dio (iv. 45), but is emphatically contradicted by Suetonius (Tib. 21), who records a solemn oath made in public by Augustus that he adopted Tiberius 'rei publicae causa.' He quotes extracts of letters from him to Tiberius couched in the most affectionate language; and he especially discredits a popular rumour to the effect that Augustus had been overheard exclaiming, Miserrimum populum Romanum qui sub tam lentis maxillis erit! At an earlier period there was undoubted estrangement between the two; the harsh and intense nature of Tiberius can never have been congenial to the subtle, polished, and easy-tempered opportunist. The view of Tacitus elsewhere (iv. 57. 5) is that the adoption of Tiberius was entirely the work of Livia.

1 Tacitus can never forgive Livia for being the mother of Tiberius. He here practically assumes as true the suspicion for which he declines to vouch in chap. 1, 3, that she had brought about the death of Gaius Caesar.

2 It is not clear whether the reference here is to the worship of Augustus and the senate, organised throughout the provinces (see n. on i. 57, 2); or to the special worship of Augustus himself in Italy, which is an undoubted fact, in spite of the silence of the historians in regard to it. See the Immolatio Caesaris hostia, noted among other things in the Calendar of Cumae quoted by Rushforth, p. 51, l. 3. Tacitus himself gives us no idea of the extent and importance of the worship of the Emperors; he seems to look upon it as a natural tribute to the majesty of Rome. See n. to iv. 37, 4 and 5. Dio (lii. 20. 7) and Suetonius (Aug. 52) both state that Augustus allowed no temples to himself to be set up in Italy; and in the provinces only in conjunction with the worship of Rome, such as was commonly set up to proconsuls. In the noble speech attributed to Tiberius by Tacitus (iv. 37), Tiberius speaks as if only one such dedication had been permitted before that time, at Pergamum. The humorous insouciance with which Augustus himself regarded such honours is illustrated by an anecdote told by Quintilian (vi. 3. 77). The people of Tarracon, in Spain, reported to him that a palm-tree had sprung up out of an altar dedicated there to him; 'Which shews,' he remarked, 'how frequently the fire on the altar is kindled.'

3 Probably in A.D. 4, when the trib. pot. for 5 years was conferred upon Tiberius for a second time, shortly after his return from Rhodes. At that time some sort of public introduction may have been thought necessary, on his return to favour (Suet. Tib. 6). It may less probably have been in A.D. 9, when a further extension of the trib. pot. was conferred upon him.
about his bearing, his manners and style of living, which under guise of an apology bore all the character of a reproach.

The obsequies were carried out in due form; and a temple, with religious worship, was voted in his honour.

The Senate then turned to Tiberius with entreaties. He replied in various strains. He spoke of the vastness of the Empire; of his want of confidence in himself: no mind but that of the Divine Augustus could cope with so huge a task. Having been himself invited to share that monarch’s cares, he had learned by experience how grievous, how precarious, the burden of universal rule. A State which had so many distinguished men on whom to lean, should not place all power in one man’s hands; the business of government would be easier were it divided among several partners.

Grand words these; but there was little sincerity in them. For whether by nature or by habit, Tiberius was at all times ambiguous and obscure in his utterances, even when he had nothing to conceal; and on the present occasion, when he was doing his utmost

1 This temple, built in course of time by Tiberius and Livia, and dedicated to Augustus, is the huge building of which the brick walls still survive at the corner of the Palatine nearest to the Capitol. See n. on vi. 45. 3.
2 The modestia of Tiberius—his diffidence or want of self-assertion—is mentioned by Tacitus (iii. 56. 4) as a quality on which Augustus thought he could safely rely, in conjunction with his own magnitudo, in admitting him to share the irid. pot.
3 This comment is hardly justified; see n. on chap. 7. 9. The situation for the successor of Augustus was a very delicate one. There was no acknowledged law of succession. Augustus himself had acted, for years, on the fiction that he was only a citizen; and he had ostensibly waited to assume power till almost entreated to do so. The attitude of the legions was quite unknown; and the whole theory of the principate was that its powers were spontaneously conferred by the senate, as expressing the will of the Roman people. The minus impudentissimus of professing to decline power, while performing all the acts of sovereignty, was carried on by Tiberius for a few hours or days at most; it was played by Augustus for years. It was the fiction of freedom, with the absence of any recognised law of succession in the imperial family, which deluged Rome with her own best blood, and finally extirpated the family of the Caesars.
to hide his meaning, his language was more involved and unintelligible than ever.¹

Meantime the Senators, whose only terror was that they should appear to understand what he meant, broke out into tears, prayers, and protestations; they held out their hands in supplication to the Gods, to the statues of Augustus, and to the knees of Tiberius himself. Upon that he ordered a document² to be brought in and read, containing a statement of the public resources; an enumeration of the troops under arms, whether Roman or allied, and of the naval forces; of the Provinces and Protected States, of the direct and indirect taxes, of the public burdens and state largesses.³ All this Augustus had written out with his own hand; appending to it a recommendation—whether prompted by timidity or jealousy—that the empire should be kept within its present limits.⁴

While the Senate was thus grovelling in abject entreaties,⁶ Tiberius let fall the remark that although

¹ Dio tells us of Tiberius (Ivii. 1) that what he said was usually the opposite of what he thought; he would refuse what he wished for most, and propose what he most disliked; he would show most anger when least offended, and vice verò. But it was not safe to presume on this; for what he hated most of all was to have his real sentiments divined. It was therefore almost a greater offence to see through his mask, and endeavour to promote what he really desired, than to oppose it openly. As to his slow and hesitating utterance, Tacitus describes him as velut eluctantium verborum (iv. 31, 4).

² Suetonius says that Augustus left three documents along with his will (Oct. 101). One contained instructions for his funeral; a second, a record of his achievements, to be inscribed on brazen tablets in front of his mausoleum. The greater part of this has been preserved, both in Greek and Latin, in the famous duplicate inscription found on the temple to Rome and Augustus at Ancyra, known as the Monumentum Ancyranum. The original is quoted by Suetonius as an authority (Aug. 10), and mentioned by Dio (Ivi. 33). The third was the breviarium or Blue-book of the Empire here mentioned: one of a more complete kind than the ordinary financial statements which Augustus used to put out at certain intervals (rationes imperii ab Augusto proponi solitas, Suet. Cal. 16).

³ These were voluntary and extraordinary distributions of corn or oil, such as are mentioned in the Mon. Anc., as distinguished from the regular frumentationes (see n. on chap. 2, 1).

⁴ 'The conquest of Britain by Claudius in A.D. 67 was the first important departure from this policy, which was dictated largely by financial considerations' (Rushforth, p. 112).

⁶ The account here given of this famous scene corresponds closely with that given by Suetonius (Tib. 24). He
unequal to the burden of Government as a whole, he would undertake the charge of any part that might be committed to him.¹ Thereupon Asinius Gallus² broke in:—Then let us know, Caesar, which part of the Government you wish to have committed to you? Taken aback by so unforeseen a question, Tiberius hesitated for a moment; then recovering himself, replied that it would ill become him, diffident as he was, either to select or to decline any portion of a responsibility of which he desired to be relieved altogether. Perceiving, from his face, that Tiberius had taken offence, Gallus rejoined:—He had not put the question with a view to dividing what was indivisible, but to convince the Emperor, out of his own mouth, that the State had but one body, and must be governed by a single mind. He went on to laud Augustus, and reminded Tiberius of his own military successes, as well as of the
division of power into (1) Rome and Italy; (2) the army; (3) the rest of the subjects.—whatever that may mean. A most improbable story, and entirely inconsistent with the attitude assumed by Tiberius, which was throughout one of evasion and non-committal.

¹ We shall hear much of Asinius Gallus. He was the son of the famous C. Asinius Pollio, the orator, poet, historian, warrior and statesman; the patron of Virgil, and founder of the famous Palatine Library. See Virg. Ecl. 4, and Hor. Od. ii. 1. The full name of the son was L. Asinus Gallus Saladinus. He was cos. b.c. 8, and married Vipsania after her divorce by Tiberius. Tacitus exhibits him as generally anxious to put himself forward in the senate, and as proposing, under a show of freedom, various motions likely to be grateful to Tiberius. See i. 8, 4: 76, 2; ii. 34, 4: 33, 3; 35, 1; iv. 26, 2: 30, 2: 71, 3; etc. He was denounced in A.D. 30, when actually on a visit to Tiberius at Capri; was kept for three years in custody, and permitted at last to die in prison—possibly of starvation (vi. 23, 1).
admirable work that he had done in civil offices for so many years. But this did not appease the Emperor's anger. He had long hated Asinius; for Asinius had married his own divorced wife Vipsania, the daughter of Agrippa, and he credited him with ambitions above those of a private citizen: deeming him to retain something of the high spirit of his father Asinius Pollio.

13. 1 Next, Lucius Arruntius gave equal offence by a speech of a similar kind. Tiberius had no old grudge against Arruntius; but as he was wealthy, energetic, and accomplished, and stood correspondingly high in public estimation, Tiberius regarded him with suspicion. For when Augustus, in his last days, was discussing what men were fit to fill the highest place, but would decline it; or being unequal to the position, might aspire to it; or possessed alike the ambition and the ability: he had described Manius Lepidus

1 No more cruel wrong could have been inflicted on a proud, sensitive nature like that of Tiberius, than to force him to divorce the wife to whom he was tenderly attached, and marry the profligate Julia. Suetonius tells how once, and once only, Tiberius caused the right of Vipsania after the divorce; he was so deeply affected that care was taken to prevent a repetition of the occurrence. This incident throws a flood of light upon the character of Tiberius, and suggests that he may have been incurably embittered by the treatment he received at the hands of Augustus and his court.

2 The father of this Arruntius commanded a wing of the fleet at the battle of Actium; he himself was cos. A.D. 6. He is frequently mentioned, always with respect, in Ann. i.—vi. On some occasion unknown to us, his accusers met with punishment (vi. 7, 1); in reference to which Tacitus speaks of him in terms of the highest praise (santtissimis Arruntii artibus). At last, in A.D. 37—the last year of the reign of Tiberius—he was falsely accused of adultery with Albulcilla. In a speech conceived in the highest spirit of Stoic fortitude—Tacitus says he pronounced it like one inspired—he announced his determination to live through no more such humiliations, and calmly put an end to himself by opening his veins (vi. 48).

3 The MS. here reads M', i.e. Manius, which seems to be the proper reading, and is given in full iii. 22, 2; elsewhere the name appears as M., i.e. Marcus, who was a different person. The distinguished man here named was cos. A.D. 11; was one of two consuls selected for the command in Africa A.D. 21, iii. 35, 3; became proconsul of Asia A.D. 26; and is specially commended for his wisdom and moderation, iv. 30, 4 and vi. 27, 4. In this last passage his death is recorded, A.D. 33. Marcus Lepidus was not so distinguished. He was the son of Cornelia, the famous subject of the beautiful poem of Propertius (El. iv. 11); he was cos. A.D. 6, along with L. Arruntius; and was sent out as proconsul to Asia A.D. 21. He is described by a personal enemy on that occasion as a poor and poor-spirited person, though the senate took a more favourable view of his character (iii. 32, 2).
as capable but indifferent; Gallus Asinius, as having the ambition, but not the capacity: but Lucius Arruntius was not unworthy, and if the chance were offered him, he would embrace it. As to the two former of these names, all authorities are agreed; but some put the name of Gnaeus Piso in place of that of Arruntius: and all of them, except Lepidus, were cut off before long on charges trumped up against them by Tiberius.

Quintus Haterius also, and Mamercus Scaurus, both pricked that jealous temper to the quick: Haterius, by asking the question, How long, Caesar, will you suffer the Commonwealth to be without a head? and Scaurus, by remarking that he entertained some hope that the Senate's prayers would not be in vain, from the fact that Tiberius had not put his tribunitian veto on the motion of the Consuls. On Haterius the Emperor retorted at once; but to Scaurus, against whom his resentment was of a more deadly kind, he made no reply.

---

1 This is the famous Cn. Calpurnius Piso who was given the command of Syria by Tiberius, A.D. 17, to be a thorn in the flesh to Germanicus during his mission to the East (ii. 43, 3-5); and who was subsequently brought to trial for compassing the death of that prince, and carrying war into his own province (ii. 76-81 and iii. 8-17). He is described by Tacitus as ingens violentum et obscuri ignarum, like his father Gnaeus, whose career is sketched in the same passage (ii. 43, 3). He was cos. along with Tiberius B.C. 7. Tacitus records a bold and embarrassing question put by him to Tiberius in the senate (i. 74, 6).

2 Q. Haterius was a consular, a fluent and facile orator (iv. 67, 2), and given to making servile motions (iii. 57, 3). Mamercus Scaurus is described as 'a disgrace to his ancestors' (iii. 66, 3), and as insignis nobilitate et orandi causis, vita probravor (vi. 29, 4). Tacitus, however, admits that his death, self-inflicted in face of threatened prosecution, was dignum veteribus Aemilii.

3 The words caput reipublicae were an open assertion of the monarchical character of the government, and therefore distasteful to Tiberius.

4 This remark of Scaurus shows how the emperor could at once stop any action in the senate by virtue of his tribunitian veto.

5 The motion here referred to was doubtless a decree of senate prescribing the terms of the famous law styled Lex de Imperio, by which the various imperatorial powers were conferred upon a new emperor upon his accession to power. In theory, the whole of his authority depended upon the passing of this law by the comitia, in terms approved of by a decree of senate: cum ipse Imperator per legem imperium accipiat (Gaius, i. 5). The only extant example of such a law is the considerable fragment of that passed on the accession of Vespasian, A.D. 70. See the interesting account of this fragment given by Rushforth. 'Latin Historical Inscriptions,' pp. 82-87.
Worn out at last by the clamour of the whole Senate, and the remonstrances of individuals, Tiberius gradually gave way; not indeed so far as to agree to undertake the government, but at least to bring solicitations and refusals to an end. Haterius, we are informed, went afterwards to the Palace to implore forgiveness. He found the Emperor walking, and threw himself down on his knees before him; whether by accident, or because entangled in the other’s arms, Tiberius fell: and Haterius narrowly escaped being put to death by the soldiers. Yet even the danger of so distinguished a man did nothing to mollify Tiberius: Haterius had to implore the protection of Augusta, and owed his safety to her urgent intercession.

14. 1 The Senate showered many flatteries on Augusta also. Some proposed that she should be styled ‘The Parent,’ others ‘The Mother,’ of her country;’ many more, that after the name ‘Caesar,’ the words ‘son of Julia’ should be added. Tiberius protested that there must be some limit to the honours bestowed on women; and that he would exercise a like moderation in regard to honours to himself. But in reality he was wrung by jealousy, regarding the exaltation of a woman as a belittling of his own dignity. He

---

1 This story (without the name) is confirmed by Suetonius (Tib. 27), but he gives a better colour to it. His account is that Tiberius fell when endeavouring to escape from what he thought the unworthy abasement of a senator in prostrating himself before him.

2 The inscription Augusta Mater Patris actually occurs on the reverse of a bronze coin of Leptis, along with a seated figure of Julia (i.e. Livia). On the obverse is a head of Augustus; on another is genetrix orbis. See Cohen, Monnaie de l’Emp. Rom., and ed., pp. 165, 807.

3 The title Divus, with a formal consecratio, was almost invariably bestowed on the emperors after their death; sometimes also on their wives, children and parents. The title Divi Aug. f. (i.e. filius) appears regularly on the inscriptions of Tiberius. To add the mother’s name, as here proposed, would have been contrary to all Roman custom. It is to be noted that after her adoption by the will of Augustus (chap. 8, 2), Livia appears on coins, etc., as Julia Augusta (Cohen, p. 169).

4 Tiberius had good reason to fear undue pretensions on the part of his mother; see n. on chap. 8, 2. In spite of all his efforts, Suetonius describes
refused therefore to permit even a lictor to be voted to her; he forbade the erection of an altar of adoption, and other honours of a similar kind.

Yet he requested that the Proconsular Imperium should be conferred on Germanicus; and an embassy was despatched for that purpose, as well as to offer condolences upon the death of Augustus. No such demand was made for Drusus; the reason being that he was Consul Designate, and on the spot. For the office of Praetor, Tiberius nominated twelve candidates, the number usually nominated by Augustus.

her as partes sibi aquas potentiae vindicat (Tib. 50); and Dio says that in everything except actually appearing in the senate or in the comitia or before the army, she claimed for herself autocratic powers. Temples were dedicated to her in conjunction with Tiberius and the senate (iv. 15, 4; 57, 1); she could rescue her favourites from the courts of law (ii. 34, 3; iii. 55, 1 and 3). No wonder that the relations between son and mother were strained (iii. 64, 1): he could never shake her off (iv. 57, 4), nor endure her eternal reproaches that he owed his elevation to her influence (iv. 57, 5); and to the last she was the only person who dared stand in the way of Sejanus (v. 3, 1). Vestal virgins, alone among women, were preceded by a lictor when they went abroad.

Furn. points out that altars were often erected as monuments of various events without implying worship, as of the lying-in of Agrippina (Suet. Cal. 8); or of such abstractions as ultio, clementia, amicitia, and the like.

From the time of Sulla onwards, military commands were confined to proconsuls and pro-praetors; hence the term proconsular. The imperium proconsularis was conferred upon Augustus, as we have seen, for ten years, when he was given charge of certain provinces; it soon became perpetual, and was exercised even within Rome. To invest a prince with proconsular imperium for a part, or the whole, of the Empire, was to take a long step towards pronouncing him successor. On this occasion, the imperium was conferred on Germanicus for Germany and the Western Provinces, in continuation of that already bestowed on him by Augustus in A.D. 11; just as in A.D. 17 he was invested with an imperium maius, i.e. an imperium superior to that of all ordinary provincial governors, over all the provinces of the East (ii. 43, 1). Under the Republic, the praetors, consuls, and all higher magistrates, were elected by the people, assembled in their comitia; under the early empire, the form of popular election was still retained, but passed into a mere form, since the emperor, under one power or another, could control all elections. One of these powers was (1) Nominatio, by which the Emperor (as formerly the magistrate presiding at the election) could decide whether a particular candidate was eligible for the post he was seeking. Naturally, all candidates desired to have this certificate of qualification; though the people, theoretically, could vote for others also. Another was (a) Commendatio, by which the emperor (as any prominent citizen might do under the Republic) recommended a particular candidate to the suffrages of the people. As late as B.C. 8 Augustus would actually canvass for his own nominees; this probably is what is referred to in chap. 15, i. Candidates thus 'commended' were called Candidati Caesaris. Now under Caesar the number of praetors had been raised to 10, 14, and eventually to 16; under Augustus it varied from 8 to 16; at the beginning of the reign of Tiberius it was 12, rising afterwards again to 16. Thus by nominating only 12 candidates for 12 vacancies, Tiberius practically left no choice to the electors; not content with this, he 'commended' specially four out of the
The Senate urged him to name more; but he bound himself by an oath not to exceed that number.

And now for the first time the elections were transferred from the Comitia to the Senate; for up to that time, though the principal appointments were made at the Emperor's good pleasure, some few were still voted by the tribes. The people offered no objection to the loss of their rights beyond an idle murmur; while the Senate were well pleased to be relieved from the bribery and the degrading solicitations of the old system. Tiberius limited himself to the recommendation of four candidates, to be designated without canvassing or risk of rejection.

About the same time the Tribunes of the Plebs petitioned to be allowed to celebrate games at their own expense to be called after Augustus, and to be inserted in the Calendar under the title of 'The Augustan games.' The petition was granted; but the money required for the purpose was voted from the Treasury. The Tribunes were to wear triumphal robes in the Circus, but not to ride in chariots. Before long, however, the annual celebration of these games was handed over to one of the Praetors—that one to whose lot it fell to administer justice between citizens and strangers.
Mutiny of the Pannonian Army,

Such was the state of affairs in Rome, when a mutiny broke out among the troops in Pannonia. There was no special cause for this mutiny, beyond the fact that the accession of a new emperor afforded occasion for license, and held out the hope of civil war with all its attendant gains. There were three legions encamped together in summer quarters under the command of Junius Blaesus; who, on hearing of the death of Augustus and the beginning of the new reign, had suspended the ordinary labours of the camp, as a mark of mourning or of joy. From this beginning, a spirit of insubordination and disorder took its rise; the men lent ready ears to the talk of the worst among their number; till at length a longing for ease and idleness set in, with impatience of work and discipline.

Now there was in the camp a man called Percennius, who had once been a fugle-man in theatrical factions, and had afterwards enlisted as a private soldier. Forward of tongue, and well versed in the feuds of the theatre, this man was an accomplished seditionmonger. Discouraging to the soldiers by night, or as

---

1 Pannonia was one of the most important frontier provinces; it extended eastwards along the Danube from Vienna (ancient Vindobona). It was bounded by the province of Noricum to the W., by the Danube to the N., and E., and by the Save to the S. Like other frontier provinces, it was imperatorial, i.e. governed directly by the emperor, through a legatus pro praetore appointed by himself. The more peaceful senatorial provinces were governed by senators of consular or praetorian rank, appointed, as of old, by lot, and all equally called proconsuls. See Furn., Introd. p. 94 foll., and n. on chap. 76, 4.

2 These three legions were the 8th, 9th, and 15th, known respectively by the names of Augusta, Hispana, and Apollinaris. See chap. 23, 6.

3 Uncle of the notorious Sejanus, through whose influence he became afterwards proconsul of Africa in A.D. 31 (iii. 35, 3), and whose fall brought about his death (v. 7, 2).

4 What these opera were is not clear. They may have been (1) actors; or (2) workmen employed about the theatre; or more probably (3) professional supporters and applauders, acting under a leader. Nero had 5000 of such 'claqueurs,' some imported from Alexandria, some raised from the lusty plebeian youth. The dux of such a body might earn a salary of 400,000 sesterces; see Suet. Nero, 20; Oct. 45; and Juv. vii. 43-4.
night fell, he worked gradually upon their ignorant minds, wondering as they were what might be the conditions of the service after Augustus; and as the more respectable men slipped away, all the riff-raff of the camp gathered round him.

17. 1 At last, having secured a following ready to join in an outbreak, he addressed them in demagogue fashion:

Why did they obey a handful of centurions, and a number of Tribunes smaller still, like so many slaves?  
When would they have the spirit to demand a redress of grievances, if they dared not approach a new Emperor, not yet firm in his seat, with petitions at any rate, if not with arms? They had shewn weakness enough all these years, serving on for thirty or forty seasons, till they had become old men, their bodies perhaps all hacked with wounds. Even discharge brought with it no end to service; still kept together, under a special standard, they had the same round of toil to endure under a new name.

If any lived through all this, they would be draggea off to some remote region, where under the name of a farm, they would receive a dismal swamp, or an uncultivated

1 There were 6 tribuni militum and 60 centurions (commanders of centuriae) to each legion. Two centuries made a maniple, three maniples a cohort; ten cohorts made up the legion. The century, at this time, probably numbered about 80 men; and the whole strength of the legion, including cavalry, artillery, etc., would be something over 5000. We may therefore consider a military tribune, one of the six commanding officers of the legion, as corresponding more or less to a colonel. Each legion, since the time of Caesar, was under the command of a legatus, called legatus legionis; to be distinguished from the legatus Augusti pro praetore, the title given to the commander of an imperatorial province. See n. above on chap. 16. 1.

2 Such were extreme cases. Augustus, in the year B.C. 13, fixed the period of service for legionaries at 16 years, and for the praetorians at 12. In A.D. 5 the periods were extended to 20 and 16 years respectively, with bounties at the close, of 12,000 and 20,000 sesterces. At some time, however, the vexatious plan had been introduced of retaining veterans, after their full period of service, under a separate vexillum or standard of their own, for fighting purposes, and with lighter conditions of service. These men were called vexillarii. See below, chap. 36, 4 and 38, 1. Under this arrangement, or in other ways, the rules laid down by Augustus had apparently not been fairly carried out; hence the mutiny. The soldiers were not so ready to be put off with evasions and legal fictions as were the senate and populace of the city.
hillside. The soldier’s life, at the best, was hard and unprofitable; body and soul were valued at ten asses a day: and out of that he had to find himself in clothes, arms, and tents, and get the wherewithal to buy off the brutality of centurions, and purchase exemptions from duty. Stripes and scars: winters of privation, summers of ceaseless toil: bloody wars, or futile peace—these things were always with them. There was but one remedy. Let them demand fixed conditions of service, with pay at the rate of sixteen asses a day, and discharge at the end of the sixteenth year: after that, no further retention under the standards, but a gratuity paid money down, in the camp where they had been discharged. The Praetorians received two denarii a-day, and were sent back to their homes after sixteen years; were the perils of the Praetorians greater than their own? He would not disparage the Guards of the City; nevertheless their own lot was cast amongst savage nations, with an enemy ever in sight of their tents.

The multitude murmured assent, each man stung by his own grievance. One pointed angrily to the marks of stripes, another to grey hairs; the greater denarius, or 16 asses instead of 10. The praetorians received double the pay of the legionaries (Dio, liii. xi. 5); when, therefore, it is stated below that the praetorians received 2 denarii a day, the speaker must either mean the denarius of 10 asses, or use a rhetorical exaggeration. Suetonius says the men demanded equal pay with the praetorians (Tib. 25).

1 Such plots of land had apparently been substituted for the money gratuities.  
2 Polybius (vi. 99, 12) reckons the pay of the legionaries at 2 obols a-day, which sum was usually estimated as = one-third of a denarius. But 31 asses per day is an impossible sum; and Polybius must be held to refer to the time when the copper coinage had so depreciated (as it did in the and Punic war) that the silver denarius was equal to 16 copper asses. If so, he probably meant to indicate 5 asses = 2 sesterces—a very probable sum. Caesar doubled the legionary’s pay (Suet. Jul. 26), thus raising it to 10 asses, or 4 sesterces; and if Pliny be correct in saying that in reckoning soldiers’ pay, the denarius was still held as equivalent to only 10 asses (Nat. Hist., xxxiii. 3. 44), the demand of the mutineers must have been to receive the full value of the silver
number to the tattered garments which scarce covered their limbs. Their fury went so far at last that they proposed to mix up the three legions into one; but as every man jealously insisted that his own legion should have the place of honour, they gave up this idea and adopted another in its place. Putting together the three eagles, and the standards of the cohorts,\(^1\) they built up with turf a kind of platform to mark the spot. They were hurrying on the work when Blaesus came up. He remonstrated with them, and tried to hold the men back, one by one:—Better imbrue your hands in my blood, he cried. It were lesser shame to slay the Legate than to be traitors to your Imperator; if I cannot maintain your allegiance and live, my murder shall hasten on your repentance.

Blaesus intervenes

19. 1 But still the work went on; and the sods had been raised breast-high before his urgency compelled them to desist. With much adroitness he told them that mutiny and riot were not the proper methods for bringing their grievances to Caesar's ears; never in old days had soldiers pressed such novel demands upon their commanders, nor they themselves upon the Divine Augustus: the beginning of a new reign was an ill time to choose for adding to a Prince's cares. If they were bent upon demanding, in time of peace, what they had never dared to ask even when victors in the Civil Wars, why break through all habits of obedience, and the sacred character of discipline itself, by a resort to violence? It were better to appoint delegates, and instruct them in his presence.

2 To these words they shouted assent, and asked that the son of Blaesus, who was a Tribune, should act as envoy, and demand discharge at the end of sixteen years' service:—Further instructions would be

\(^1\) It thus appears that each of the cohorts, as well as the legion as a whole, had a distinguishing standard of its own.
added when they had gained their first demand. The 5
departure of the young man restored some kind of
order; but the troops exulted that they had got the
son of their General to plead their cause—clear proof
that compulsion had extorted what they never could
have gained by orderly behaviour.

Meanwhile some maniples which had been sent to 20. 1
Nauportus¹ before the outbreak of the mutiny, to work
on roads and bridges and other such things, got word
of the disturbance in camp. They at once plucked up
their standards, plundered the neighbouring villages,
as well as Nauportus itself, which was on the scale of
a municipal town, and when the centurions tried to
hold them back, assailed them with jeers and insults,
and at last with blows. The special object of their
fury was Aufidienus Rufus, Commandant of the camp.²
They dragged him from his carriage, loaded him with
baggage, and drove him on at the head of the line,
asking him in derision, How he liked such heavy loads,
and such long marches? For Rufus had long served 2
in the ranks; having risen to be a centurion, and
afterwards Commandant of the camp, he had revived
the stern discipline of earlier days: inured to severe
toil himself, he was the more rigid in exacting it.³

The arrival of this detachment in camp caused the 21. 1
trouble to break out afresh. Marauding parties
spread themselves over the surrounding country. To 2
strike terror into the remainder, Blaesus singled out
a few who were more heavily laden with plunder

¹ Identified with Ober-Laybach in
Carniola, close to the frontier of Italy.
² An office apparently instituted by
Augustus, not connected with any one
legion. It was a post to which cen-
turions might aspire. It would appear
that under the exceptional arrangement
made by Augustus for Egypt, the com-
mand of the legion there was held by a

Prefectus castrorum. See n. on ii. 59,
4; and Rushforth, p. 192.
³ This famous epigram (in immisi-
guia toleraverat) may have suggested
the similar phrase applied in 'Waverley'
to Spontoon, the elderly military-look-
ing servant of Col. Talbot: 'accustomed
to submit to discipline himself, he was
rigid in enforcing it.'
than the rest, and ordered them to be flogged and put in prison; for the centurions and the best of the men were still ready to obey the Legate. Struggling with their captors, clutching at the knees of the by-standers, these men called on their comrades by name, or on the century, cohort, or legion to which they severally belonged, crying out that the same treatment was in store for all. With that they heaped insults on Blaesus; they called Heaven and the Gods to witness, leaving nothing untried to stir up feelings of hate and pity, of terror and indignation. A general rush was made; the prison doors were burst open, chains were knocked off, and legionaries, deserters, and condemned criminals were all mixed up together.

22. The movement now assumed a more violent form, with several leaders to direct it. A common soldier of the name of Vibulenus was hoisted up on the shoulders of the by-standers in front of the General’s tribunal, and thus addressed the rioters, who hung eagerly on his lips:—

You have indeed, he cried, brought back to light and liberty these unhappy innocents; but who will bring my brother back to life, or restore to me my brother? Despatched to you on a mission from the German army upon our common interests, he was murdered last night by gladiators;—gladiators kept in arms by your General for your destruction. Say, Blaesus, where have you cast away the body? Not even enemies grudge burial to a foe. Bid me too be slain, when my grief has sated itself with kisses and with tears; provided only that when butchered for no other crime than that of taking thought for the welfare of the legions, we may be buried by our comrades.

1 Gladiators were kept by provincial governors for holding shows. All such shows of gladiators, wild beasts, or plays, were forbidden to governors by Nero as burdensome to the provincials (xiii. 31. 4).
He heightened the effect of these words by tears, and by beating his breast and face with his hands. Then, thrusting aside the men who held him up, he cast himself down at the feet of one man after another, till he raised such a storm of dismay and indignation, that some of the soldiers threw into chains the gladiators of the household of Blaesus, others did the same to the rest of his slaves, while others again dispersed to search for the body. And had it not soon become known that no body was to be found; that the slaves, under torture, denied the murder; and lastly, that the man had never had a brother: they had come nigh putting the Legate to death. As it was, they drove the Tribunes and the Commandant out of the camp, plundered their baggage as they fled, and killed the centurion Lucilius. This man was known amongst the soldiers by the nickname of 'Another, quick!' for when he broke one vine-rod over a man's back, he would shout for a second, and then again for a third. The rest of the centurions found safety in hiding; all except Clemens Julius, who, being a man of ready wit, was kept as a suitable envoy to convey the demands of the soldiers. Two of the legions—the 8th and 15th—were on the point of drawing their swords against each other, because the latter refused to give up for slaughter a centurion called Sirpicus, whose blood was demanded by the former. The men of the 9th legion, however, interposed with entreaties, and when these proved of no avail, with threats.

1 The vine-rod was the centurion's instrument of punishment, and the symbol of his office. Its use, however, was reserved for the sacred backs of soldiers who were Roman citizens, just as the Roman law (Ius Civile) was applied only to citizens, not to foreigners (see n. on chap. 15. 5). Soldiers who were not citizens were punished with the justis (Liv., Epit. 57). Cp. Juv. xiv. 103, and vitam post haec frangebat vertice vitem.
24. 1 The report of these proceedings induced Tiberius, impenetrable as he was, and disposed to hush up all bad news, to send his son Drusus¹ on a mission to the army, accompanied by a distinguished staff and an escort of two Praetorian Cohorts. Drusus received no specific instructions; he was to act according to circumstances. The cohorts were composed of picked men, and made up beyond the usual strength; in addition, there was the greater part of the Praetorian horse, and a strong body of Germans,² then serving as bodyguard to the Emperor. Aelius Sejanus,³ who had been appointed colleague of his father Strabo in the command of the Praetorian Guards, and had great influence with Tiberius, was to act as adviser to the young man, and hold out expectations of reward or punishment to the army.

4. At the approach of Drusus, the legions came out to meet him, as if from respect; but not with glad looks, as was their wont, and with no glitter of decorations: their unkempt, disordered persons, and their gloomy faces, might counterfeit distress, but it was a distress that was closely allied to insolence.

25. 1 No sooner had Drusus passed within the ramparts than the gates were secured by guards, and bodies of armed men were ordered to occupy certain positions within the camp. The remainder, in one vast multitude, surrounded the tribunal. There stood

¹ Drusus Caesar, commonly called Drusus junior (to distinguish him from his uncle, Drusus senior, younger brother of Tiberius) was the only son of Tiberius, borne to him by his first wife Vipsania. The tragic story of his death (poisoned, as supposed, by Sejanus) is told below in iv. 3-11. He was married to his first cousin, Livia, sister to Germanicus.

² This was a body-guard of Batavian cavalry, attached by Augustus to his own person (Dio, iv. 24. 7).

³ This is the first mention by Tacitus of this notorious upstart, destined to play such havoc with the family of Tiberius, and to change the whole character of his rule. His father, Seius Strabo, has been mentioned above as commander of the praetorian cohorts (chap. 7. 3). The termination of the name Seianus shows that the bearer of it had been adopted by one of the name of Aelius: probably the Aelius Gallus who was Praefect of Egypt B.C. 24. See iv. 1. 3, and n. there.
Drusus, demanding silence with his hand. When the men looked on their own numbers, a murmur of threatening voices would arise; but again they trembled when they cast their eyes on Caesar. There was a confused hubbub; wild shouts alternated with sudden lulls, as the mob yielded to contending emotions, quailing and menacing by turns. At last, in a moment of quiet, Drusus read aloud his father’s letter. The terms of the letter were as follows:

The interests of the brave legions, with whom he had gone through so many campaigns, were very near to his heart; so soon as his mind should recover from its present grief, he would bring their demands before the Senate. In the mean time he had sent his son, to make without delay such concessions as could be granted at once; all else must be reserved for the Senate, who would not be found wanting, they should believe, either in indulgence or in firmness.

To this the multitude replied that they had entrusted the centurion Clemens with their demands. Clemens proceeded to set these forth in order: ‘Discharge after sixteen years’ service, with gratuities at its close; Pay at the rate of a denarius a day; Veterans to be relieved from all further service.’ Drusus pleaded that such matters could only be dealt with by the Senate and his father; but he was interrupted by a storm:—Why had he come, if he had no authority either to increase the soldier’s pay, or to lighten

---

1 In addition to the brilliant campaigns in which Tiberius and his brother Drusus had conquered the Raeti and Vindelici, and so opened up the Eastern Alps (as celebrated by Hor., Od. iv. 2 and 14), Tiberius had carried on the war in Germany for two years after the death of his brother Drusus in B.C. 9. In A.D. 4 and 5 he was consolidating the Roman authority in N. Germany, when he was called back to quell a great rising in Pannonia and Dalmatia, A.D. 6. This took him some three years to accomplish. All his work in Germany was undone by the disaster to Varus in A.D. 9; but in these various campaigns he had displayed military talents of no mean order.
his labours, or to confer on him any benefit at all? And yet, by Hercules! every one had liberty to scourge or slay him. Drusus was but repeating the old trick of Tiberius, who used to disappoint the legions of their hopes under cover of the name of Augustus. Would they never have coming to them any but sons of the Imperial house? It was a novel thing indeed for the Emperor to throw back the soldier upon the Senate for his rewards, and his rewards only: let him consult the same Senate every time that a man was punished, or the signal for battle raised! Were they to be under masters for their rewards, and have no appeal against their punishments?

27. At last they moved away from the tribunal. Their threatening gestures to such members of the Praetorian Guard, or of Caesar's staff, as they encountered, led to altercations and bid fair to end in a conflict. Their fury was specially directed against Gnaeus Lentulus, on whose age and military reputation Drusus was supposed to lean, and who had taken the lead, it was believed, in scouting the monstrous demands of the soldiers. And when, not long afterwards, foreseeing danger, he was departing for the winter camp, in company with Drusus, he was set upon by a crowd who asked, Whither was he going? Was it to the Emperor or to the Senate, that he might there also oppose the interests of the legions? With that they made a rush on him, and pelted him with stones: wounded and bleeding, he was rescued from certain death by the hurrying up of the force which had arrived with Drusus.

1 What facts, if any, are here referred to is unknown.
2 Doubtless the Cn. Lentulus whose death is narrated in iv. 44, 1. In addition to his distinction as a consular (cos. B.C. 68), and for gaining triumphal honours over the Getae, Tacitus commends him in that passage for having first borne poverty with patience, and afterwards honestly acquired, and unstintedly spent, a large fortune. He is to be distinguished from the Cn. Lentulus Gaetulicus, cos. A.D. 26, who took up such a hardy position towards Tiberius when legate of Upper Germany, A.D. 34 (vi. 30).
The night threatened an outbreak of crime; but the danger was averted by a happy chance. Suddenly, in a clear sky, the moon was seen to fail. Accepting this as an omen, the ignorant soldiery found a similitude to their own present troubles in the failing of the luminary:—Things would go well, they thought, with their demands, if the light and brightness of the Goddess should come back to her. So they set up a clashing of brazen vessels, with an accompaniment of horns and trumpets; as the light waxed or waned, they passed from exultation to despair. Then a cloud came up, shutting out the moon from view; whereupon they believed that she was lost in darkness, and with that susceptibility to superstitious terror which affects those who have once given way to it, they lamented that labours without end were portended for them, and that the Gods were turning away in horror from their crimes.

Minded to take advantage of this change of mood, and turn the happy incident to account, Drusus sent word round the camp, and summoned to his presence the centurion Clemens, and such other well-conducted

---

1 The eclipse here recorded took place on the 26th September, A.D. 14, from 3 to 7 a.m. Thus, as Furn. points out, there had been time in the 38 days intervening between August 19 and September 26, for the news of Augustus’ death to reach Pannonia (a distance of over 500 Roman miles); for the mutiny to develop, and for the news of it to reach Rome; and for the embassy, with perhaps a force of 1500 or 2000 men, to reach the spot.

2 For the superstition that the evils predicted by an eclipse were to be averted by the clashing of brazen instruments, see Liv. xxvi. 5, 9; Mart. xii. 57, 75; Juv. vi. 442-3. Yet the true theory of the eclipse was known to Lucretius (v. 751), Cicero (de Div. ii. 6, 17), and all educated persons; it was known even to early Greek philosophers (Plin. ii. 12). A similar divergence of view between the educated and the vulgar existed over the whole field of pagan mythology. The Turks still regard eclipses as the direct act of God, and blow horns, trumpets, etc., as a means of propitiation. My colleague, the Rev. Dr. Cooper, tells me that he was in Ephesus on the occasion of the solar eclipse of 1890, when the offices of a newspaper were wrecked for having impiously ventured to predict the eclipse on the day before it occurred. The character of an Ephesian mob does not seem to have materially changed since the days of St. Paul.

3 This scene, as here described, recalls the pathetic story of the eclipse of the moon on the 27th August, B.C. 413, which completed the ruin of Nicias and the Athenian army before Syracuse, as so graphically told by Thucydides (vii. 50, 4). Probably no eclipses known to history had such important consequences as these two.
men as were popular with the multitude. These men made their way among the sentries, the pickets, and the guards, appealing to their hopes and fears alternately. *How long*, they asked, *shall we hold our Emperor’s son in siege? How is this struggle to end? Are we to swear allegiance to Percennius and Vibulenus? Is it from Percennius and Vibulenus that we shall get our pay, and grants of land upon discharge? Are they to take the places of Nero or of Drusus as rulers over the Roman people? Were it not better for us, as we have been the last to go astray, to be the first with our repentance? Boons which are asked for all, are slow to come: a private favour is no sooner earned than granted.*

This language had its effect. It sowed the seeds of suspicion between recruit and veteran, between one legion and another. By degrees, the sense of discipline returned; the guards slunk away from the gates; and the standards, which had been collected on one spot at the beginning of the outbreak, were taken back to their proper places.

At daybreak Drusus called the men together. Though without skill in speaking, he shewed all the dignity of his race as he reproved their past misconduct, and commended their present attitude. *Neither fears, he said, nor threats would move him. Should he see them inclined to submission, should they approach him as suppliants, he would write to his father to receive their petitions without displeasure.* At their own request, a deputation was despatched to Tiberius. The envoys chosen were Blaesus, as before; Lucius Apronius, a Roman knight on the staff\(^1\) of Drusus; and Justus Catonius, a centurion of the first grade.

---

1 The word *cohors*, here used, is the special term to denote the personal suite or staff of a commander; not the military division, the 10th part of a legion, called by that name.
After that, there was a conflict of opinion. Some thought that nothing should be done till the envoys returned, and that until then the soldiers should be humoured and kindly treated; others called for stronger measures. *The temper of a multitude*, they urged, *was always in extremes; they must either terrorise or tremble: once cowed, they were to be feared no more. While the terrors of superstition were still upon them, let the General strike fresh fear into their minds by making an end of the ringleaders.* Drusus himself was by nature inclined to severity;¹ he summoned Vibulenus and Percennius before him, and ordered them to be executed. Their bodies, according to some accounts, were flung outside the lines to be gazed at; but the common story is that they were buried hastily inside the General's tent.

Search was then made for the principal agitators. Some were found wandering outside the camp, and were cut down by the centurions or soldiers of the Praetorian Guard; others were given up by the men themselves, as a token of their loyalty. The troubles of the soldiers were aggravated by an unusually early winter. Continual and excessive rains made it impossible for them to leave their tents or gather together; they could scarcely keep up the standards, which were blown down by the winds and swept away by the waters. And they were still under fear of the divine wrath:—*It was not for nothing that they had seen the heavenly bodies grow dim, and the storms come down upon their impious heads; their*

¹ Tacitus elsewhere describes Drusus as *revelling in bloodshed* (i. 76, 3); Dio calls him ἀερβυστέρως καὶ ἀμαρτότως (liv. 13, 1). In iv. 3, a Tacitus speaks of him as 'passionate in temper, and unable to brook a rival.' But if ever Drusus had a natural rival, it was Germanicus, the adopted son of his father; yet Tacitus tells us that whereas their respective supporters formed two bitterly hostile factions in the court, the brothers remained egregie concordes et proximorum certaminibus inconcussi (ii. 43, 7, where see n.).
troubles would have no end till they quitted that ill-omened and unhallowed camp, and returned, after expiating their offences, to their several winter quarters. So first the 8th legion, then the 15th, went back; the men of the 9th at first protested that the answer of Tiberius should be waited for: but when the others had departed, and they were left alone, they made a virtue of necessity and went of their own free will. Drusus himself did not wait for the return of the envoys. Things having settled down sufficiently for the present, he returned to Rome.

31. 1 About the same time, and from identical causes, disturbances broke out in the armies of the Rhine; and with all the greater violence, in proportion to their greater numbers. They indulged the hope also that Germanicus Caesar, unable to brook a master over him, would lend himself to the legions: they were strong enough; they thought, to carry all before them.¹ There were two armies² on the banks of the Rhine.

¹ The legions were not slow to learn the lesson that emperors could be made elsewhere than in Rome. Galba, in Spain, revolted against Nero in A.D. 68; Vitellius was proclaimed emperor by his army at Cologne, January 10, A.D. 69; and Vespasian by his troops at Alexandria on February 1st of the same year.

² There were two separate commands on the Rhine frontier, called respectively Upper and Lower Germany. Each comprised the frontier districts on both sides of the Rhine, each army being prepared to act as occasion required, either against Gaul or Germany. Each army consisted of 4 legions: praetium robur Rhenum iuxta, commune in Germanas Gallosque subtridum, octo legiones erant (iv. 5. 2). The army of Upper Germany, whose headquarters were at Moguntiacum (Mayence), consisted of the 2nd, 13th, 14th, and 16th legions; the legions of Lower Germany, with headquarters at Ara Ubiorum (Cologne), were the 1st, 5th, 20th, and 21st. The Ara Ubiorum had been the headquarters of the original German province, before the disaster of A.D. 9; after that date, and throughout the first century, the two Germanies were not strictly provinces at all; hence the full title of their commanders is not legatus provinciarum, but legatus Augusti pro praetore inferioris (or superioris) exercitus, respectively. See iv. 41. 3; iv. 73. 1. Two altars, with inscriptions given by Rushforth, pp. 107, 108, fix the boundary between the Upper and the Lower commands. They were found on a bridge over the Vinxbach, between Andernach and Sinsig on the left bank of the Rhine. C. Silius held the command of the Upper army from A.D. 14 to 19; A. Severus Caecina of the Lower army from A.D. 14 to 19. Both were under the supreme command of Germanicus, who was invested with the imperium maius: see n. on chap. 14. 4. Under Augustus, who favoured centralisation, the command of the Rhine had been united with that of the three Gauls under Agrippa, Tiberius, and Drusus in turn. See Pelham, 'Outlines of Roman History,' p. 422.
The Upper army, as it was called, was under the Legate Gaius Silius; Aulus Caecina had command of the Lower: both alike were under the supreme command of Germanicus, who was at that time occupied in taking the census\(^1\) in the provinces of Gaul.

The army of Silius hesitated, watching the result of the movement elsewhere; but the Lower army broke out in open mutiny. The movement began with the men of the 21st and 5th legions, who carried along with them the 1st and 20th; all these four being at that time encamped together in the territory of the Ubii,\(^8\) with little or no work to occupy them. No sooner had the news of the death of Augustus arrived, than the town-bred recruits who had been raised in the city not long before, accustomed to license, and impatient of all labour, filled the simple minds of their comrades with the idea that the time had now come for the veterans to press for an early discharge, the younger soldiers for more pay, for all alike to demand some relief from

---

\(^1\) The *census* here mentioned was the periodic valuation of property on which the apportionment of the state tribute was made. This general survey and census, with enumeration of properties and owners, was first taken by Augustus in his own provinces. See Marquardt, *Staatsv. ii. p. 204-208*. A total contribution of 40 millions was levied on Gaul by Caesar (Suet., *Jul.* 25); a Roman commissioner (xiv. 46, 2) or distinguished officer (as here) apportioned the amount among the communities. We hear of such valuations being made in Gaul in B.C. 27, in B.C. 13, in A.D. 14 (the present year), and in A.D. 61. Such was the census held in Judaea, when 'there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus that all the world should be taxed,' *i.e.* 'rated' (St. Luke ii. 1). The taking of the census often caused discontent and even outbreaks in the provinces (vi. 41, 1). Of a similar kind are the revaluations of rents periodically made by the British Government in India.

\(^8\) The Ubii were a German tribe, settled originally on the right bank of the Rhine. Desiring to escape the hostility of the tribes on that bank, they were removed at their own request to the left bank of the river by Agrippa in B.C. 37 or 39 (Dio, xii. 49). It was here that Agrippina—the daughter of Germanicus, the wife of Claudius, and the mother of the Emperor Nero—was born. In recognition of that fact, Agrippina had a colony of veterans planted there in A.D. 50. It then took the name of *Colonia Claudia Agrippinensis*, from which the present name Cologne is derived (xii. 27, 1). It is called sometimes *Civitas Ubiorum* (chap. 37, 3), sometimes *Ara Ubiorum* (chap. 39, 1).
their irksome duties, and wreak vengeance on the centurions for their brutality. And such talk was not confined to single agitators, like Percennius in the Pannonian army, nor addressed to trembling soldiers, looking anxiously around to armies more powerful than themselves.\textsuperscript{1} The spirit of sedition found many tongues and many voices:—\textit{The fortunes of Rome were in their own hands; it was by their victories that the Empire was extended, it was from their name that Emperors derived their titles.}\textsuperscript{2}

32. 1 Unnerved by the general frenzy, the Legate made no attempt at resistance. In one moment, an infuriated mob rushed with drawn swords upon the centurions—the objects, from time immemorial, of the soldiers' hatred, and the first victims of their violence. 3 The men threw them down and beat them, sixty\textsuperscript{3} of them setting upon each centurion, so as to match the number of the centuries; then having belaboured and mangled them, they cast them out, many already dead, upon the entrenchments, or into the river. 4 One of them called Septimius took refuge on the tribunal, and threw himself down before Caecina's feet; but so determined was the demand made for him, that he was given up to death. One young man of spirit, called Cassius Chaerea, who afterwards acquired notoriety as one of the murderers of Gaius Caesar,\textsuperscript{4} cut his way, sword in hand, through the armed mob which blocked his path.

The Tribunes, and the Commandant of the camp,

\textsuperscript{1} See iv. 5, 5, where Tacitus informs us that the army of two legions stationed in Dalmatia (or Dalmatia) was intended to keep an eye both on the armies of the Danube provinces and on Italy.

\textsuperscript{2} The name Germanicus was first borne by Drusus the elder, then by his two sons Germanicus and Claudius, sometimes even by Tiberius.

\textsuperscript{3} Because there were 60 centuries in the legion: 'a piece of grim humour,' as Furn. justly terms it.

\textsuperscript{4} Alluding to the murder of the Emperor Gaius or Caligula in the Crypto-porticus of the Palatine by Cassius Chaerea, then tribune of a praetorian cohort, and others, Jan. 24, A.D. 41.
now lost all authority. The men distributed among themselves all sentry and picket duty, and other matters of immediate urgency. To those who best understood the temper of the soldiery, nothing shewed more clearly the serious and uncompromising character of the movement than this, that everything was done in concert, nothing at the prompting of a few; all rose to fury, or sunk into silence, like one man: with such uniformity and regularity that it seemed to be at the word of command.

Meantime Germanicus, as we have said, was taking the census in Gaul when he heard of the death of Augustus. He was the son of Drusus, brother of Tiberius; the grandson of Augusta; and his wife Agrippina, by whom he had several children, was the grand-daughter of Augustus. But he was disquieted by the secret hatred which both his uncle and his grandmother bore him: a hatred which was all the more bitter that it sprang from unworthy reasons. For the memory of his father Drusus was much cherished by the Roman people; and it was the popular belief that if he had succeeded to power, he would have restored the Republic. Germanicus had become the object of the same favour, and the same hopes; for his unassuming character, and his rare affability of manner, presented a strong contrast to the haughty looks and dark language of Tiberius. And besides all this, feminine rancours were at work. For Livia regarded Agrippina with

1 Furn. illustrates this sentiment by the cynical maxim of the Agricola, chap. 42, 4: Proprium humani generis est odisse quem laeseris; which recalls the equally cynical opposite saying, 'Why do you hate me? I never did you a service.' But iniquae can hardly bear this meaning. Livia and Tiberius had as yet done Germanicus no injury, if they ever did; and what Tacitus really means is that they hated Germanicus for qualities which should rather have won their love: his affability, his popularity, and above all, his popular leanings.
a true step-mother's hatred; and Agrippina herself was somewhat passionate and imperious in temper, though her faults were all redeemed by her chastity and her devotion to her husband.

34. 1 But the fact that Germanicus stood near to the succession only caused him to exert himself all the more strenuously for Tiberius. He took the oath of allegiance himself, and then administered it to the neighbouring tribes, and to the communities of Belgium. On hearing of the mutiny, he hurried back at once. The men met him outside the camp, their eyes cast down to the ground as if in penitence. As he passed within the lines, a babel of murmurs might be heard. Some seized his hand as if to kiss it, and then thrust his fingers into their mouths to let him feel their toothless gums; others pointed to their bodies, bowed down with age. Perceiving the crowd about him to be without order, he bid them form up in maniples; they replied that they could hear him better as they were. Next, he ordered the standards to the front, so that the cohorts at least might be distinguished from one another: reluctantly they obeyed.\(^1\) Beginning with expressions of reverence to Augustus, he passed on to speak of the victories and triumphs of Tiberius, dwelling especially upon his splendid achievements in Germany, along with those same legions; he extolled the unanimity of Italy, the loyalty of the Gallic provinces:—*Nowhere was there disturbance or disaffection.* He was listened to in silence, or with slight murmurs of dissent.

35. 1 He then touched on the mutiny:—*Where was now

---

1 Germanicus first asks the legion to parade in proper military order, each of the 30 maniples in its own place. This order disobeyed, he asks them to observe, at least, the distinction of cohorts: the men unwillingly obey. The word *sexillum*, properly used of the standard of the maniples, is here used for the *signa* of the cohorts. See chap. 20, 1.
their military subordination? he asked, where their old pride in discipline? Whither had they driven forth their Tribunes and their centurions? At this, with one consent, they bared their bodies, and pointed reproachfully to the marks of wounds and stripes. With a confused roar, they denounced the cost of exemptions, the smallness of their pay, the severity of their labours: naming one by one the making of earthworks and ditches, the collecting of fodder, timber and firewood, and every other kind of necessary work, or work devised to keep the camp from idleness. Fiercest of all was the clamour of the veterans. 2 Counting up their thirty or more years of service, they implored him to find some remedy for their troubles: not to let them perish in the same round of toil, but to vouchsafe to them some limit to so arduous a service, and with repose, a competence.

Some even demanded of Germanicus the money 3 bequeathed by Augustus, adding words of happy augury towards himself,1 signifying that, if he aimed at empire, they would back him up in the attempt. At this he leapt down headlong from the tribunal, as though himself infected with their crime; but the men thrust their arms in his way, threatening him with violence unless he returned. At that he drew 4 his sword, raised it in the air, and exclaiming that he would rather die than play the traitor, he was in the act of plunging it into his breast, when the bystanders seized his arm, and held it back by force. Some voices from the densely packed crowd behind, and even, what almost passes belief, individual men coming close up to him, urged him to strike on;

---

1 This demand, and the language in which it was made, implied that they desired Germanicus to claim the succession, and march for Rome.
and one soldier called Calusidius offered him a drawn sword, adding:—*It was sharper than his own*. Infuriated as the men were, they thought this a cruel and inhuman speech; and during the pause which followed, Germanicus was hurried off by his friends into his tent.

36. 1 A consultation was now held as to what should be done. Word came that the men were preparing to send envoys to bring over the Upper Army to the movement; that the town of the Ubii had been marked out for destruction; and that the troops, having once tasted plunder, would make a raid into Gaul. The alarm was heightened by the fact that the enemy were aware of the mutiny, and by the likelihood that they would make an incursion into Gaul if the river-bank were left unguarded; yet if they called out the auxiliary and allied forces against the seceding legions, they would be embarking on civil war. An unbending attitude was hazardous; to give way was ignominious: whether all or nothing were conceded, the Commonwealth would be in equal jeopardy. After all due consideration, it was resolved to write a letter in the Emperor's name granting discharge after twenty years' service; partial release to men of sixteen years' service, who should be kept under a standard of their own, and relieved of all duty except that of fighting; the sum claimed as legacies to be paid in full, and to twice the amount.  

37. 1 The soldiers felt that these terms were concocted for the emergency, and demanded their instant fulfilment. Accordingly the discharges were made out by the Tribunes at once; the payments in cash were to be deferred till the troops should return to their

---

1 These concessions, extorted for the moment (chap. 37, 5), were set aside and repealed in the year following (chap. 76, 3).
respective winter quarters. But as the men of the 2nd and 21st legions refused to move till the money was paid in their present summer quarters, Germanicus had to make up the amount from the privy purses of himself and his staff. The 1st and 20th legions were conducted back to the country of the Ubii by the Legate Caecina; when might be seen the disgraceful spectacle of the treasure-chests taken from Germanicus being conveyed among the standards and the eagles. Germanicus himself proceeded to the Upper Army, where the oath of allegiance was taken without hesitation by the 2nd, 13th, and 16th legions. The 14th hesitated for a moment; so the money and the discharge were granted to them unasked.

Meantime, in the country of the Chauci, a movement had begun among the veterans of the disaffected legions stationed there on outpost duty; but it was suppressed for the moment by the summary execution of two soldiers, on the order of Manius Ennius, Prefect of the camp. Salutary as this example was, the Prefect had exceeded his authority in ordering it; and as the trouble grew worse, he took to flight. Discovered and dragged from his hiding-place, he drew upon audacity for his protection:—To do violence to him, he declared, would be to lay hands, not on the Prefect of the camp, but on their General Germanicus—nay, upon the Emperor Tiberius himself. Having thus

---

1 The term *fiscus*, or 'basket,' was applied to the revenues, especially those from the imperial provinces, which were accounted for directly to the emperor, as distinguished from those paid into the *aerarium*, or public treasury. As the *fiscus* included both public and private money, the term 'privy purse' is not in all cases applicable to it: but see Juv. iv. 53-55, where the huge turbot caught in the "triatic is despatched post-haste to Domitian, as though belonging to the *fiscus*.

2 The Chauci, whose territory cannot exactly be fixed, seem to have occupied the lower parts of the valleys of the Weser and the Ems, and the country between those rivers.

3 Properly speaking, in an imperial province, no officer below the *legatus Augusti* could inflict the death penalty; in senatorial provinces (Africa alone excepted), not even the proconsul (Dio, liii. 13, 7).
overawed the men who stood in his way, he seized the standard, headed with it towards the river, and proclaiming that all who left the ranks should be treated as deserters, he brought the force back to their winter quarters, disaffected indeed, but not in open mutiny.

39. Meanwhile the envoys from the Senate reached Germanicus on his return to the altar of the Ubii. Two legions were wintering there, the 1st and 20th, together with the recently discharged veterans under a standard of their own. Uneasy and conscience-stricken, a terror seized them that the envoys had come with orders from the Senate to cancel the concessions extorted by the mutiny; and with the usual tendency of a mob to fasten a charge, however false, on some one’s shoulders, they laid the blame of the decree on Munatius Plancus, a Consular, who was at the head of the embassy. In the dead of night, they called for their standard, which was in the house of Germanicus. Mobbing the door of the house, they forced it open, dragged Germanicus from his bed, and compelled him to give up the standard under fear of death.

Later on, as they were parading along the camp-roads, they encountered the envoys, who having

---

1 No doubt the Rhine is meant: the detachment was at once marched off to head-quarters.
2 This Plancus must have been a son or grandson of the famous L. Munatius Plancus, cos. B.C. 42, who so falsified the hopes of Cicero by going over to the triumvirs with his Gallic army after the battle of Mutina in B.C. 43. He is still more famous for the allusion to him in Horace, Od. iii. 14, 27: Non ego hoc ferreum calidus iuventia = Consula Plancis.
3 To mark his displeasure, and as a sign of possible punishment, Germanicus had apparently taken into his own keeping the vexillum which guaranteed the privileges of the vexillarii. See above, chap. 17, 4.
4 The viae of a Roman camp were laid out with great regularity. The camp was divided into three equal portions by two broad roads, each 100 feet wide, the Principia, and the Via Quintana. The upper portion, that between the Principia and the Porta Praetoria, contained the Praetorium, or head-quarters. The other two-thirds of the camp were occupied by the men’s tents, being divided into six oblong spaces by five viae, of 50 feet in width, running at right angles to the Via Quintana. For the gates in the camp, see n. on chap. 66, a.
heard the uproar were on their way to the quarters of Germanicus. They loaded them with insults, and were on the point of murdering them—more particularly Plancus, who thought it beneath his dignity to take flight. The only refuge open to him was the camp of the 1st legion. Embracing the standards and the eagle, he sought to protect himself by their sacred character; but had not the standard-bearer Calpurnius prevented the men from proceeding to extremities, there would have been witnessed in a Roman camp a sight scarce ever seen even among our enemies—that of a Legate of the Roman people staining the altars of the Gods with his blood. At last, when day dawned, and it became possible to distinguish soldiers from officers, and to discover what had happened, Germanicus ordered Plancus to be brought to him, and took him up on to the tribunal. Upbraiding the soldiers for their infatuation—now reviving, he declared, not so much from their own passions as through the wrath of the Gods—he explained to them the purpose of the mission; spoke with eloquence and sorrow of the rights of envoys, of the grievous and undeserved peril of Plancus, and of the disgrace thereby brought upon the legion; and having thus cowed rather than quieted the assemblage, he sent off the envoys under an escort of auxiliary cavalry.

At this perilous juncture, Germanicus was much blamed for not proceeding to the army of the Upper Rhine, which was still loyal, and would have afforded aid against the mutineers:—Mischief enough, and more than enough, had been done by discharges and bounties and other weak concessions. If he had no regard for his own

---

1 i.e. the *sigla* or standards of the cohorts, and the eagle which was the standard of the legion.
life, why leave his little son and his wife, and his yet unborn child, among an infuriated soldiery, who had violated every human right? He should send these, at least, back in safety to their grandfather and their country. For a while he hesitated; and Agrippina would not listen to such counsels, protesting that she was of the blood of Augustus, and could face danger like the rest of her race. At last, tearfully embracing his wife, now great with child, and the son she had borne him, he prevailed on her to depart. And now the long sad line of women moved away; the General's wife a fugitive, carrying her little boy in her arms; her friends' wives dragging themselves after her, and weeping as they went: not less sorrowful were the friends that were left behind.

This spectacle, these wailings, more like those of a captured city than of a camp commanded by a Caesar, drew towards them the eyes and the ears of even the common soldiers. Coming forth from their tents, What are these sounds of weeping? they ask; What this dismal procession? A company of high-born ladies—with no centurion, not even a soldier, for an escort; with none of the state or retinue that befit the wife of an Imperator—going forth to the Treveri, to seek protection at the hand of strangers!

A feeling of shame and pity came over them at the sight. They remembered her father Agrippa, her grandfather Augustus, and her father-in-law Drusus; they thought of her notable fertility, her incomparable purity; then of her infant son, born in camp, and

1 The Treveri, or Treviri, were a powerful tribe in Gallia Belgica, staunch friends of Rome. Their chief town, on the right bank of the Moselle, was made a Roman colony by Augustus, under the name Augusta Treverorum, the modern Trèves, or Trier, the chief residence of Constantine the Great. Here is the famous Porta Nigra, with other Roman remains.  
2 That Caligula was born in the German camp was a fiction of Caligula's own, to which he himself gave currency in a couplet beginning In
brought up in the soldiers' quarters, to whom, in soldier fashion, they had given the name of 'Little Boots,' because to please the men he used to wear boots like those of the legionaries. But what moved them most of all was a feeling of jealousy towards the Treveri; so they threw themselves in the way, and implored her to come back and remain with them; some going after Agrippina herself, the greater number turning back to Germanicus. Stung to the quick with grief and indignation, he thus addressed the throng around him:—

Neither wife nor son are dearer to me than my father and my country; but my father is safe in his Imperial Majesty, and the other armies of Rome will protect the Empire. My wife and children, whom I would freely offer up to death for your glory, I am now removing from your rage; that whatever crime you may yet be meditating may be wiped out by my blood alone, and that you may not add to your guilt by the slaughter of the great-grandson of Augustus, the murder of the daughter-in-law of Tiberius. For of what insolence, of what impiety, have you not been guilty, during these past days? What name shall I give to this concourse? Am I to call you soldiers—you who have besieged the son of your Emperor with arms and entrenchments? Or citizens—you who have trampled under foot the authority of the Senate; who have disregarded rights accorded even to enemies; who have done violence to the sacred person of an envoy, and the law of nations? The Divine Julius quelled a mutiny by one word: styling those who broke their oath of fealty as 'Quirites.'

---

1 The characteristic appellation of the Roman people (Populus Romanus Quiritium) when addressed in their civil capacity.
legions at Actium quail before him. Though I be not such as they, yet am I sprung from them; and it were a strange and unworthy thing if soldiers from Spain, or Syria, were to scorn my commands. And will you, the 6 men of the 1st legion, who received your standard from Tiberius;¹ and you of the 20th—you who shared in his many battles, whom he enriched with so many rewards—will you thus notably repay your General? Is this the word that I am to carry to my father, at a time when he is receiving from other provinces no news but what is good? How his own recruits, his own veterans, are not content with discharge and bounties; how here, and here alone, centurions are being murdered, Tribunes cast out, envoys beleaguered, camp and river stained with blood? And that I am in the midst of enemies, holding my life at their mercy!

43. ¹ Why, O why, did you, unthinking friends, on that first day of assembling, hold back the steel which I was ready to plunge into my breast? A better and kindlier act was 2 his who offered to me his sword! For I should have fallen then with no guilty knowledge of outrages by my army; and you would have chosen for yourselves a General, to leave my death indeed unpunished, but to avenge Varus and his three legions. For may the Gods grant that the Belgians—ready as they are to offer themselves—may not have the honour and glory of restoring the Roman name, 4 and of conquering the tribes of Germany! O! may thy spirit, Divine Augustus, that has now been received into Heaven; may thy image, O my father Drusus, and thy memory, in the hearts of these same soldiers, alive once more to a sense of shame and honour, wash out this stain, and turn this fury between fellow-citizens to the destruction of our 5 foes! And you also: you whose looks, whose hearts, I

¹ It would appear that, on some occasion unknown, the 1st legion had been largely recruited by Tiberius. Hence ipsius frones in the following sentence.
see to be other than they were: if you would render obedience to your General; if you would restore to the Senate their envoys, to me my wife and child: withdraw from the contagion! Put forth from you the breeders of sedition! Thus only will you make fast your penitence, thus firmly bind your loyalty.

This speech turned the soldiers into suppliants. 44. 1 Humbly acknowledging the justice of these reproaches, they implored Germanicus to punish the guilty, to forgive those who had been led astray, and to lead them out against the enemy; they entreated him to recall his wife, and to let the legions have their foster-child back again, rather than hand him over as a hostage to the Gauls. Germanicus excused Agrippina from returning because of her lying-in, now near at hand, and the wintry season; but he would let his son come back: the rest they must do themselves.

At this they hurried away like new men, and dragged the ring-leaders in chains before Gaius Caetronius, the Legate of the 1st legion, who judged the culprits and passed sentence upon them one by one in the following fashion. In front stood the legions, with swords drawn; the accused was put up to view by the Tribune on a raised platform. If the men shouted 'Guilty,' he was thrown headlong down, and cut to pieces. The troops delighted in the slaughter, as though they were thereby absolving themselves; and Caesar allowed it to go on, since in this way, without any order from him, the severity and odium alike were laid upon the same shoulders. The example thus set was followed by the veterans, 6 who were despatched soon afterwards to Raetia, 1

---

1 Raetia was the name given to the E. part of Switzerland (Canton Graubünden or Les Grisons) and the Tyrol, extending N. as far as the country between the Danube and the Inn. The Engadine, or Upper Inn Valley, so well
under pretence of protecting that Province from an attack threatened by the Suevi; but in reality, to remove them from a camp whose grim associations reminded them not only of their crime, but also of the rigour with which it had been repressed. Germanicus then revised the list of centurions. Each was called up in turn, and stated his name, rank, and country; his period of service; his acts of gallantry, and his decorations, if he had any. If men and officers commended him for energy and integrity, he was permitted to retain his rank. If they agreed in declaring him corrupt or cruel, he was discharged from the service.

45. Things having thus been settled for the moment, a trouble no less formidable remained because of the defiant attitude of the 5th and 21st legions, who were in camp at a place called Vetera, sixty miles away. These men had been the first to mutiny; they had committed the worst excesses; and now, neither awed by the punishment of their comrades, nor moved by their repentance, they remained as intractable as ever. Germanicus accordingly prepared to despatch a flotilla down the Rhine with a force of legionaries and allied troops, determined to fight it out if his authority were disputed.

46. At Rome, meanwhile, the news of the outbreak in the German army had arrived before the issue of the troubles in Illyricum was known. The city was

---

known to mountaineers, still bears in its present language (Romansch) the traces of its conquest by Drusus and Tiberius, B.C. 15 (Hor., Od. iv. 4 and 14). The name Suebi, or Suevi, was given to a number of Germanic tribes, sometimes confederated, which stretched across the E. of Germany from the Baltic to the Danube.

---

5 The 5th and 21st legions, as we have seen, formed part of the army of Lower Germany. Their head-quarters Vetera, or Vetera Castra, has been supposed to be at Xanten, some 66 miles N. of Cologne, where the other two legions of this army, the 1st and 20th, were stationed. See chap. 39, 2. The next passage shows that Vetera was on the river.
in a panic; and men censured Tiberius in this fashion:—

He was befooling the poor helpless Senate and people with his pretences of hesitation, at a moment when the legions were in revolt, and needed something more than the authority of two youths, new to command, to put them down. He should have gone himself, and confronted them with the Imperial presence: they would have given way before a prince of ripe experience, himself the final arbiter of rewards and punishments. Augustus, in extreme old age, had been able to pay repeated visits to Germany; was Tiberius, in the prime of life, to sit still in the Senate-house, carping at the speeches of the Fathers? Precautions enough had been taken to secure the servility of the capital: it was time that something were done to soothe the army, and reconcile it to a state of peace.

Talk like this made no impression upon Tiberius; he was resolved not to quit the capital, nor to expose himself and the commonwealth to risk. He was distracted by many opposing considerations:—

Of the two armies, the German was the more powerful, the Pannonian the nearer to Rome; the former had the resources of Gaul behind it, Italy lay at the mercy of the latter. Which of the two should he visit first? Whichever he put last, would be a-flame at the indignity. In sending a son to each, he put both on an equality; yet without compromising his own dignity, which gained in reverence from the distance. Then again, the young men might be excused for referring some points to their father, and if the troops resisted Drusus or Germanicus, they might be crushed or conciliated by himself: but

---

1 A rhetorical exaggeration. Augustus never went to Germany at all. So far as we know, he only twice went to Gaul, in B.C. 16 and 8. In the latter year Augustus was 54; Tiberius was now 56.
if they were to fout their Emperor, what resource was left?  

For all that, however, he made as though he were always on the point of starting; he selected his staff, collected his baggage, and had ships made ready; then pleading various excuses of weather, business, and what not, he hoodwinked the shrewdest for a time; the populace for a while longer; longest of all, the Provinces.

Meanwhile Germanicus had collected his army, and had everything ready for taking vengeance upon the rebels. Thinking, nevertheless, that he should still give them time to take the matter into their own hands, according to the example lately set, he sent on a letter to Caecina, informing him of his approach with a strong force, and announcing that unless the guilty were punished before he came, he would put all indiscriminately to the sword. This despatch Caecina read privately to the eagle- and standard-bearers, and to the best affected among the men, urging them to save the honour of the corps as well as their own lives. In time of peace, he remarked, cases are judged upon their merits; when it comes to fighting, innocent and guilty fall alike.

These men sounded those whom they thought the likeliest; and having satisfied themselves that the majority were loyal, fixed a time, at the suggestion of the Legate, for falling upon the most obnoxious and prominent agitators. At a given signal, they burst into their tents, and cut them down unawares, none and resolves not to quit Rome.

1 The reader will doubtless be of opinion that the reasons ascribed to Tiberius for not going in person to quell the mutiny are convincing, even as stated by Tacitus. The historian clearly intends us to take the opposite view; and this is one of many cases in which Tacitus states fairly the view opposed to his own. So with the speech of Asinius Gallus, ii. 33.

2 See n. on chap. 39, 7.
but those in the secret knowing how the slaughter had begun, or where it was to end.

Never was there a conflict in any civil war like this. There was no battle; there were no opposing camps: men who had messed together by day, and slept together at night, rose out of the same beds, divided themselves into sides, and fell upon each other. The shouts, the wounds, and the blood, every one could see or hear; but no cause for it could be seen: chance ruled all. Some loyal men were slain with the rest; for the worst offenders had taken up their arms on discovering against whom the attack was aimed. There was no Legate, no Tribune, to control; every man had free license to glut his vengeance to the full. Germanicus entered the camp soon afterwards; and declaring, with many tears, that this was a massacre, and no remedy, he ordered the bodies to be burned.

The minds of the soldiers being still set on blood, a longing seized them to march against the enemy as an atonement for their madness; as though there were no other way to appease the spirits of their comrades than to expose their guilty breasts to honourable wounds. Falling in with their ardour, Germanicus threw a bridge across the Rhine, and passed a force of twelve thousand legionaries over the river, together with twenty-six cohorts and eight squadrons of the allies, who had never wavered in their allegiance.

The Germans were not far off. They had rejoiced to see our attention taken up, first by the holiday on the death of Augustus, and afterwards by the mutiny. A rapid march brought Germanicus to the Caesian Rhine was crossed near Xanten, and the Lippe. The times, on which was
forest, where he crossed the lines laid out by Tiberius and encamped upon the works, his front and his rear protected by entrenchments, his flanks by barricades of trees. He had next to traverse a dense forest country, having two routes to choose from—one the shorter and usual route, the other more difficult and unfrequented, and for that reason unguarded by the enemy. Selecting the longer of the two, he pushed on with all speed; for his scouts had brought word that the Germans were to hold a festival that night, with games and banqueting. Caecina was sent on with some light cohorts to clear a way through the forest; the legions followed at some little distance. A bright starry night favoured the enterprise. On reaching the Marsian villages, he drew his posts all round them. The enemy were already in bed, or sprawling upon the tables, suspecting no danger; there were no sentries set in front; all was carelessness and confusion: for they had no thought of battle, and even such quiet as they were enjoying was but the feeble and relaxed repose of drunkenness.

To extend the area of his ravages, Germanicus divided his eager troops into four columns, and laid waste fifty miles of country with fire and sword. No pity was shewed to either age or sex. Things sacred and profane alike—even the most famous temple of the tribe, that of the Goddess called Tamfana—were levelled to the ground; and as our men had fallen on the enemy when half-asleep, unarmed or dispersed, they had sustained no loss.

1 The position of this tribe, or confederation of tribes, is not exactly known. Nipp. places them between the Lippe and the Ruhr. Strabo (who lived till about A.D. 24) and Tacitus speak of them as an important tribe; they are not heard of later.

2 The word templum in Latin does not necessarily denote a building, but only a spot consecrated by augurs. The Germans worshipped in consecrated ground; they had no temples.
The news of this massacre roused the Bructeri, the Tubantes, and the Usipetes, who beset the forest passes by which the army had to return. Apprised of this, Germanicus arranged his retreat alike for marching and for fighting. The auxiliary cohorts, with part of the cavalry, led the way; then came the 1st legion. In the middle was the baggage, guarded on the left flank by the 21st, on the right by the 5th legions; the 20th protected the rear, and behind came the rest of the allies.

The enemy bided their time till the force was stretching out through the pass; then making feint attacks upon the front and flanks, they fell with their full force upon the rear. The light cohorts were being thrown into confusion by the dense masses of the Germans, when Germanicus rode up to the 20th:—Now is the time, he shouted, to wipe out all memory of the mutiny! Forward! quick forward! and turn your shame into glory! Inflamed by these words, the 20th burst through the enemy’s line with one dash, and drove them back with great slaughter into the open; at the same moment the van emerged from the pass, and threw up entrenchments for a camp. From this point onward the march was undisturbed. Rendered confident by their recent successes, and forgetting past occurrences, the troops settled down into their winter quarters.

1 The Bructeri were to the N. of the Marsi, in the angle between the Lippe (flowing W. into the Rhine) and the Ems (flowing N. into the North Sea). To the W. of the Marsi, and nearer the Rhine, were the Tencteri; S. of these, and closely united to them, came the Usipetes; then the Chatti. The Tubantes were to the E. of these last tribes, and S. of the River Ruhr, occupying probably the province of Arnsberg.

2 The word saltus is used by Tacitus of any wooded, hilly, or uncultivated country; it is sometimes ‘a pass.’ In this chapter the point beset by the Germans is twice called saltus, once silvae. The two words are frequently coupled: silvas saltusque penetrantibus ( Agr. 34, 2 ); non campos modo . . . sed silvas et saltus ( ii. 24, 3 ); per angustias saltuum ( iv. 47, 2 ). The Hercynian and Teutoburgian forests are called respectively Hercynius saltus ( Germ. 30, 1 ); and Teutoburgiensis saltus ( i. 60, 5 ). See chap. 63, 2.
52. 1 The news of these events caused Tiberius no less anxiety than satisfaction. He was pleased that the mutiny had been got under; but he was annoyed that Germanicus should have gained the goodwill of the soldiers by gifts of money, and by shortening the term of service. He was jealous also of his military success. Nevertheless, he brought his exploits before the notice of the Senate, and said much in his praise, though in language too carefully studied for effect to create an impression of sincerity. His satisfaction with Drusus, and at the ending of the movement in Illyricum, he expressed in fewer words; but they were more earnest and sincere. And he extended to the Pannonian army all the concessions which Germanicus had granted to the other.

53. 1 This same year witnessed the death of Julia,\(^1\) whose profligate conduct had caused her father Augustus to confine her, first in the island of Pandateria,\(^2\) and afterwards in the town of Rhegium, on the Sicilian straits. Married to Tiberius when her sons Gaius and Lucius were yet alive, she had looked down upon him as her inferior;\(^3\) and it was her conduct that was the real reason of his retirement to Rhodes. On succeeding to the empire, he left her in

---

\(^1\) Julia was the only child of Augustus, to whom her notoriously profligate life was a bitter trial. She had been married (1) to Marcellus in B.C. 23, when she was fourteen years of age; (2) to Agrippa in B.C. 21; and (3) to Tiberius in B.C. 12. Her children (by Agrippa) were the young Caesars Gaius and Lucius, Agrippina (wife of Germanicus), Julia, and Agrippa Postumus. When, in B.C. 3, Augustus announced her misconduct and its punishment to the Senate, he was so stunned with shame that he shut himself up for a time, and even thought of putting her to death. Her daughter Julia was as bad or worse. These two, and his grandson Postumus, he used to call 'his three sores and cancers,' and would repeat the Homeric line, 'O that I had never wedded, or could childless die' (Suet., Oct. 65; Dio, lv. 10, 12). See also iii. 24, 2. In vi. 51, 3, Tacitus says that the misconduct of Julia was the greatest difficulty in the life of Tiberius: *sed maxime in lubrico egit accepta in matrimonium Julia.*

\(^2\) A small rocky island in the bay of Naples, now Vandotena. Julia remained there for five years; and when permitted to go to Rhegium, she was still kept, by order of Tiberius, under the strictest surveillance.

\(^3\) Noble as the blood of the Claudii was, Julia could boast that she was of the Julian gens, and mother of the heirs apparent to the succession.
dishonoured banishment. With the death of Agrippa Postumus, her last hope was gone; and Tiberius suffered her to die a lingering death by waste and starvation, believing that her end would pass unnoticed from the distance of her place of exile.

For a similar offence, Sempronius Gracchus was brought to punishment. Born of a noble family, shrewd of understanding, and with considerable though ill-directed eloquence, Gracchus had carried on an intrigue with Julia when she was the wife of Marcus Agrippa. Not satisfied with that, he persisted in the amour after her marriage to Tiberius; he fanned her feelings of defiance and antipathy towards her husband; and he was supposed to have been the composer of a certain letter from Julia to her father, filled with abuse of Tiberius. Banished on that account to Cercina, an island off the coast of Africa, he languished there in exile for fourteen years. Soldiers were now sent to put him to death. They found him on a headland, prepared for the worst. On their arrival, he asked for a short respite to write his last instructions to his wife Alliaria. He then offered his neck to the blow; and, unworthy as his life had been, he perished at least with a fortitude worthy of the Sempronian name. According to another account, the soldiers were not sent from Rome, but by Lucius Asprenas, Proconsul of Africa, under instructions from Tiberius, who vainly hoped to throw upon Asprenas the odium of the crime.

This same year witnessed the institution of a new religious worship by the addition to the existing

---

\(^{1}\) Cercina, now Kerkenna, a group of small islands in the Lesser Syris (Gulf of Cabes) off the E. coast of Tunis.

\(^{2}\) Another rumour recorded, but not vouched for.
priesthoods of the Augustan Brotherhood—a body framed after the model of the Titian Brothers, instituted by Titus Tatius for the conservation of Sabine rites. A body of twenty-one ‘Companions’ was chosen by lot from the principal men in the state; to these were added Tiberius, Drusus, Claudius, and Germanicus.

At the celebration of the Augustan games, then held for the first time, a disturbance took place owing to some quarrel between the actors. Augustus had patronized such performances out of regard for the passion of Maecenas for Bathyllus; he was himself also fond of entertainments of this kind, and it was part of his popular policy to share in the amusements of the people. Very different was the temperament of Tiberius; but as the people had been indulged for so many years, he did not venture as yet to turn their tastes in a more serious direction.

1 The Sodales Augustales, whose institution as a dignified priestly College for the worship of Augustus and the Gens Julia is here recorded, must be carefully distinguished from the Order of Augustales in the provinces. These last, also for the worship of Augustus, formed an inferior order of priests recruited from freedmen, to which class membership of the Order became an object of ambition. They were presided over by a body of six in each locality, appointed for one year, called Sexviri or Sexviri. Inscriptions show that these officers were expected, or required, to contribute to works of public utility (Rushforth, pp. 63–66; Marq., Staatsv. iii. p. 443; and Bouché-Leclercq, Man. d. Inst. Rom., p. 558 fOLL.).

2 There were no less than three sets of games held in honour of Augustus: (1) Ludi Circenses, inst. in B.C. 13; (2) Augustalia, first held on Oct. 12, B.C. 9, to celebrate Augustus' return to Rome: after A.D. 14 they lasted for ten days, Oct. 3–12; (3) Ludi Palatini, private games held in the palace, and lasting ultimately for five days, Jan. 17–19 and 21–22 (Marq., vol. xiii. pp. 215–29. French trans.).

8 The excesses committed by the supporters of rival actors often called for public notice. See chap. 77; iv. 14. 4; xiii. 25. 4. Augustus caused the actors Stephanion and Hylas to be flogged in three theatres for impropriety; and exiled Pyladès, the rival of Bathyllus, for pointing out with his finger a spectator who had hissed him (Suet., Oct. 45).

6 Cicero complains bitterly of the intolerable burden and waste of time imposed on public men by having to attend games to please the public (ad Fam. vii. 1). Caesar gave offence by reading and writing despatches while games were going on, an error which Augustus took care to avoid (Suet. 45). The saying of Sir George Cornwall Lewis that ‘life would be tolerable but for its pleasures’ is well known.

8 Pliny says of Tiberius, tristissimus, ut constat, hominum, H. N. xxviii. 2, 5. See nn. on chap. 77. 5.
A.D. 15. CONSULS DRUSUS CAESAR AND C. NORBANUS FLACCUS.

A Triumph was now voted to Germanicus, although the war had not yet come to an end. While preparing to put forth his whole strength in summer, he made in early spring a sudden expedition against the Chatti. It was hoped that the enemy would be divided between Arminius and Segestes, two chiefs equally notorious, the one for his treachery, the other for good faith towards us. Arminius was the firebrand of Germany. Segestes had often warned Varus of the coming rebellion; and especially at that last banquet before the battle, he had advised Varus to throw Arminius, himself, and the other chiefs into chains:—*The multitude*, he said, *would do nothing without their chiefs*; *Varus would thus gain time to separate the innocent from the guilty*. But Varus met his fate at the hands of Arminius; and though Segestes was dragged into the war by the general feeling of the tribe, his quarrel with Arminius remained, fed by private reasons of his own: for Arminius had carried off his daughter, though already betrothed to another man. Hence Segestes hated his son-in-law; the two fathers-in-law were at open variance: and thus the ties that are wont to draw friendship closer between friends, did but add fresh fuel to their animosity.

---

1 A powerful tribe, enemies of the Cheruscì. They occupied modern Nassau and the two provinces of Hesse on the right bank of the Rhine. Cherusan prince, the great hero of Germany and destroyer of Varus; his name survives in the modern German name *Hermann*. He seems to have served in the Roman army (ii. 10, 3), and to have received the Roman citizenship (Vell. ii. 118, 2).
56. 1 Germanicus accordingly gave Caecina a force of four legions, five thousand auxiliaries, and some levies newly raised from German tribes settled on this side of the Rhine. He himself, at the head of a like number of legions and twice the number of allies, established a fort on Mount Taunus 1 on the ruins of one built by his father, and then hurried on with a light force against the Chatti, leaving Lucius Apronius to secure the roads and bridges. A long drought, unusual in that country, had enabled him to push on without check across dry or half-empty water-courses; and he feared for rain and floods on his return. And so unexpectedly did he fall on the enemy, that he captured at once, or killed, all who were helpless through age or sex. The younger men swam across the river Adrana, 2 and attempted to stop the Romans from building a bridge; but they were driven off by engines and arrows. After a vain attempt to arrange terms of peace, a few came over to Germanicus, the rest abandoned their hamlets and townships, and dispersed amongst the forests.

6 Germanicus burned their chief town Mattium, 3 ravaged the open country, and then made for the Rhine; the enemy not daring to harass his retreat as it is their wont to do when they fall back through cunning rather than through fear. The Cherusci 4 had intended to assist the Chatti; but they were alarmed

---

1 A range of hills still bearing the name of Taunus, running parallel to the right bank of the Rhine, and N. from the Main. The establishment of this fort on Mt. Taunus by Drusus, the castellum on the Lippe (ii. 7, 1), the pontes longi near the Ems (i. 63, 5), the Fossa Drusiana (ii. 8, 1), and the Fort Aliso (ii. 7, 5) all show that the Romans had made considerable progress towards the permanent occupation of Germany.

2 The modern Eder, which runs N.E. into the Fulda, a tributary of the Weser.

3 The ideas of Tacitus on the geography of Germany are of the vaguest kind.

4 Apparently N. of the Eder. But the Mattiaci are subsequently found in the country about Wiesbaden, S. of the Taunus range.

4 The Cherusci appear in Tacitus as the most powerful of the German tribes, authors of the disaster to Varus. Their country lay between the Weser and the Elbe, to the N.E. of the Chatti, by whom at a later period they were overcome.
by Caecina’s rapid movements. The Marsi\(^1\) ventured to engage him, but were defeated and driven off.

Soon afterwards, envoys arrived from Segestes, \(^{57}\) asking for protection against his own countrymen who were besieging him in force. Arminius, as the advocate of war, was the more popular of the two leaders; for among barbarians, the more reckless a man’s daring, the more will he be trusted and preferred in troublous times. Segestes had included his son Segimundus among the envoys; but the youth hesitated, remembering his own misconduct. For in the year of the German rebellion, having been appointed priest at the altar of the Ubii,\(^8\) he had rent his sacred fillets, and gone over to the insurgents. Nevertheless, in the hope of mercy from the Romans, he now presented himself with his father’s message; he was received kindly, and sent under escort to the Gallic side of the river.\(^3\)

Germanicus thought it worth while to retrace his journey and is rescued by Germanicus.

\(^1\) For the Marsi, see n. on chap. 50, 6.

\(^2\) This altar at the head-quarters of the Ubii—the modern Cologne—was doubtless set up for the worship of Augustus, probably conjoined with that of Rome. This worship, as has been proved by inscriptions, was no idle piece of court flattery, but was deliberately instituted by Augustus as a means of creating a sense of loyalty and imperial unity among the heterogeneous populations which composed the Empire. With his rare sense of state-craft, he at once felt the want and discovered the means of supplying it, systematising throughout the Empire a practice which had its origin in the Hellenised East. The worship paid in the Eastern cities to Alexander and his successors was naturally transferred to Rome, the first example being set by the people of Smyrna, who erected a temple to the City of Rome, B.C. 195 (iv. 56, i.). Proconsul had been honoured in the same way (Suet. Oct. 32); and Augustus permitted and organised a similar worship to himself and Rome in conjunction (Suet. Oct. 32). Such altars or temples were set up in the chief towns of provinces, with a regular hierarchy to conduct the worship. The office of high priest, or flamen, was one of great dignity, and was held by distinguished provincials. The first known instance in the West is that of the altar set up for the three Gaulish provinces in B.C. 12 at Lugdunum, where an inscription describes a Celt, with a Latinised name, as being sacerdos Romae et Augusti ad aram quae est ad Confluentem. The altar of the Ubii was one of the same kind; Segimundus, son of the distinguished Segestes, had been appointed priest, as a symbol and pledge of the Romanisation of Germany. His repudiation of the office and his flight were therefore a proclamation of revolt from Rome, and a declaration of national independence. See Dio, li. 20, 7; Rushforth, pp. 18, 47, 51; and Do Inscr. Nos. 16, 17, 35. Tacitus seems to have had no idea of the extent and real bearing of this provincial worship.

\(^3\) i.e. the part of the old German province on the left bank of the river.
steps; he attacked the besieging force, and rescued Segestes with a large number of his relatives and dependents, including some women of high rank. Among these was the daughter of Segestes, now wife of Arminius, who displayed a spirit more akin to that of her husband than to that of her father: no tear betokened weakness, no entreaty escaped her lips, as she stood with her hands folded on her bosom, and her eyes cast down upon her gravid womb. Some trophies also of the Varian disaster were brought in, which had been given as plunder to some of those now surrendering; and there was Segestes himself, a man of imposing mien, undismayed in the consciousness that he had been true to Rome.

58. He spoke as follows:—This day is not the first on which I have shewn myself true and faithful to the Roman people. From the moment when the Divine Augustus gave me the citizenship, I have chosen my friends and enemies alike in accordance with your needs; not from hatred of my own country—for traitors are abhorred even by those whose cause they espouse—but because I held that the interests of Roman and German were one, and was for peace rather than for war. I therefore denounced Arminius—Arminius, the ravisher of my daughter, the violator of your treaty—to Varus, the commander of your army. Put off by his supineness, and knowing that the law would be no protection, I implored him to put me into bonds, along with Arminius and his accomplices. O let that night be my witness! Would that it had been my last! What followed can be better lamented than excused. But I put Arminius in chains; he and his faction did the like.

1 Not only individuals, but whole communities, might receive the gift of the franchise direct from the emperor, usually as a reward for military services, or for aid afforded to Rome. See chap. 58, 2; vi. 37, 4; and Hist. i. 8, 3.
to me: and now that, for the first time, I approach your person, I declare that I prefer the old state to the new, a state of peace to a state of unrest. I look for no reward; I ask only to clear myself from the charge of treachery: I come as a fit mediator for the German people, if haply they may prefer penitence to perdition. For the youth and error of my son, I crave forgiveness: my daughter, I avow, has been brought hither against her will. Which fact shall weigh most with you—that she is bearing a child to Arminius, or that she is a child of mine—it will be your part to consider.

Germanicus made a gracious reply. He promised to spare the children and the kindred of Segestes; to Segestes himself he offered a retreat in the old province. He then withdrew his army. By desire of Tiberius, he received the title of 'Imperator.' The wife of Arminius gave birth to a son. The boy was brought up at Ravenna; how he was befooled by fortune and undone, shall be related in the proper place.

The news of the surrender of Segestes, and of his favourable reception, was as welcome to those who desired peace, as it was the reverse to those who wished for war. At all times violent in temper, Arminius was driven to frenzy by the capture of his wife, and the thought of her unborn child condemned to slavery. He flew hither and thither among the Cherusci, calling them to arms against Segestes and against Caesar. To arms! To arms! he cried, not sparing taunts like these:—A precious father this! A

---

1 See n. on chap. 3, x. This hon. title (twice borne by Germanicus) was apparently no longer conferred by the soldiers, as of old, on the field of battle, but by the senate on the motion of the Emperor (auctore Tiberio). See iii. 74, 6.

2 The circumstances referred to are unknown, and the translation therefore is uncertain. Conflcitus does not necessarily imply a fatal or final issue. For the meaning of the word ludibrium, see n. on iii. 18, 6.
mighty Imperator, a gallant army, to carry off one weak
woman with all their hosts! Before himself, three legions,
three Legates, had hit the dust; he did not make war by
treachery, nor upon pregnant women, but in open fight,
and against armed men. The Roman standards were
still there to see, in the German groves, hung up to
the Gods of his fatherland. Let Segestes take up his abode on
the conquered bank of the river; let him again make his
son a priest, for the worship of a man: but that the
rods, the axes, and the toga should have been seen between
the Elbe and the Rhine—that no German would forgive.

Other nations might know naught of Roman rule, might
not have felt her punishments or known her tributes; but
now that they had put these things from them: now that
the new-made Divinity, Augustus, and his own chosen
Tiberius, had passed discomfited away, let them not quail
before an untried stripling and a mutinous army. If
they preferred their fatherland, their fathers and their
fathers' ways, to living under masters in new-fangled
colonies, let them follow Arminius to liberty and to glory,
rather than Segestes to shame and slavery!

60. 1 These words roused not the Cherusci only, but
also the adjacent tribes; and Inguiomerus, the uncle
of Arminius, a man long in repute among the
Romans, went over to his side. Alarmed by this
defection, and wishing to conduct the campaign on
more than one line of operations, Germanicus de-
spatched Caecina with forty cohorts 2 through the
country of the Bructerii up to the river Ems, to effect
a diversion, while the Prefect Pedo led the cavalry

---

1 The terminations of the words sacerdotium hominum in the MS. are
not quite legible; I follow Halm's reading and interpretation. In any case
the words which follow make the mean-
ing plain.

2 i.e. the four legions (each legion
had 10 cohorts) which constituted the
Lower Army. These were the 1st,
the 5th, the 20th, and the 21st (chap.
64).
through the territory of the Frisii. Germanicus himself put his four legions on board ship, and conducted them along the lakes; the whole force, infantry, cavalry and fleet, effecting a junction on the river at an appointed spot. The Chauci, offering assistance, were permitted to join in the expedition. The Bructeri set fire to their own villages; whereupon Stertinius was sent off with a light force, and dispersed them with much slaughter. Amid the plunder he found the eagle of the 19th legion, lost with Varus. The army was then marched to the furthest borders of the Bructeri, laying waste all the country between the Ems and the Lippe.

As the army was now not far from the Teutoburgian Forest, in which the remains of Varus and his legions were said to be lying still unburied, a desire sprang up in the mind of Germanicus to pay the last rites to that General and his soldiers; and the whole army was moved to pity at the thought of fallen friends and kinsmen, of the calamities of war, and the chances of human life. Caecina was sent on to reconnoitre the recesses of the forest, and to lay down bridges and causeways over swampy or treacherous ground.

1 The words might equally well mean 'the before-mentioned river,' i.e. the Ems.
2 The Saltus Teutoburgiensis is mentioned only in this passage. The scene of the terrible disaster to Varus must be looked for somewhere in the huge district enclosed by the Lippe on the S., the Ems on the W., and the Weser on the E. Any spot within that district fulfilling the necessary conditions of mountain, wood, and marsh, will satisfy the documentary evidence. Some have looked for it on the S. side of the Osnong hills; but with the further evidence afforded by coins, etc., Mommisen fixes the spot close to the village of Barenau, just N. of a line drawn from Engter to Venne, S. of the Grosses Moor. He identifies the saltus Teutoburgiensis, not as modern maps do, with the Osnong hills S. of Osnabrück and the Lippischer Wald, but with the range N. of Osnabrück, stretching from Porta Westphalica on the Weser, close to Minden, to Bramsche on the Haase ('Die Ortlichkeit der Varusschlacht,' p. 56. Berlin, 1885). Popular sentiment, however, has consecrated the former site. In the year 1875 a colossal memorial to Arminius, as the champion of German Liberty (known as the Hermanns-Denkmal), was inaugurated on the Grotenburg, a hill 370 feet high, about 3 miles to the SW. of Detmold, in the midst of the so-called Teutoburgian Forest.
The army then advanced to the sad spot, so full of ghastly sights and memories. Here was the place where Varus first pitched his camp, with its wide circuit, and its head-quarters marked out, shewing that three legions had been at work; further on, the half-completed rampart, the shallow ditch, indicated where the crippled remnant had made a stand. In the middle of the plain lay the whitening bones, scattered about, or in heaps, just as the men had fallen: some running away, some still holding their ground. Fragments of weapons, and limbs of horses, were lying about; human heads also, stuck on to trunks of trees. In groves close by were the barbarian altars on which the Tribunes and centurions of the first rank had been butchered. And survivors of the disaster, who had escaped from the battlefield or from captivity, told how the Legates had fallen here, how the eagles had been captured there; showed the spot where Varus had received his first wound, and where the unhappy man, with his own hand, had dealt himself the fatal blow; pointed out the mound from which Arminius had harangued; told how many gibbets were set up, what trenches dug for the captured: and with what contumely Arminius had treated the standards and the eagles.

62. And so six years after the event, the whole of the Roman army there present proceeded in sorrow and in anger, and with an indignation rising higher and higher against the enemy, to bury the bones of the three legions. None could tell whether he were laying the remains of friend or stranger in the earth; all alike were treated as kinsfolk and of the same

1 i.e. built up to only half the usual height, the ditch being correspondingly shallow.
blood. Germanicus himself, as a grateful office to the dead, and as sharer in the present sorrow, laid the first sod of the mound. But this act displeased Tiberius; whether because he took everything that Germanicus did in evil part, or because he thought that the sight of their slain and unburied companions would unnerve the soldiers for battle, and increase their terror of the enemy: perhaps, also, he thought that an Imperator who held the Augurship and other ancient priesthoods should not have handled things pertaining to the dead.

Arminius retired into a trackless country; but Germanicus followed him up, and as soon as he came within striking distance, ordered his cavalry to move out and seize a level space occupied by the enemy. Arminius bid his men draw close together, and move towards the woods; then turning suddenly round, he gave to a force which he had concealed inside the forest the signal to charge. This unlooked-for attack threw our horse into confusion; the confusion was increased by some cohorts sent up as a support, who were pushed back by the retreating cavalry; and both were being driven into a marsh where the victorious enemy would have had the advantage from his knowledge of the ground, when Germanicus led out his main force in battle order. This struck terror into the enemy, and restored the confidence of our men: the armies withdrew without advantage to either side.

Soon after this the army returned to the Ems, whence the legions were taken back, as they had

---

1 It was a special impiety for members of priestly colleges to touch the dead; see note of Furr. Suetonius says of Germanicus on this occasion Caesarum reliquias... colligere sua manu et comportare primus aggressus est (Cal. 3).

2 The words sialus and saltus are here again used convertible. See n. on chap. 52, 4.
come, by sea. Part of the cavalry were ordered to make for the Rhine along the coast;\(^1\) while Caecina, who was to lead back his own division by the usual route, was warned to lose no time in getting over the Long Bridges\(^2\)—a narrow causeway traversing a huge morass, constructed some time before by Lucius Domitius.\(^3\) Except on the causeway itself, the ground was boggy, consisting of a deep sticky clay, intersected by water-courses. The marsh was surrounded by gently-rising wooded slopes; these were now occupied by the troops of Arminius, who by means of short cuts and rapid marches had outstripped the heavily-laden and heavily-armed Romans. Doubting in what way he could at one and the same time repair the worn-out parts of the causeway and beat off the enemy, Caecina determined to lay out his camp where he was, telling off some to work while the rest were to give battle.

64. 1 The barbarians made every effort to break through the protecting force, and get at the working party. They attacked both in front and flank; the cries of the workers and the fighters mingled together. Every condition was against the Romans. The bog was so deep that they could neither stand firm where they were, nor move on without slipping. They were weighed down by their breastplates; they could not hurl their heavy javelins from amid the water. The

---

1 Germanicus had brought the four legions to the mouth of the Ems by sea; the cavalry returned by land (chap. 60, 3).
2 Site unknown. Nipp. states that remains of such causeways laid with trunks of trees have been found in the Burtanger marshes. If so, the cavalry must have accompanied the legions to their point of embarkation near the mouth of the Weser.
3 L. Domitius Ahenobarbus, grand-

father of the Emperor Nero. He married the elder (Tacitus wrongly says the younger) of the two daughters borne by Octavia to Antony. When in command on the Danube, he had penetrated into Germany further than any of his predecessors, crossing the upper Elbe (iv. 44, 3; Dio, lv. 100, 2). The 'bridges' here mentioned must have been laid down at a later period, when Domitius was in command in Lower Germany, B.C. 2.
Cherusci, on the other hand, were used to fighting in swamps; their great stature and their enormous spears gave them a long reach in striking. The legions were beginning to waver when night saved them from defeat. The Germans lost all sense of fatigue in their success; late as it was, they took no rest, but at once set to work to turn on to the low ground all the water rising in the heights above. In this way the ground was flooded, the works already finished were submerged, and the labour of the soldiers had to begin all over again.

But Caecina was not a man to be daunted. He had seen forty years of service, either in, or under, command, and had had experience of every kind of fortune, good and bad. On forecasting the situation, he saw that his only chance was to confine the enemy to the woods until his own wounded, and the heavier part of his train, should get well forward; for between the marsh and the hills there was enough level ground on which to draw up a line of moderate depth. For the right flank he selected the 5th legion, the 21st for the left; the 1st were to lead the van, the 20th to close the rear.

Both armies passed a disturbed night, from different causes. The barbarians feasted, and filled the valley below and the woods above with their savage cries and songs of triumph. In the Roman camp the fires were kept low; the men muttered broken sentences as they lay scattered along the entrenchments, or moved from one tent to another, sleepless rather than watchful. The general himself had an alarming dream. He thought he saw and heard Quintilius Varus, stained with blood, rising out of the swamp and calling him: but he would not
go: and when Varus held out to him his hand, he thrust it back.

At daybreak, the legions told off to guard the flanks, whether from terror or in disobedience, left their station, and hurriedly took up a position on the ground beyond the swamp. This movement left the way open for Arminius; but instead of attacking at once, he waited until he saw the baggage stuck fast in the mud or in the ditches, and the men in disorder round it: each taken up with himself, as might be expected in such a case, and paying no attention to the word of command. He then ordered the Germans to fall on, shouting:—Behold another Varus! Behold the legions caught in the same trap once more!

With these words, at the head of a picked corps, he cut the Roman line in two, striking chiefly at the horses. Slipping in their own blood or on the oozy ground, the horses threw their riders, overturned all in their way, and trampled upon those that were down. The fight waxed hottest round the eagles, which could neither be held up against the storm of darts, nor planted in the boggy ground. Caecina fell, his horse killed under him, while cheering his men on; and he would have been surrounded had not the 1st legion thrown themselves in the way. Happily, the greed for plunder drew the enemy away from slaughter; and by the time evening came on, the legions struggled out on to open and solid ground.

But even then their troubles were not over. There were earthworks to be put up, and turf to be fetched; and most of their tools for digging and for cutting had been lost. There were no tents for the maniples, no appliances for the wounded; and as they divided among themselves their rations fouled
with mire or blood, they bewailed the darkness that seemed like the darkness of death, and the day that was to be the last for so many thousands of men.

It chanced that a horse broke his tether, and got loose; terrified by the outcry, he knocked down some who ran in his way. This started a panic: persuaded that the Germans had broken in, all rushed to the gates, especially the Porta Decumana, which as being furthest from the enemy was the safest for escape. Discovering that there was no cause for fright, and having tried commands, entreaties, and even force, all in vain, to keep back the men, Caecina threw himself down before the gate; and thus at last, by working on the men’s compassion, who would have to pass over the Legate’s body, blocked the way. The Tribunes and centurions at the same time explained that it was a false alarm.

Caecina then collected the men at head-quarters, and bidding them listen in silence to what he had to say, warned them of the gravity of the situation. Their one hope, he said, was in their arms; but they must use discretion also. They must remain behind their defences until the enemy should come close up in the hope of storming them. Let them then dash out all along the line; that one effort would bring them to the Rhine. Were they to fly, they would have forests as endless, and bogs still deeper, before them, and an enemy as fierce as ever; if they conquered, honour and glory would be theirs. He spoke of their dear ones at home, of the honours they had won in war; but not one word

1 There were four gates to a Roman camp. The Porta Decumana was that furthest from the enemy; the gate nearest to the enemy and to the Praetorium, the head-quarters of the general, was the Porta Praetoria. The other two gates, right and left, were called Porta Principalis Dextra (from the main cross-road, Principia) and Porta Principalis Sinistra respectively. For the vías of the camp, see n. on chap. 39. 5, and ii. 13, 1.
about their disasters. He then distributed the horses of the Legates and Tribunes, beginning with his own, among the best fighting men of the army, regardless of rank; the mounted men were to begin the attack, and the infantry to back it up.

68. 1 Not less disturbed was the night passed by the Germans, under the influence of hope and greed, and of opposing counsels among the leaders. Arminius advised that they should let the Romans move out, and then close round them, as before, on marshy and difficult ground. Inguiomerus proposed a bolder course, such as barbarians love, and advised a general assault upon the Roman lines. *These could easily be stormed*, he said; *they would thus take more prisoners, and get their plunder undamaged.*

2 At daybreak, accordingly, they filled in the ditches, threw hurdles across them, and were proceeding to lay hold of the top of the breastwork, where only a few and seemingly panic-stricken soldiers were to be seen. But at the moment when they were struggling to get over, the signal was given to the cohorts; the horns and bugles¹ blew, and the Romans, sallying forth with a shout, threw themselves upon the rear of the Germans. *It was no case now,* they tauntingly cried, *of woods and marshes, but of a fair field and fair chances.* The enemy, who had looked for the easy destruction of a few half-armed men, were taken aback by the blare of trumpets and the flash of arms, which were all the more telling because unexpected; and, being as resourceless in reverse as they are impetuous in success,² they gave way. Arminius escaped from the field unhurt;

¹ See n. on ii. 81, 2.
² Cp. Oman’s ‘Seven Roman Statesmen,’ p. 313, of the Gauls: their gallant but unstable hordes were ‘more than men at the first onslaught, less than women after a repulse.’
Inguiomorus, severely wounded. The slaughter of the multitude went on till fury and daylight failed. Not till night-fall did the legions return; and though suffering not less than before from hunger, and from the pain of their wounds still more, their victory salved their wounds, and supplied them with strength, food, and everything.

Meanwhile a rumour had got abroad that the army had been cut off, and that the Germans were on the march for Gaul. Some, in terror, were cowardly enough to suggest that the bridge over the Rhine should be broken down; but Agrippina would not hear of it. All through those days that intrepid woman took upon herself the duties of a general. She distributed clothes to such as needed them, and medicaments to the wounded. Gaius Plinius, the historian of the German wars, relates how she took her stand at the head of the bridge, bestowing praise and thanks on the returning legions.

Such conduct made a deep impression on the mind of Tiberius. These, he thought, were no simple-minded attentions; it was not to meet a foreign enemy that the soldiers were being thus courted. What was there left for the General to do, if his wife inspected the maniples, presented herself before the standards, tried her hand at largesses, and in the most artless manner conceivable paraded the General's son about the camp in the dress of a private soldier, delighting to hear him called by the appellation of 'Little Caesar in Boots'?

---

1 The bridge thrown over the Rhine by Germanicus at the beginning of the campaign (chap. 49, 6).
2 In other cases than that of his favourite Agrippina, Tacitus had no tolerance for women interfering in military matters. See the case of Pannina, ii. 55, 5, and iii. 35, 2-4, where Cæcina obviously expresses the historian's own sentiments.
3 This work on the German War by the elder Pliny, now lost, is referred to by his nephew the younger Pliny (Epp. iii. 5, 4).
4 The nickname or pet name 'Caligula,' by which posterity has chosen to designate the Emperor Gaius, is a diminutive of caliga, the heavy shoe or sandal worn by soldiers. Hence private soldiers are called caligati.
Agrippina had become a personage of more consequence in the army than either General or Legates: a woman had quelled a mutiny which had not given way before the name of Emperor.

These suspicions were inflamed and aggravated by Sejanus. Knowing full well the temper of Tiberius, he would sow in his mind seeds of hatred for some far-off day, to be treasured up and brought forth with increase.

Meanwhile Germanicus had ordered Publius Vitellius to take back by land two of the legions which he had brought by sea—the 2nd and the 14th—so as to enable the vessels either to float in shoal waters, or ground more lightly when the tide receded. Vitellius at first encountered no difficulties, his way lying across firm ground, or where the tides rose to no great height. Before long, however, the column was caught and buffeted by a violent gale from the north, occurring at the time of the equinox, when the Ocean is most tempestuous. The land was flooded; sea, shore, and fields, all presented one aspect: solid ground and quicksand, deep water and shallow, were indistinguishable. The men were knocked down by the waves and sucked under; baggage, baggage-animals and corpses, floated about and jostled against each other. All distinction of maniples was lost. Some had their breasts above water, some their heads only; sometimes the ground would give way beneath them altogether: they would be thrown this way and that, and go under. Against this watery foe, no words of mutual encouragement availed; rash man and prudent, counsel and haphazard, were all as one: brave man and coward alike were swept along by the fury of the elements.
At last Vitellius struggled up to some higher ground, and his column after him. They passed the night without necessaries, without fire, many of them naked or injured, in a plight as pitiable as that of men in a beleaguered city; nay, such men have the chance of an honourable death open to them, these only of an ignominious end. Daylight and dry land appeared together; and the army made its way to the river [Weser], where Germanicus had arrived with his fleet. The legions were then embarked. A rumour had got abroad that the whole flotilla had been lost; nor did people believe in its safety until they saw Germanicus and his army back again.

By this time Stertinius, who had been sent on to receive the submission of Segimerus, brother of Segestes, had arrived at the city of the Ubi, bringing with him Segimerus and his son, both of whom were pardoned. About Segimerus, there was no difficulty; but there was some hesitation as to the son, as he was reported to have treated the body of Quintilius Varus with insult. The Provinces of Gaul, Spain and Italy vied with one another in making good the losses of the army, each offering what they had in the way of arms, gold, or horses. Germanicus commended their zeal; but accepted only the arms and horses for war purposes, relieving the wants of the soldiers out of his own purse. And wishing to soften the recollection of their suffering by personal kindness, he visited the wounded, and commended them individually for acts of valour. As he examined their wounds, he would appeal to the ambition of one, or to the pride of another, thus strengthening the

1 The MS. gives Visurgis, the Weser, as the name of this river, which is manifestly wrong.
attachment of all to himself by his affability and attention, and restoring their confidence for battle.

72. 1 Triumphal ornaments \(^1\) were voted in this year to Lucius Apronius and Gaius Silius for their services under Germanicus. For himself, Tiberius declined the title of ‘Father of his Country,’ \(^2\) though it was more than once pressed upon him by the people; nor would he accept a proposal voted by the Senate for requiring an oath of obedience to his acts. \(^3\) All human things, he protested, were uncertain: every increase of his honours did but add to the perils of his position.

3 And yet he gained no credit for moderate views, in consequence of his having revived the law against High Treason. That law was known, indeed, by the same name to antiquity; but it was applied to a different class of offences, \(^4\) such as the betrayal of the laws, usually on January rst. After B.C. 45 all magistrates had to swear se nihil contra acta Caesaris facturas: the same oath was strictly exacted by the triumvirs, and under the emperors, when the oath was extended so as (1) to cover the acts not only of the reigning, but of all previous emperors, except such as were specially excluded, as Tiberius and Caligula (Dio, lvii. 18, 3); (2) to be required of senators as well as magistrates. Tiberius expels the senator Aedius Merula quod in acta Divi Augusti non iurasset (iv. 42, 3). This oath is distinct from the general oath of allegiance to the emperor, originally the military oath, taken by the whole people and the provinces (chap. 7, 3), which is called sacramentum in nomen Tiberii (chap. 8, 5).

\(^1\) The ‘triumphal insignia’ or ‘ornaments’ conferred the honour and status of a triumph on a general, and his family after him, without actual celebration. The actual celebration was reserved for members of the imperial family. Under Tiberius, the only triumph was that of Germanicus over the Germans, May 16th, A.D. 17 (ii. 41, 2). The lesser ‘ovation’ was voted in A.D. 19 to Germanicus for his successes in Armenia, and to Drusus for his capture of Maroboduus (ii. 64, 1). Germanicus died before his return home, but Drusus celebrated his ovation on May 28, A.D. 20 (iii. 19, 4).

\(^2\) This hon. title, first granted by acclamation to Cicero in B.C. 63, after the suppression of Catiline (\textit{Roma patrem patriae Ciceronem libera dixit}, Juv. 8, 244), and again in B.C. 45 on Caesar, was formally conferred on Augustus, B.C. 2, by the \textit{senatus et aequi gesto ordi populusque Romanus universus} (Mon. Anc. 6, 45). Tiberius consistently refused the title (ii. 87, 9), as he did the offer of divine honours (iv. 38, 4).

\(^3\) This oath, again, is a relic of republican times, converted to imperial uses. During the last two centuries at least (Liv. xxxi. 50, 7) magistrates entering office had to take an oath to observe the laws, usually on January rst. After B.C. 45 all magistrates had to swear se nihil contra acta Caesaris facturas: the same oath was strictly exacted by the triumvirs, and under the emperors, when the oath was extended so as (1) to cover the acts not only of the reigning, but of all previous emperors, except such as were specially excluded, as Tiberius and Caligula (Dio, lvii. 18, 3); (2) to be required of senators as well as magistrates. Tiberius expels the senator Aedius Merula quod in acta Divi Augusti non iurasset (iv. 42, 3). This oath is distinct from the general oath of allegiance to the emperor, originally the military oath, taken by the whole people and the provinces (chap. 7, 3), which is called sacramentum in nomen Tiberii (chap. 8, 5).

\(^4\) In nothing did the substitution of the emperor and his person for the commonwealth as a whole, tell more directly and grievously on the persons and fortunes of Roman citizens, than in the new application of the law of \textit{Majestas}. By a disastrous application of the principle L’Etat c’est moi, the emperors were first regarded as representatives of, then as identified with, the state as a whole. Whatever by ancient law had been an offence against the Roman people became now a personal
of an army, the stirring up of sedition among the people, or to any act of public misconduct by which the 'Majesty of the Roman people' might be impaired: deeds were impugned, words passed unpunished. Augustus, for the first time, applied the law to libellous writings, being indignant at the outrageous and scurrilous attacks made by Cassius Severus upon men and women of distinction; and when Tiberius was asked by the praetor Pompeius Macer whether cases of High Treason were to be sent to trial, he replied:—*The laws must be put in force.*

offence against the emperor; and every offence against the emperor was an offence against the Majesty of the people.

1 Roman law was severe on libels; it would not permit the personalities of the Greek comic stage. The XII. Tables, according to Cicero, de Rep. iv. 10, 12, prescribed capital punishment *si quis occentavisset sive carmen condidisset quod infamiam faceret flagitiunve alieni*; whereas among the Greeks *fuit lege concessum ut quod vellet comestia de quo vellet nominatim dicere.* How the poet Naevius was indicted and imprisoned for his attack on the Metelli is well known; and Horace makes it a turning-point in the history of Latin poetry that when the buffoonery natural to the Italian character had turned *locus into robic,* it had to be sternly put down by law (Epp. ii. 1, 53). The law, it seemed, was confined to libels on the stage or in poetry; political speeches were untouched by it, until, apparently, the time of Sulla: *sursum veni* *est maiestas ut Sulla voluit ne in quemvis impune impune declarare licet* (Cic. Fam. iii. 11, 2). The extraordinary license of oratory, as evidenced by Cicero’s speeches, as well as the gross freedom of poets like Catullus, shews that Sulla’s law cannot have been rigorously enforced. Augustus, as suited his character, was singularly tolerant of personal abuse (Suet., Oct. 54, 55); and according to the passage before us, though he brought *famos libellis* under the law of majestas, it was not on his own account, but as a matter of public decency (Dio, lvi. 27, 1); and perhaps also, as Merviile suggests (vol. 5, p. 154), with the special object of extending protection to women. But there were occasions of acknowledged license. During the Saturnalia, slaves might be as saucy as they pleased to their masters (Hor., Sat. ii. 7, 4); and on the occasion of a triumph, soldiers were free to indulge in the grossest scurrility at the expense of their general (Suet., Jul. 49). In the triumph of Lepidus and Plancus over the Gauls, the soldiers shouted at them *De germannis non de Gallis duo triumphant consules,* each having had a brother included in the list of prescribed persons (Vell. Pat. ii. 67, 4). How venomous could be the spirit of Roman satire, even under the empire, in spite of all prohibitions, appears from numberless instances. See Suet., Tib. 59.

2 Described in iv. 21, 5 as *sordidae originis,* *maleficae vitae,* *sed erandi validus.* He had been banished to Crete, probably in B.C. 12; in A.D. 24 he was interdicted from fire and water for continuing the same practices, and relegated to the island of Seriphos.

3 For the family and fate of Pompeius Macer, see vi. 18, 3 and 4.

4 *i.e.* he was to receive such a case in the ordinary course, and make arrangements for a judge and jury to try it. This implies that in addition to the state trials of important offenders before the senate, such as Tacitus records, there was an ordinary court (quaestio) for trying minor cases, or minor offenders, under the law of majestas. See Furn. and cp. Suet. Tib. 58: _consulente praetore an judicia maiestatis cogni debuerat, exercendas esse leges respondit, et atrocissime executi._ He then enumerates various cases too trivial for senatorial jurisdiction.
5 For he too had been exasperated by the publication of some anonymous verses\(^1\) animadverting upon his cruel and haughty temper, and his differences with his mother.

73. 1 To shew from what beginnings\(^2\) this deadly system of oppression took its rise; how craftily it was fostered by Tiberius; how it was checked for a time, and then at last burst out as it were in an all-consuming blaze, it will not be amiss to recount the charges that were brought against two respectable Roman knights, Falanius and Rubrius.\(^3\) The former was accused of having admitted into a College of priests instituted for the worship of Augustus—such as existed in almost every family—a certain actor of infamous character called Cassius; and of having included in the sale of some pleasure-grounds a statue of Augustus. Rubrius was charged with having sworn a false oath by the divinity of Augustus. When Tiberius heard of these charges, he wrote to the consuls as follows:—Divine honours, he declared, had not been granted to his father for the purpose of bringing citizens to ruin. The actor Cassius had been in the habit of taking a part, along with others of his profession, at the games instituted by his mother in honour of Augustus; and

---

1 See Suet., Tib. 59.
2 I take these words to refer exclusively to the reign of Tiberius, and to mark its different stages by the progressive attitude he assumed to delation. The words *qua\(nta\) ar\(e)* apply to the whole. First Tiberius allowed delation insidiously to creep in; see chap. 74, 2, of the delator Romanus Hispo, *dum occultis libellis saevitiae principis ad\(re\)pti*. For a time he appeared to discourage it and hold it in check. He next let it burst into flame; and lastly, like a destroying fire, carry all before it.
3 Falanius and Rubrius being only knights of modest position, Tacitus does not mention their praenomina. So in vi. 14, 1.

4 Although Augustus prohibited his own worship in Italy, he permitted the worship of his *Genius* in connection with the household gods (*Lar\(es)*) of the 265 *vic\(i)*, or quarters, into which Rome was divided in B.C. 7. Each *vic\(us)* had four elected *magistri*, whose duties were partly religious; they now began to be called *magistri Lar\(um)*, and later *magistri Augustales*. A similar worship of Augustus was set up in private houses, and conducted, it would appear, by collegia: as early as B.C. 13 Horace could write to Augustus on his return to Rome from Gaul, *et Lar\(ibus) tu\(um\) = Miscel numen, uti Gracia Castor\(is) = Et magni memor Herculis* (Od. iv. 5, 34–6).
there was no impiety in including a statue of Augustus, as of any other deity, in a sale of houses or gardens. As for the perjury, it should be judged as if the name of Jupiter had been taken in vain: *the Gods must avenge their own wrongs.*

Not long afterwards Granius Marcellus, Praetor of Bithynia, was accused of treason by his own Quaestor, Caepio Crispinus, supported by Romanus Hispo. This last was a man who entered upon a line of life destined soon to acquire notoriety in those calamitous and shameless days. Needy, low-born and restless, he first crept into the good graces of the cruel-minded Emperor by supplying him with...
secret informations; and before long no name, however distinguished, was safe from his attacks. Becoming thus all-powerful with one man, and earning the hatred of all besides, he set an example through which men rose from poverty to affluence, and from insignificance to power: bringing ruin upon others first, and in the end upon themselves also.

Marcellus was charged with having spoken evil of the Emperor: an accusation from which there was no escape, since the accuser picked out all the worst features in the character of Tiberius, and charged Marcellus with having pointed them out. As the things said were true, it was believed that Marcellus had said them.¹

Hispo added that Marcellus had placed his own statue above those of the Caesars; and that he had cut off the head of Augustus from another statue and substituted that of Tiberius.² This so incensed the Emperor that he broke silence, and declared that he would himself record his verdict in the case, openly and on oath:³ meaning thereby to compel all the others to do the same. But there remained even yet some traces of expiring liberty; for Gnaeus Piso⁴

---

¹ The venomous bitterness of this comment could hardly be surpassed.  
² Caligula felt no scruple in beheading the statues of Olympian Jove and other gods, and substituting his own head (Suet. 22).  
³ This involved a double offence. The changing of the head of the statue was at once an insult to the divinity of Augustus, and a thrusting of divine honours upon Tiberius. Such, however, Tiberius persistently refused for himself (iv. 38, 4); while it was a fundamental principle of his policy to shew every respect to Augustus. See chap. 77, 4 and iv. 37, 4. Hence the warmth of his indignation. The charges advanced here, as well as others of which we shall hear later, appear somewhat trumpery. But they may be matched in absurdity by similar charges in modern times in countries not distant from our own. A respectable citizen was sent to prison not long ago for narrating in his cups a story about Diogenes and Alexander the Great which was held to apply to the sovereign of the country; another was haled to prison for dropping and breaking (it was thought intentionally) the bust of a royal personage.  
⁴ For the greater weight attached to an assertion made, or a vote given, when the person said he did so 'on his oath,' see chap. 14, 6; iv. 21, 5; 31, 5; Liv. xxx. 40, 12.  
⁵ This is the celebrated Piso who as governor of Syria was contemptuous to Germanicus in his Eastern command (ii. 43, 3), and was brought to justice after his death (iii. 12-18). See n. on chap. 13, 3.
asked, *Will you vote first or last, Caesar? If you vote first, I shall have a guide to follow; but, if last, I fear I may unwittingly disagree with you.*

Tiberius winced: repenting of his incautious outburst, he made up for it by suffering the accused to be acquitted on the charge of treason. The matter of extortion was referred to assessors for adjudication.

But the Emperor was not satisfied with taking part in trials before the Senate. He would take his place in the ordinary courts of law, seating himself at the corner of the bench, so as not to oust the Praetor from his curule chair. On such occasions,

---

1 This home-thrust of Piso's brings out how absolutely the senate was dependent upon the emperor in virtue of his *tribunica potestas*. He presided over it; he initiated all business in it; he could give his opinion first, or at any stage he chose; if he spoke last, the unfortunate senators, however anxious to please, had no guide to follow. The incident suggests that the emperor might attend in the senate as an ordinary senator, without actually presiding. The rule was for the presiding magistrate (usually a consul) to ask the opinion (*sententia*) of the leading senators, beginning with the senior consular; and then put the question to the vote, with or without an expression of his own opinion. Had the emperor been himself presiding, Piso could hardly have put the question *Quo loco censebis?* Dio speaks of Tiberius giving his vote (lvii. 7, 3); and it may be that he occasionally took his seat on the ordinary benches, as our princes of the blood do in the House of Lords. The supposition is confirmed by the fact mentioned in the next chapter, that in ordinary trials he would take a seat on the judicial bench as an assessor, without deposing the praetor from his chair. Such a practice would be eminently *evellit*; but, as Piso's question indicates, it must have been extremely embarrassing to the other senators.

2 Suetonius mentions the condemnation; but omits the essential point that Graniius was acquitted of majestas, and only sentenced to give an account on the financial charge (Tib. 98). Here, as elsewhere, Tiberius aimed at strict justice; and Tacitus has the fairness to record the fact. Nevertheless, his sympathies are with Graniius; and he insinuates here and elsewhere, that if majestas be included in any charge along with others, it is always the determining element in the conviction, however much the other charges may be proved also. *Cp. sed cuncta questione maiestatis exercita* (iv. 19, 5). The sympathies of Tacitus are always with any one accused of majestas, even though proved guilty of other offences.

3 The case was treated as one for civil damages only. *Reciprones* or *recipronri* were a sworn committee or board, of three or five persons, appointed by a praetor to adjudicate in cases of compensation arising in the provinces. We read in Livy of this board acting sometimes as a court of arbitration.

4 The assiduity of Tiberius in attending the law courts, and the conscientious care which he shewed in trying cases, and resisting undue influence, are distinguishing features of the early part of his reign—though little appreciated by Tacitus. Suetonius (Tib. 33) and Dio (lvii. 7, 6) confirm the account here given. The emperor, as possessed of the *tribunica potestas*, had an unlimited power of veto: his presence on the bench would enable him to exercise that right in person (as was required under the old rule), and thus over-rule the decision of the praetor; while his own claims to independent jurisdiction would enable him to substitute another decision in its place.
many just judgments were pronounced in opposition
to the influence and solicitation of important person-
ages; but though truth might thus be served, it was
at the expense of liberty.\textsuperscript{1}

3 About this time a senator\textsuperscript{a} of the name of Pius
Aurelius complained that the construction of a public
road and an aqueduct had caused his house to fall
in, and applied to the Senate for compensation. The
claim was resisted by the Treasury;\textsuperscript{b} but the Emperor,\textsuperscript{c}
who liked to be generous in a good cause—a quality
which he retained long after discarding every other
virtue—\textsuperscript{d} paid Aurelius the price of the house out of
his own pocket. And when Propertius Celer, an
ex-Praetor, craved permission to resign his senatorial
rank on the score of poverty, Tiberius presented him
with a million\textsuperscript{e} sesterces, having ascertained that his
poverty came to him from his father. When others,
however, made similar applications, he required them

\textsuperscript{1} The assertion that ‘a regard for
truth was fatal to liberty’ sounds like a
paradox, and is repugnant to modern
ideas; but Tacitus is not so far wrong.
An all-powerful emperor, with a passion
for going into details, would be an emb-
arrassing colleague on a judicial bench;
however anxious to get at the facts, he
might fail to reach them, or mis-read
them. Tiberius himself confesses neque
posses principem sua scientia cuncta
complecti (iii. 69, 4). Whatever his
view of the facts might be, it would
overbear every other, and have to be
accepted; and his very anxiety to get
at the truth might defeat the ends of
justice. A striking instance of Tiberius’
love of veritas—his desire to probe
matters to the bottom for himself—is
given in iv. 22. Plautius Silvanus was
accused before him of throwing his
wife out of the window. Plautius
alleged that he was asleep at the time,
and that the lady committed suicide.
Tiberius went straight off to examine
the chamber, and there discovered, with
his own eyes, evidence of a struggle
between the pair. But it is scarcely
the part of an emperor to play the
detective.

\textsuperscript{a} He deals
generously with worthy
applicants, but will not
suffer his
liberality to
be abused.

\textsuperscript{b} Not having held the praetorship or
consulship, Aurelius is simply called a
senator. See iii. 36, 2.

\textsuperscript{c} Tacitus says ‘the praetors of the
Treasury.’ Originally the quaestors
had charge of the aerarium. Augustus
transferred it to two praefecti of praetorian
rank, and afterwards to two of the
praetors. Eventually, under Nero, A.D.
56, it was handed over, like other
departments of administration, to special
praefecti, and so came under the direct
charge of the emperor. See the account
given in xiii. 29.

\textsuperscript{d} According to his usual policy,
Tiberius supports the magistrates in
resisting encroachments on the public
purse, or invasions of their authority.

\textsuperscript{e} Tacitus repeatedly does justice to
Tiberius’ freedom from avarice, and
even his generosity, in regard to money
matters. For special instances see ii.
37, i: 48, i: 86, 2; iv. 64, i; vi. 17,
4: 45, i, etc.

\textsuperscript{f} One million sesterces was
the property qualification for a senator as
fixed by Augustus, B.C. 18 (Dio, liv.
17, 3). Thus Ov. Fast. iii. 8, 55, Curia
pauperibus clausa est, dat censum homines.
to make good their case to the satisfaction of the Senate; his love of strictness leading him to do even a right thing in a harsh way.\(^1\) Hence others preferred poverty and silence to relief coupled with exposure.

In the same year the Tiber, swollen by continuous rains, flooded the lower parts of the city, and much destruction of life and property followed on the subsidence of the waters.\(^2\) Asinius Gallus proposed that the Sibylline books should be consulted; but this Tiberius would not permit, loving mystery in all things, divine as well as human.\(^3\) It was remitted to Ateius Capito and Lucius Arruntius to devise a plan for keeping the river within its banks.

The Provinces of Achaia and Macedonia having an embankment, which was supposed to have made inundations impossible.

\(^{1}\) So in iv. 7, 7, while acknowledging the general excellence of the first eight years of the reign of Tiberius, Tacitus says of his manner, *non guidem com\textit{via}, sed horridius plurumque et f\textit{ormidatibus*}. Tacitus apparently would have allowed such petitions from needy senators to be acceded to without inquiry.

\(^{2}\) The floods of the Tiber were a constant source of disaster in ancient, as they have been in modern, times, and afforded a plentiful supply of ovens (Hor. Od. i. 2, 3). Augustus took special charge of the work of cleaning and keeping open the channel of the river (\textit{terminatio}; see Suet. Oct. 39). Inscriptions on slabs found on the banks of the Tiber shew that this work was carried out by the consuls in B.C. 8, by Augustus himself in B.C. 6 (Rushforth, p. 29). According to Dio (liv. 14, 8), Tiberius instituted in this year a special board of five \textit{Curatores} for the purpose. Ateius Capito was chosen, no doubt as being \textit{Curator Aquarum}, or superintendent of the aqueducts, at this time; L. Arruntius was apparently made president of the new board. In more recent times, no less than 46 great floods are known to have devastated Rome. In 1870 the water rose to a height of 56 feet above its usual level; and in 1900 a flood carried away 300 yards of the new

\(^{3}\) An idle scoff on the part of Tacitus. With his usual good sense, Tiberius would have nothing to do with the face of consulting the Sibylline books. Not here only, but on other occasions also, he set his face against having resort to superstitious observances in dealing with practical matters. See n. on vi. 12, 2. Dio treats the instance before us most sensibly. He tells us that whereas most people regarded floods, like earthquakes and thunderstorms, as a matter of divine portent, Tiberius thought they were caused by an over-supply of water from the springs (liv. 14, 8).

\(^{4}\) A distinguished lawyer; described by Tacitus as \textit{pr\textit{incipem in civitate locum studis civilibus adscendit} (iii. 75, 1). He held the important post of \textit{curator a\textit{q}uarum} A.D. 13 to 23.

\(^{5}\) Macedonia had been a province since B.C. 146; it originally included Achaia, which was not made into a separate province till B.C. 27. These two provinces were restored to the senate in A.D. 44 (Suet. Claud. 25). The division of provinces as left by Augustus at the time of his death seems to have been as follows:—[1] Eleven senatorial provinces: \textit{Sicilia, Sardinia and Corsica, Hispania Baetica, Gallia Narbonensis, Macedonia, Achaia, Asia,
petitioned for some remission of their burdens, it was resolved to relieve them, for a time, from Proconsular government, and to hand over both provinces to the Emperor.¹

Drusus presided over a gladiatorial exhibition held in his own name and that of his brother Germanicus. The inordinate delight which he displayed in bloodshed—though it was but the blood of slaves—was a quality of evil import for the people, and was said to have been reproved by his father. The Emperor himself did not appear; for which various reasons were given. Some said that he disliked a crowd; others that he was naturally morose, and shrank from a comparison between himself and Augustus, who had graciously attended such spectacles.² Another explanation was suggested which I cannot bring myself to believe: ³ that he purposely

¹ A noteworthy passage, shewing (1) that the provinces met with considerate treatment under the emperors, such as they had not known under the Republic; and (2) that the government of the imperatorial provinces was more lenient than that of the senatorial. The benefit here may have been due, as Furn. suggests, to a saving of expense in staff, etc., resulting from the amalgamation of two provinces; but more than that seems to be implied. There was probably more elasticity, and less of interested red-tapeism, in regard to taxation, etc., in the imperatorial provinces, which made it easier for the emperors to deal leniently with the inhabitants. These two provinces were restored to the senate in A.D. 44.

² For the character of Drusus, see chap. 29, 4 and n. Mr. Tarver makes a curious slip here (‘Tiberius the Tyrant,’ p. 314). He translates ‘although too easily pleased with cheap bloodshed,’ and suggests a complicated explanation: ‘the word ‘although’ suggests that Drusus could get his bloodshed more cheaply than by giving gladiatorial shows.’ But quamquam obviously goes with vili, not with gaudens; the meaning being that ‘Drusus rejoiced too much in bloodshed—though, to be sure, it was only worthless blood.’

³ See n. on chap. 54, 3. ⁴ Though Tacitus rejects this hateful suggestion, it is hateful to make mention of it, and the rejection is not very
afforded to his son an opportunity of displaying his savage temper, and thus rousing the feeling of the people against him.

The theatrical riots which had begun in the immediately preceding year now broke out with fresh violence.¹ Lives were lost, and not amongst the populace only; for some soldiers and a centurion were killed, and a Tribune of the Praetorian Cohorts was wounded in the attempt to preserve order and protect the magistrates from insult. The affair was discussed in the Senate; and it was proposed that the Praetors should have power to have actors flogged. This proposal was vetoed² by Haterius Agrippa,³ a Tribune of the Plebs; for which he was sharply rebuked by Asinius Gallus. Tiberius said nothing; too pleased to leave this phantom⁴ of liberty to the Senate. The veto however was allowed to stand, for the Divine Augustus, whose every utterance was sacred in the eyes of Tiberius,⁵ had once laid it down that actors were exempt from corporal

hearty. The epigrammatic point with which the innuendo is conveyed has made it live; and it remains recorded for all time that this odious suspicion was entertained by some of the contemporaries of Tiberius. This can scarcely be called writing history sine ista at studio (chap. 1, 6).

¹ The old Italian tradition of license in connection with merry-making (Hor. Ep. ii. i, 146-150) clung tenaciously to the theatre and the circus, the contests between supporters of rival actors or charioteers frequently ending in disorder and even bloodshed. See the famous account in Gibbon (chap. 40) of the Nika riots at Constantinople, which ended in the massacre of 30,000 persons. See Mayor on Juv. vii. 114, 243, and xi. 198; and esp. Ann. xiii. 25, 4.

² Thus alongside of the tribunica potestas possessed by the Princeps, the ordinary tribunes of the plebs, who continued to be elected as before, could still occasionally exercise their right of veto. But it was only, as here, in some unimportant matter; and the last known instance of its exercise (A.D. 69) was for the adulatory purpose of preventing the consuls from putting a question in the absence of the emperor (Hist. iv. 9, 9).

³ This man was raised to the praetorship, as a relative of Germanicus, in B.C. 17 (ii. 51, 2), to the consulship in A.D. 22 (iii. 52, 1), and is described in vi. 4, 5, as a man 'who plotted the destruction of illustrious men in the intervals between his gluttonies and debaucheries.' As consul-designate he gave his vote for death against Clutorius Priscus (iii. 49, 4); so we may be sure that on this occasion he used his veto to meet the wishes of Tiberius.

⁴ Cp. the similar phrases, imago libertatis (chap. 81, 4), and imago rer publicae (xiii. 26, 1), by which Tacitus describes the mockery of independence still permitted to the senate. So in chap. 74, 6 maneant etiam tum vestigia morientis libertatis.

⁵ See iv. 37, 4, and Agric. 13, 3.
chastisement. Several decrees were passed to limit the salaries of actors, and to check the excesses of their partisans. Of these the most notable were, that Senators should not be permitted to enter the houses of pantomime players, nor Roman knights to escort them when they went abroad; that performances should be held only in the theatre; and that the Praetors should have the power of punishing with exile any misbehaviour on the part of spectators.

78. 1 A petition from Spain for leave to set up a temple to Augustus in the colony of Tarraco, was granted; and an example was thereby set for all the provinces.

2 The people petitioned for the abolition of the tax of remedies adopted. Tarraco permitted to set up a temple to Augustus. Tiberius declines to remit tax on sales.

---

1 This statement is scarcely correct; for, according to Suetonius, who on such a point is perhaps a better authority than Tacitus, all that Augustus did was to enact that actors should only be liable to corporal punishment when plays were actually going on (ludis et scaena, Oct. 45). The motion referred to, therefore, in the preceding words (ut praetoribus ius virgarum in histrionet esset) was probably to revert to the state of things before Augustus.

2 The term here used is lucar; 'a forest-tax' which was originally derived from luci, or 'sacred groves;' see Dict. Ant. ii. 8, a. It was a contribution towards the expenses of scenic games; the remainder being borne by the magistrate (usually a praetor) who held and presided at the games. Some holders of games declined to accept the lucar.

3 Suetonius says of Tiberius: Ludorum ac numerum impensa corrupit mercedibus scaenicorum recisis, paribusque gladiatorium ad certum numerum redactis (Tib. 34).

4 This discouragement of games added much to his unpopularity. See iv. 62, 3: aditusque avidi talium, imperiante Tibero procul a voluptatibus habiti. Actors were mostly slaves, or freed-men; when slaves, they were either kept for the entertainment of their owners, or let out for hire. All actors were by law stigmatised by infamia (Edict. Praet. Dig. iii. a, 1). They were liable to be sent into exile at any moment if they or their supporters caused disorder. In spite of all this, and the liability to personal chastisement, the text shews how important stage success had become in the non-political times of the empire, and how extravagant was the court paid to popular actors; the attempts to drive them from Rome seem to have been all in vain (iv. 14, 4; xii. 25, 4 and 28, 1; xiv. 21, 2, etc.). Actors of eminence, like Roscius and Aesopus, acquired large fortunes even in the time of Cicero; under emperors like Nero and Hadrian they might become favourites and be all-powerful (Juv. vii. 99-92).

5 There is no need, with Halm and Furn., to adopt Wölflin’s conjecture sectaretur. The MS. spectaretur gives an excellent sense: performances in private houses were to be forbidden. The meaning to be got out of sectaretur has already been sufficiently expressed by ne agredientes... cingenter. Nor would the theatre be the proper place for sectatio.

6 Tarraco, the modern Tarragona, about 50 miles N. of the Iberus (Ebro), was founded by Julius Caesar, and called Colonia Iulia Victrix Triumphantis. It had supplanted Carthago Nova (Cartagena) as chief town of the province of Hispania Tarraconensis from the time of the Cantabrian wars, B.C. 26-19. Its position near the mouth of the Ebro made it the natural headquarters for operations in the NW. of Spain.
five per cent. on the value of things sold by auction, which had been instituted after the civil wars; but Tiberius put forth an edict declaring that the military treasury depended upon that impost: and that if veterans were to be discharged before completing twenty years of service, the state would not be equal to the burden. Thus fell to the ground the ill-advised concession extorted by the late mutiny, whereby service was to end after sixteen years.

A discussion was then raised in the Senate by Arruntius and Ateius as to whether the streams and lakes which feed the Tiber should be diverted from their natural beds with a view to the abatement of floods. Deputations from municipal and colonial towns were heard upon the subject. The people of Florence implored that the waters of the Clanis might not be taken from their natural channel, and diverted into the river Arnus: the consequences, they declared, would be disastrous to them.

1 The Military Treasury, established by Augustus A.D. 6, for the purpose of providing bounties, etc., for soldiers (Mon. Anc. iii. 37), was fed by the legacy duty (Dio, iv. 25, 2, 5) as well as by the Centesima Venalium. It was under the charge of three praefecti.

2 Much as Tacitus blamed Tiberius for not going to quell the mutiny himself, this passage shews how successful his treatment of it was. Not one of the concessions temporarily made was maintained.

3 The Romans were not afraid of facing huge engineering works, especially in connection with watercourses; the draining of the Alban Lake, the huge aqueducts which supplied Rome with water, are monuments of their engineering skill. But it must be confessed that the proposals of the Commissioners (for whose appointment see chap. 76, 3) for checking the Tiber floods were rather wide of the mark. To dissipate the waters of a stream like the Nar; to dam up another like the Velinus, so as to hold up its waters permanently, would be impracticable. What was proposed for the Clanis was possible, but would have had little effect upon the Tiber floods. That river, the modern Chiana, flows for about thirty miles, from Arretium (Arezzo) to Clusium (Chiusi), through a valley so level that its waters can be made to flow either way. These flats are now drained by artificial channels, some of which take the water N. into the Arno. The cause of the great floods in the Tiber is the heavy rainfall on the W. face of the Apennines of central Italy, which pour their waters, by long winding valleys, into the basin of the Tiber. The Tiber alone has a course of some 225 Roman miles; joined by the Tinia, the Nar, the Velino, and the Anio, it carries the drainage of a vast mountain area by one channel past Rome into the sea.

4 Tacitus frequently uses the terms municipia and coloniae in conjunction, to designate the provincial towns of Italy generally, the distinction between the two having now practically disappeared (iii. 55, 4; iv. 67, 1; etc.). See n. on iii. 2, 2.
Interamna spoke in similar terms: the finest land in Italy would be ruined if the Nar were to be drained off, as proposed, into small channels, and spread over the country. The people of Reate had their say. They objected to damming up the Veline lake at the point of its outflow into the Nar, because it would inundate the adjacent country. *Nature, they urged, had done well for man in assigning to every river its own outlet, its own channel as well as its source. Regard also should be paid to the religious feelings of the allies, who had instituted rites, and set up groves and altars, in honour of the rivers of their country; nay, old Tiber himself would ill endure to be shorn of his glory by the loss of his affluent streams.*

Whatever the reason that prevailed—whether it was the remonstrance of the towns, or the difficulty of the work, or the appeal to religious sentiment—Piso's motion in favour of leaving things as they were carried the day.

80. 1 Poppaeus Sabinus was continued in the govern-

---

1 Reate was a Sabine town on the Velinus (Velino), close under the walls of Interamna (Terni). That river discharges itself into the Nar by the artificial channel which was cut by M'. Curius Dentatus, B.C. 272, thus forming the well-known falls of Terni.

2 Even the prosaic Romans loved to personify their rivers. To this they were assisted, no doubt, by the custom of carrying along at triumphs representations of the rivers of conquered countries, and by the personification of rivers in Greek statuary, especially at the corners of pediments. See the fine lines of Propertius, ii. 1, 31, 32: *Aut canarem Aegyptum et Nilum cum atratus in urben = Septem captivis debitis que aguis.*

3 C. Poppaeus Sabinus was grandfather of Nero's wife Poppaea. He received triumphal honours in A.D. 26 for his successes in Thrace; when he died, in A.D. 36, he had been in command of important provinces for no less than 24 years. He was retained in command all this time, Tacitus tells us, *nullam od eximiam artem, sed quod par negotiis negue supra fuit* (vi. 39. 3): a passage which shews that Tacitus had Poppaeus in mind in the words which follow. The length of tenure of office by provincial governors (C. Silius ruled Gaul for seven years, iv. 18, 8) was one of the blessings conferred upon the provinces by the empire. Under the republic, short-term governors had to squeeze their province to the utmost while in command, in order to make a good thing of it; and it can be imagined to what an art provincial extortion had been carried when we learn that to procure a really satisfactory result, a province should be held for three years. In the first year, a governor should accumulate enough to repay what he had borrowed to bribe the electors in his candidature for office; in the second, enough to secure an acquittal from the court when impeached for extortion on his return to Rome; in his third year, enough to live upon
ment of the province Moesia, with the addition of Achaia and Macedonia. To prolong commands in this way was part of the policy of Tiberius; in many cases he permitted the holders of military or administrative posts to retain them throughout their lives. Various reasons for this have been suggested. Some say that it was the worry and anxiety attending any change which led him to give permanence to an appointment once made; others that jealousy inclined him to confine the sweets of office to a few. Others again think that the very shrewdness of his judgment made selection a perplexity. He had no fancy for conspicuous merit; but then again he hated incapacity: if the one were dangerous to himself, the other might bring disaster upon the State. And to such a length did he at last carry this irresolution that he appointed governors to provinces without any intention of allowing them to leave the city.

As to the consular elections which were now held for the first time under Tiberius, as well as those which came after, I can assert nothing positively; so conflicting are the accounts given, not only by historians, but in the speeches of Tiberius himself.

in comfort ever afterwards. The empire changed all this. If a governor could look forward to a long tenure of office, it would be for his interest to nurse his province, rather than to bleed it; and he had a master over him whose interest and whose care it was, for imperial purposes, to keep the provinces in prosperity. Hence the readiness with which careful emperors (we shall find many instances under Tiberius) brought to trial and punishment cases of provincial misgovernment. Added to this, governors of provinces had now a regular salary, which removed one main temptation to extortion.

1 The important frontier province of Moesia (bounded on the N. by the Danube, on the E. by the Euxine, and to the S. by the mountain chains of Thrace) corresponded to the modern states of Servia and Bulgaria.

2 Only two instances of this are known. Aelianus Lamia had been appointed to Syria, in some year unknown; L. Arruntius to Spain: neither were permitted to leave Rome (vi. 27, 2 and 3).

3 The word comitii here means simply 'elections,' without any reference to election by the comitia. It is used similarly in chap. 15, 1.

4 According to Suetonius, Augustus comitiorum pristinum ius reduxit, i.e. as contrasted with the anarchy of the civil wars (Oct. 40). As a matter of
2 Sometimes he would withhold the names \(^1\) of the candidates, indicating each by his birth, career and services, so that it might be known who they were. Sometimes even that amount of indication would be suppressed: he would bid candidates not create disturbance at the elections by canvassing, and proffer his own services for that purpose. He usually gave out that none had offered themselves but those whose names he had given in to the consuls: — *Others might apply, if they had confidence in their influence or their deserts.* Specious words these, but hollow and insincere: the greater the semblance of liberty in which they were clothed, the more abject was the plunge into slavery which was to follow.

\(^1\) In regard to *nominatio* and *commendatio*, see n. on chap. 14, 6.

---

Fact, the election of consuls and praetors by the end of the reign of Augustus might have been described in the words of the Digest, xlivii. 14, i pr. *ad curam principis magistratum creatio pertinet*, *non ad populi favorem*. In this passage Tacitus modifies to some extent, in regard to the consulship, the statement made above in chap. 15, i, that under Tiberius elections of magistrates were transferred from the comitia to the senate. It is evident that in the case of the highest office of all, the transference was not made so openly or so immediately as in the case of other magistracies. The present passage suggests that the form of popular election was preserved for some time longer, but that by the astute mode of using the right of *nominatio* (see n. on chap. 14, 6), Tiberius reduced it to a nullity. But the question is not free from doubt (see Greenidge, p. 372).
BOOK II.

A.D. 16. CONSULS T. STATILIIUS SISENNA TAURUS
AND L. SCRBIONIUS LIBO.

Disturbances broke out in this year in the kingdoms of the East. These troubles originated with the Parthians, who

1 The relations of Rome with the kingdom of Parthia—the one power towards which she had a foreign policy in the modern sense of the word—were so important, and the narrative of Armenian and Parthian affairs given by Tacitus (ii. 1-4; vi. 31-37 and 47-44) is so condensed, that a more full and consecutive account of them may here be given. The following note, taken mainly from Professor Rawlinson’s ‘Sixth Great Oriental Monarchy,’ and ‘The Parthian Coinage’ of Professor Percay Gardiner, gives a short account of the Parthians, and brings the history of their relations with Rome down to the point at which it is taken up by Tacitus.

The kingdom of Parthia was now the great power of the East, ruling in Oriental fashion—the vast country between the Euphrates and the Hindoo-Koosh. The first mention of Parthia is by Herodotus, who includes it among the provinces of the Persian Empire, and names Parthian infantry as taking part in the expedition of Xerxes (ii. 177). Their ancient home was finely situated in the well-watered mountain region which extends from the Caspian Sea to the borders of Afghanistan; having on the N. the bare wastes of the steppes, on the S. and W. the arid plains of the Persian desert. The central and eastern parts of this mountain district formed the province of Parthia; the western portion, extending to the SE. corner of the Caspian Sea, was the seat of the Hyrcanians, from whom that sea received its ancient name of Mare Hyrcanum. The origin of both peoples is unknown; but Professor Rawlinson gives good reasons for supposing that the Parthians were of Scythian or Turanian origin, and that their ancestors, like the Turcomans of later times, had formed one of those hardy nomad hordes that have periodically swooped down from the barren plains of northern Asia to seize the fertile regions, and overmaster the more civilised and less warlike races, of the sunny South; settling in the countries which they have conquered, but never amalgamating with the peoples whom they have subdued.

For centuries the Parthians bided their time, and nursed their strength, in their mountain home. From the time of Cyrus onwards, their country formed a satrapy of the Persian empire; they fought against Alexander at Arbela, and submitted, with the rest of the East, to his rule and to that of his successors, until the growing weakness of the Seleucid princes, and the removal of their capital from the Tigris to Antioch, gave an opportunity to the distant eastern provinces for revolt. First Bactria rebelled, under a Greek dynasty of its own; next came the revolt of Parthia, probably about B.C. 250, with consequences far more serious to the peace of the eastern world. A native prince, Arsaces, was set up as king at Hecatompylus, with the help apparently of an allied horde of Scythians, called Dahae; and a movement was
accepting, their king from Rome, now looked down upon him as an alien, although he was a member

thus started whereby the work of Alexander was to be undone, and the sceptre of the East was to pass from Hellenic hands into those of a hardy, fierce, and alien race, brave but rude, filled with the savage instincts of their nomad ancestors, and possessing a mere veneer of Greek civilisation. The name Arsaces remained henceforth the hereditary royal name: the second of that name (his original name was Tiridates) annexed Hyrcania; succeeding princes resisted every attempt of the Syrian kings to win back the lost provinces; until at length Mithridates I. (B.C. 174-136) came forth as a conqueror, wrested from Syria all her eastern provinces, and established a new empire, destined to last for four centuries over all the regions from the Euphrates to the mountain frontiers of India.

The first contact of Rome with Parthia was in B.C. 92, in which year Sulla was sent out to check the ambitious designs of Mithridates, king of Pontus, upon Cappadocia and other provinces. Tigranes, the Armenian king, was son-in-law of Mithridates, and had assisted him in his attempts to gain possession of Cappadocia; hence Sulla turned savagely upon Armenia, and inflicted upon her a severe defeat. Now Tigranes had been at war with Parthia, and had encroached, not without treachery, upon her territory; it was natural therefore for the Parthian king (Mithridates II.) to make overtures for an alliance with Rome. His ambassador had a meeting with Sulla; but nothing more than friendly sentiments were interchanged on that occasion. During the later phases of the Mithridatic war, the Parthian king (Phraates III.) was more anxious to recover territory seized by Armenia than to assist the Romans. He irritated Lucullus (B.C. 69) by promises of help unfulfilled; but subsequent made an arrangement with Pompey (B.C. 66) whereby he was to prevent Armenia from helping Mithridates, while Pompey, in return, was to aid him in his designs upon that country. When the Mithridatic war was over, Pompey failed to keep his promise; he cleared the Parthians out of Armenia, and a rupture between the two countries was narrowly avoided.

Soon after this, Phraates III. was murdered by his two sons, Mithridates and Orodes. The two brothers quarrelled; Mithridates, the elder of the two, worsted and driven out, sought help from Gabinus, pro-consul of Syria, who received his overtures favourably; and though nothing came of it at the time, an excuse was thus afforded for Roman intervention in Parthian affairs. Mithridates carried on the struggle for a time: in the end he submitted to, and was murdered by, his brother Orodes, who thenceforth ruled as undisputed king of Parthia. It was against Orodes that the disastrous expedition of Crassus was undertaken in B.C. 53, ending in the almost total destruction of the Roman army by the Parthian archer-horsemen on the fatal field of Carrhae.

From this time onwards until the reign of Trajan, the Euphrates remained the eastern boundary of the Roman Empire; but for a time it seemed as if the Parthians were to push back Rome towards the West. Pompey, in his difficulties, trafficked for Parthian support; Caesar's projected expedition to wipe out the disgrace of Carrhae was cut short by his assassination; and a body of Parthian horse fought for Brutus and Cassius at Philippi. Then came the Parthian opportunity. While Antony was dallying in Egypt with Cleopatra in B.C. 40, a Parthian host, led by the renegade Q. Labienus, and Pacorus son of Orodes, burst into Syria and Asia, overthrew the Roman governor Decidius Saxa, and advanced to the Aegean: 'for a year Western Asia Minor changed masters; the rule of Rome disappeared, and the Parthians were recognised as the dominant power' (Rawlinson, p. 189). But it was not for long. In the course of two swift campaigns, in B.C. 39 and 38, Antony's hardy legate, P. Ventidius, stemmed the invasion, defeated and slew Labienus, destroyed Pacorus and his host in a final battle on the right bank of the Euphrates, and put an end, once for all, to the aggressive designs of Parthia on the West. Inconsolable for the death of Pacorus, Orodes abdicated soon afterwards in favour of his eldest remaining son, Phraates IV., who soon after confirmed himself on the throne by parricide.

One more attempt at an invasion of Parthia was made by Antony. Collecting an enormous army of 100,000 men
of the Royal house of the Arsacidae. The name of this king was Vonones. He had been given over to Augustus as a hostage by Phraates; for though

in B.C. 36, in alliance with Artavasdes, king of Armenia, he designed to attack Parthia from the north; but permitting himself to be inveigled by Artavasdes into a long and desperate enterprise against Media Atropatene, he was set upon by the Parthians on his return; a large portion of his army was cut off, and numbers perished from the severity of the climate before he made good his retreat. Enraged with Artavasdes for having deserted him in his time of difficulty, Antony wheedled him into negotiations, and finally seized his person (see note on chap. 3, 1); but the final rupture between Antony and Augustus was now at hand, and all troops had to be recalled from the East to take part in the great struggle which was to decide the mastery of the Roman world.

Thus ended all Roman attempts on Parthia, the contest between the two powers being henceforth mainly confined to the attempt to gain a paramount influence over the state of Armenia.

King Phraates IV, reigned from B.C. 36 to B.C. 2; his reign brings us down to the events recorded in the chapter before us. In B.C. 33, his cruelties raised against him a revolt, headed by Tiridates; he was expelled, and for some three years Tiridates reigned in his stead. But Phraates was restored by the help of friendly Scythians; and Tiridates fled to Augustus, carrying with him the younger son of Phraates. Augustus declined to give up Tiridates, but shortly afterwards restored the son, in the hope of receiving back the standards and the prisoners captured at Carrhae. At last, in B.C. 20, when Augustus seemed in a position to threaten war as an alternative, the standards were restored into the hands of Tiberius; an event which was loudly acclaimed by the writers of the day as the crowning glory of the foreign policy of Augustus (Suet. Oct. 27; Hor. Od. iv. 15, 6-8; Ov. Trist. ii. 227, etc.).

The succession of Parthian kings, from the time when Rome first came into contact with Parthia down to the end of the reign of Tiberius, is as follows. It is to be noted that all Parthian kings bore the name of Arsaces, in addition to their own proper name.

1. Mithradates II., or Mithridates the Great, succeeded his father, Artabanus II., in B.C. 123. This king drove back to the East a horde of invading Scythians called Sakas; it was he who negotiated with Sulla. He reigned at least until B.C. 97.

2. The successor or successors of Mithridates II. are unknown: a king named Sinatroses, of whom nothing is known, probably reigned from B.C. 76 to 69.

3. Phraates III., son of Sinatroses. He was engaged in constant wars with Tigranes I. of Armenia; he nearly came to war with Pompey. He was murdered by his two sons, Mithridates and Orodes; of whom—

4. Mithridates III. had a short reign, being expelled for his cruelty by the Parthian nobles. He was succeeded by his brother—

5. Orodes I., B.C. 55 to 37, in whose reign Crassus was defeated at Carrhae by the Surenas, or Grand Marshal, in B.C. 53, and the Parthian arms were pushed to the Aegean in B.C. 40. He was murdered by his son—

6. Phraates IV., B.C. 37 to 9. This monarch restored the standards to Augustus in B.C. 20, and sent his four sons (of whom Vonones was the eldest) to Rome. He also was murdered by his son—

7. Phraates, B.C. 2 to A.D. 4, who came to terms with Gaius Caesar. He was killed in an insurrection.

8. Orodes II., assassinated for his cruelties in A.D. 7 or 8. The Parthians then sent for—

9. Vonones, son of Phraates IV. He soon disgruntled the Parthians (chap. 3-6), who substituted the Arsacid—

10. Artabanus III., who had a vigorous but chequered reign, extending from A.D. 16 to 40, and covering all the events narrated by Tacitus in the first six books of the Annals (ii. x-4; ii. 58 and 68; vi. 31-37 and 41-44).

In all the revolutions and counter-revolutions of Parthia it is to be noted that no Parthian king or pretender ever failed, in time of difficulty, to get the aid of allied Scythian tribes from beyond the border.
that monarch had repulsed the Roman armies and their generals, he had shown every mark of respect towards Augustus, and with a view to making fast his friendship had sent to him some of his own children—not so much because he was afraid of Rome, as because he distrusted his own countrymen.¹

2. 1 When Phraates and the kings who succeeded him had been assassinated in the course of family quarrels,² a deputation of leading Parthians came to Rome to invite Vonones, the eldest of the sons of Phraates, to return. Augustus took this as a high compliment to himself; he loaded Vonones with presents, and Vonones received from the barbarians the welcome that always awaits a new ruler. But after a time a sense of shame came over them:—They had undergone, they thought, a national degradation: they had gone to another world to fetch a king tainted with the manners of their foes. The throne of the Arsacidae was being dealt with and disposed of as if it were one of the

¹ The difficulties of Phraates in his own kingdom had enabled Augustus to obtain by diplomacy, in B.C. 20, the result which Caesar had intended to achieve by force of arms—the restoration of the standards lost by Crassus at the battle of Carrhae, B.C. 53, together with a nominal acknowledgment of Roman supremacy. Phraates continued, till his death, to maintain friendly relations with Rome; and about B.C. 10, as here mentioned, he sent four of his sons to Rome—probably from fear that one of them might be set up as a pretender against himself. The names of these sons were Vonones, Serapadanes, Rhodaspes, and Phraates; they were treated handsomely and entertained as princes. Tacitus, like other historians, wrongly describes Vonones as a hostage (chap. 1).

² The reigns which followed that of Phraates IV. were short and stormy. Phraates himself was poisoned in B.C. 2, by his own trusted son Phraataces, who was aided in the crime by his mother Musa, who had been the favourite wife of Phraates, and who, though originally a slave-girl, was a woman of great capacity as well as beauty. Tempted by proposals from Armenia, Phraataces adopted at first a defiant attitude towards Augustus, and demanded the surrender of his four brothers; but finding Augustus resolute to maintain Roman influence in Armenia at all costs, he gave way, met Gaius Caesar in a friendly interview in A.D. 1 (see next chapter), and undertook to interfere no further in the affairs of that country. After a reign of a few years, Phraataces was deposed and put to death; the nobles, it would seem, being disgusted by his associating his mother with himself in the government, as well as by the extravagant honours paid to her. An Arsacid prince, Orodès, was now put upon the throne; but his violence and cruelty soon alienated his subjects, and he too was assassinated, in A.D. 7 or 8. Thereupon a mission was despatched to Rome to invite Vonones to the throne, with the results recorded in this and the following chapter.
Roman provinces: what of their old boast of having slain Crassus and routed Antonius, if a minion of Augustus, who had passed all these years in slavery, were to lord it over them?

These feelings were heightened by the king's own habits, which were alien from those of his ancestors. He seldom hunted; he had no taste for horses; if he made a progress through the cities, he rode in a litter; he had no stomach for the national feasts. He was ridiculed also for his Greek attendants, and for his habit of keeping under seal even the most ordinary domestic articles. He was easy of access, indeed, and affable to all comers; but these virtues were as strange to the Parthians as his vices: both being equally foreign to them, they hated the good and the bad alike.

They accordingly called in Artabanus, who was also of Arsacid blood, and had been brought up among the Dahae. This prince was routed in a first encounter; but he rallied his forces and gained possession of the throne. The defeated Vonones took refuge in Armenia, the throne of which was at that time vacant. Now that country, situated

---

Footnotes:
1. For the Armenian monarchy, and its relations with Rome, see n. on chap. 56, 1. The somewhat intricate succession of Armenian kings here enumerated may be made clearer by the following table:—
   1. Tigranes I. (by some called Tigranes II.), descendant of Artaxias, the founder of the Armenian kingdom. This was the king with whom Lucullus fought (B.C. 69–67), and who submitted to Pompey (B.C. 65–63). He died between B.C. 56 and 54.
   2. Artavasdes I., son of Tigranes I., persuaded Antony to attack Media, and deserted him in the campaign; was treacherously seized by Antony in B.C. 34, and put to death by Cleopatra in B.C. 30.
   3. Artaxias II., son of Artavasdes I., was hostile to Rome, and massacred the Romans in Armenia; Augustus, being appealed to, sent Tiberius to put Tigranes, the exiled brother of Artaxias, on the throne: Artaxias was murdered (per dolum propinquorum) before the arrival of Tiberius.
   5. Tigranes III. and Erato, son and daughter of Tigranes II., intermarried and reign conjointly: another short reign.
   6. Artavasdes II., son or brother of Artaxias II., is set up by Augustus. He is apparently driven out again by Tigranes III. and Erato.
   7. Ariobarzanes, a Mede, is set up by Gaius Caesar, B.C. 1 to A.D. 4.
   8. Artavasdes III., son of Ariobarzanes, is soon dismissed.
between the empires of Rome and Parthia, was mistrustful of us in consequence of the criminal proceedings of Antonius, who had first decoyed their king Artavasdes under pretence of friendship, then thrown him into prison, and finally put him to death. Artaxias, the son of Artavasdes, mindful of his father’s fate, was unfriendly to us; but he was protected in his throne and person by the power of the Arsacidae until he was treacherously slain by his own kinsmen. Thereupon Augustus gave Tigranes to the Armenians for their king, and Tiberius Nero conducted him into his kingdom. But neither Tigranes nor his two children reigned for any length of time, though the latter, in Oriental fashion, were united in matrimony as well as in sovereignty.

Then another Artavasdes was set up as king by order of Augustus; but he too was soon deposed, not without disaster to our arms. Next, Gaius Caesar, put Tigranes on the throne. Gaius died Feb. 21, A.D. 4. As the Romans never again attempted to make a serious invasion of Parthia, it was in Armenia that the interests of the two powers came most frequently into collision. When Tiberius, in B.C. 20, set Tigranes upon the throne of Armenia, Augustus regarded this intervention as equivalent to a conquest of Armenia. A denarius of that year bears the legend *Armenia capta* (Cohen, and ed. pp. 63-64); and Augustus says of himself, ‘When I might have made Armenia Major into a province I preferred to hand it over to Tigranes’ (Mon. Anc. 5, 24-27); and again, in regard to the events which led to the mission of Gaius Caesar in B.C. 1, *eandem gentem postea desiderantem et rebellantem domitam per Gaium filium meum regi Ariobarzanes tradidi*. Armenia was thus intended to be a Roman Protectorate; and a very troublesome one it proved, as it responded to all the ups and downs of party faction in Parthia. Rome pursued a very poor and half-hearted policy towards both kingdoms. Always anxious to have the appearance of patronising them, always putting a
was appointed to settle the affairs of Armenia; he set up Ariobarzanes, who was by birth a Mede, and was acceptable to the Armenians for his handsome person and his high spirit. Ariobarzanes died an accidental death; but the people would have nothing to do with his son, and for a time they tried female government, under a queen of the name of Erato. This queen was soon deposed; whereupon, in a state of doubt and disorganisation, not so much free as masterless, they set the fugitive Vonones on the throne. But Artabanus assumed a threatening attitude; Vonones had little or no backing among the Armenians; and as we should have been involved in war with the Parthians had we employed force on his behalf, Creticus Silanus, the Governor of Syria, sent for him and kept him a prisoner: maintaining him however in his royal state and title. How Vonones attempted afterwards to escape from this ignominious position, I shall relate in the proper place.

Meanwhile Tiberius was by no means displeased by these disturbances in the East, since they afforded him a pretext for removing Germanicus from his own familiar legions, and exposing him to the risks of treachery or disaster in a new provincial command. Germanicus, on the contrary, was all the more bent upon hurrying on a victory on account of the devotion of his soldiers to him, and the aversion of his uncle. He pondered over plans of campaign; and reflected upon his reverses and successes during the two past years. The Germans, he saw, had the worst of it in pitched battles and on level ground; the woods, the bogs, the shortness of the summer, and...
the early setting in of winter, were the things that
told in their favour. His own men had suffered
more from long marches, and from loss of their arms,
than from injuries in battle. The supply of horses in
the Gallic provinces was used up;\(^1\) his long baggage-
trains were easy to surprise, and hard to protect.
If, however, he were to make his approach by
sea, he would occupy the enemy’s country speedily
and without his knowledge, and begin operations at
once; the legions and their supplies would advance
together; horses and horsemen, conveyed up estuaries
and river-courses, would be landed without loss in
the heart of Germany.

6. 1  Germanicus made up his mind accordingly. He
despatched Publius Vitellius and Gaius Antius to
take the census of Gaul. Silius, Anteius and Caecina
were charged with the building of a flotilla. It was
thought that a thousand vessels would suffice. Some
were built of shallow draught, sharp at both ends,
but broad in the beam, so as better to stand the seas,
and some flat-bottomed, so as to take the ground with-
out hurt; most of them were fitted with steering-oars
on both sides,\(^8\) that they might change their direction
rapidly, and so be able to take the shore either way
on. Many were decked over, to carry engines,
horses or stores. Composed thus of vessels handy
for sailing and swift to row, and having on board a
force full of enthusiasm, the flotilla presented a truly
formidable appearance.

\(^1\) An exaggeration; for we read that
in A.D. 14 ad supplenda exercitus damna
certavere Galliae Hispaniae Italia (i.
71, 3). These words show that the
losses of Germanicus in Germany must
have been considerable.

\(^8\) It will be remembered that ancient
ships were steered by an oar at the side
of the vessel, near the stern. Repre-
sentations of Greek vessels show that it
was not unusual to have two such steer-
ing oars, one on each side, for more
rapid and effective steering. When
there were two such oars they could
at any moment be used, not merely to
steer or stop the vessel, but to pull
backwards.
A rendezvous was appointed at the Batavian Delta, where good landing-places afforded every facility for embarking troops, and fitting out an armed expedition. For the river Rhine, which down to this point flows in a single channel, broken only by small islands, separates as it were into two rivers at the beginning of the Batavian territory. The branch which skirts the German bank preserves its name, and its rapidity of current, until it mingles with the Ocean; that on the Gallic side, which is broader and more sluggish, has its name changed to 'Vahala' by the inhabitants. Lower down, it changes its name again for that of the Meuse, and discharges itself through the vast mouth of that river into the same Ocean.

While the flotilla was collecting, Germanicus despatched the legate Silius with a light force to raid the Chatti; while he himself, hearing that the fort upon the river Lippe was being besieged, marched with six legions in that direction. Sudden rains, however, prevented Silius from doing anything more than carry off some booty, together with the wife and daughter of Arpus, chief of the Chatti; and Germanicus got no opportunity of engaging the besiegers of the fort, for they dispersed at the news of his approach: before doing so they destroyed the mound recently set up as a memorial to the legions of Varus, and the old altar in honour of Drusus. The mound Germanicus thought it better to leave as it was; but

---

1 This expedition was to keep the Chatti employed, and prevent them from joining the Cheruscii. In each campaign we hear of similar by-excursions. Germanicus attacked the Chatti separately in A.D. 15 (i. 56). On that occasion the Cheruscii had thought of helping the Chatti. The Marsi also were attacked separately at the same time (lb.).

2 Nipp. this fort could not have been the same as Fort Aliso (below § 5), as Tacitus would naturally have named it when mentioning it for the first time. Fort Aliso was at the junction of the Lippe and Ahse (Dio, liv. 33. 4): the fort here referred to was probably further E., near the Teutoburger Wald.
he restored the altar, and took part with the legions in a funeral procession in his father's honour. And he secured the whole country between Fort Aliso and the Rhine by a new line of earthworks.

8. 1 By this time the fleet had mustered. The ships with supplies were sent on ahead; the legionaries and the allies were distributed over the various vessels; and Germanicus himself, entering the canal known as 'the Fosse of Drusus,' addressed a prayer to his father: entreating him to look graciously upon an enterprise so like his own, and to aid him both in counsel and in action by his memory and example. Passing thence through the lagoons into the ocean, he sailed without mishap as far as the mouth of the river Ems. He left the fleet upon the left bank of that river; but as the troops were to operate on the right bank, it would have been better had he either taken it further up the stream, or landed his army on the other side. As it was, several days were wasted in the construction of a bridge. The cavalry and the legions, crossing the first tidal marshes before the water rose, passed over in good order; but the rear, which was made up of allies, the Batavians among the number, was thrown into confusion in consequence of the men plunging into the water to show off their skill in swimming; and some of them were drowned.

4 While Germanicus was laying out his camp, news came that the Ampsivarii had revolted in his rear. He at once sent off Stertinius with a body of cavalry and

---

1 For this canal, see Furn. and Suet. Claudius I. The work connected the Rhine near Arnheim with the old Yssel at Doesburg.

2 His father, Drusus, had been the first to sail upon the North Sea ('Oceanum Septentrionalem, Suet. Claud. 1).

3 The MS. reads Angrivarii; but as that people are mentioned as living beyond the Weser, and bordering on the Cherusci (chap. 19, 3), we should read Ampsivarii with Nipp. That tribe lived between the Ems and the Weser; they were old allies of Rome.
light-armed troops, who chastised this perfidy with fire and sword.

There was nothing now to separate the Romans from the Cheruscans but the waters of the Weser. Arminius took his stand upon the further bank with his chiefs around him, and enquired if Caesar had arrived. On being informed that he was there, he craved permission to speak with his brother Flavus, a man of noted loyalty, who had lost an eye while fighting under Tiberius some years before, and was now serving in the Roman army. Permission having been granted, Flavus stepped forward and was saluted by his brother. Dismissing his own attendants, Arminius requested that the bowmen posted on our side of the bank might be withdrawn. As soon as they had retired, he asked his brother how he had got that ugly wound upon his face. Informed of the place and occasion of the battle, Arminius enquired, *What reward had he got for it?* Flavus enumerated his increase of pay, his necklace and crown, and other military distinctions. Arminius scoffed at all these as the trumpery rewards of slavery.

Then began a colloquy in opposing strains. The one dwelt on the power of Rome, the wealth of Caesar, the heavy punishments meted to the conquered, the kindly treatment in store for his brother if he submitted: even his wife and child had not been treated as enemies. The other spoke of the sacred claims of country, of their ancestral freedom, of the national Gods of Germany, of their mother, who added her prayers to his:—*let not Flavus choose to be the* 

---

1 This interview and conversation across the river have an air of romance about them. So also have the dream in chap. 14, 1; the omen of the flying eagles, chap. 17, 2; and still more the night ramble of Germanicus among the tents of the camp, chap. 13.
deserter and betrayer, rather than the leader, of his own kindred and his country. By degrees they fell to reproaches; and not even the intervening river would have kept them from coming to blows, had not Stertinius run up and held back Flavus, who was full of wrath, and crying out for horse and arms. On the other side was to be seen Arminius, threatening and challenging to combat: he used the Latin tongue freely in his discourse, having once commanded a force of his countrymen in our army.

II. 1 Next day the Germans formed up on the other side of the river. Not deeming it good generalship to risk a crossing for his legions without a bridge and a force to hold it, Germanicus sent his cavalry over by fords, under the command of Stertinius and Aemilius—the latter one of the first-grade centurions. The two passed over at separate points, so as to divide the forces of the enemy. The Batavians dashed through where the current was swiftest, under their leader Chariovalda. The Cherusci, feigning flight, lured our men on to a level spot surrounded by wood: then springing on them from every side, drove in their front, followed them up as they gave way, and having rolled them up into one mass, assailed them both from near and far. Chariovalda held his ground against this fierce onset for a time; till at last, urging his men to keep together and force their way through the attacking hordes in one compact body, he threw himself into the thickest of the fight; after having his horse killed under him, he fell amid a storm of javelins, with many of his chiefs around him. The

---

1 This and other incidents show that the process of Romanising Germany, even in language, had gone some way before the disaster of Varus. In chap. 13, 2 a German soldier is spoken of as knowing Latin, and familiar with Roman money.

2 *labiius* is poet. for ‘fell:’ *Et labenti equs describat vulnera Parthi,* Hor. Sat. ii. 1, 15.
rest fought their way out, or were saved by the cavalry of Stertinius and Aemilius coming up to the rescue.

Crossing the Weser, Caesar learnt from a deserter that Arminius had chosen a place for battle. Other tribes also, he was informed, had gathered in a wood sacred to Hercules; they were to make a night attack upon the camp. The informant seemed trustworthy, and the enemy's fires could be seen; and some scouts, creeping close up, brought word that they could hear the neighing of horses, and the hum of a vast and disorderly multitude. Being thus on the eve of a decisive battle, Germanicus resolved to sound the temper of his soldiers, and pondered how best he could get at their true sentiments. Tribunes and centurions, he reflected, said what was pleasant, rather than what they knew to be true; freedmen were still slaves in mind, friends were flatterers: were he to summon an assembly, whatever the few proposed, the rest would receive with acclamation. He must discover what the men really thought in their private unguarded moments, as they poured out their hopes and fears over the mess-table.

Accordingly, when night came on, he threw a wild-beast skin over his shoulders, and with a single attendant quitted the augural tent by a private passage unknown to the sentries. Making his way along the camp-roads, he stood beside the tents and drank in his own praises. One spoke of the General's noble birth, another of his fine person; almost all praised his endurance, his affability, his temper, always the same in moments grave or gay:—*They must show him their thanks on the battle-field, and at the same time*

---

1 *Augurale* here is the general's tent, as in Quint. viii. 2, 8.
offer up the faithless peace-breakers as victims to vengeance
and to glory.

Just then one of the enemy who could speak
Latin rode up to the lines, and in a loud voice
promised wives and lands in the name of Arminius to
all deserters, together with a hundred sesterces a day
so long as the war should last. This insult roused
the legions to fury:—Let daylight come, they cried, and
battle with it; they would indeed take the lands of the
Germans and carry off their wives: welcome the omen
which marked out for their booty the wealth and women of
the enemy!

About midnight the enemy made an attempt upon
the camp; but when they found the lines well guarded,
and all on the alert, they retired without discharging
their missiles.

14. 1 That same night, Germanicus had a happy dream.
He dreamt that he was engaged in sacrifice; that the
blood of the victim had spurted on to his purple-
bordered robe, and that he received a more hand-
some garment in its place at the hands of his grand-
mother Augusta. Encouraged by this omen, and
finding the auspices favourable, he called his men
together, and explained to them the precautions
which he had taken, and the tactics which he recom-

defended for the coming battle.

8 It was not level ground only, he told them, that was
 favourable to the Romans, but rugged and wooded country
also, if only judgment were used. The huge shields and
enormous spears of the barbarians were more unmanage-
able among the trunks of trees and thick undergrowth
than the pilum and swords of the Roman soldier, with his
close-fitting armour. Let them shower their blows thick,
and aim straight at the faces of the enemy. The Germans
had neither breast-plates nor helmets; their shields were only made of osiers, or thin boards daubed with paint, without iron or leather to give them strength. The front rank had spears of some sort; but the rest were only armed with short pikes, or wooden stakes burnt at the point. Their great stature\(^1\) made them terrible to look at, and formidable in a charge; but they were impatient of wounds, they would leave their ranks and run without sense of shame, without regard for their leaders: cowards in defeat, they respected no law, human or divine, in victory. If the legions desired an end to the weariness of voyages and marches, it lay on the field before them. The Elbe was now nearer than the Rhine: treading as he was in the footsteps of his father and his uncle, they had only to place him as conqueror where they had stood, and the war would be at an end.

These words roused the enthusiasm of the 15. soldiers, and the signal was given for battle.

Nor did Arminius and the other German chiefs fail to harangue their several tribesmen. These Romans, they said, were the runaways of the army of Varus: men who had broken out in mutiny rather than face war. Some of them had their backs scarred with wounds, others were crippled by the winds and the waves; once more they were offering themselves to the ire of their foes, with the Gods against them, and no hope before them. They had come in ships, over the pathless ocean, where none might meet them, none repulse and rout them: but once vanquished in open fight, neither winds nor oars could save them. Let them remember the greed, the cruelty, the arrogance of Rome; what remained for them but to hold fast their liberty, or die before becoming slaves?

Inflamed by these words, and clamouring for 16. 1

\(^1\) Cp. Germ. 4, 2, of the Germans, _magna corpora et tantum ad impetum valida._
battle, the barbarians were led down into a level
plain between the Weser and the hills called
Idiavisus,\(^1\) which takes the shape of an irregular
crescent, according as the river banks recede from, or
come up to,\(^2\) the projecting spurs of the hills. Behind
was rising ground, covered with high-growing trees,
but clear of undergrowth. The level ground, and
the lower parts of the wood behind it, were held
by the barbarians; the Cherusci held a position by
themselves on the heights, ready to fall upon the
Romans so soon as they should be engaged.

Our army advanced in the following order. In
front were the Gallic and German auxiliaries; next,
the unmounted archers. Then came four legions,
and the general himself with two Praetorian Cohorts\(^8\)

---

\(^1\) Explained by J. Grintm as meaning 'the Nymphs' meadow' = 'Ellen-
wiese.' Nipp, gives Idiavisus as the
name, remarking that Tacitus commonly
uses the Nom. case in this construction.
The site of the battle is supposed to
have been somewhere between the
Porta Westphalica and Hameln, on the
Weser.

\(^2\) The Latin here has a false double
antithesis, which will not bear trans-
lation. I take resitunt in its proper
sense, 'stand up against.' At one
point the river-banks recede from the
hills (cedunt); at another, the hills
stand up against (resitunt) and meet
the river. The two phrases state the
same thing from the point of view of the
river and the hills respectively. The
flat space left between two projecting
spurs, opposite the part of the river
which 'recedes,' would thus form 'an
irregular crescent.' An exactly similar
phrase, in which by a false antithesis
the same fact is repeated twice over,
occurrs in chap. 65, 3: alter facilitate,
alter fraude, cuncta inter se concederent
acciperentque. The site cannot be identi-
fied, or even very clearly understood,
from the description. Supposing the
Romans to be on the right or E. bank, on
crescent-shaped ground, with their left
on the river, they would have rising
ground (one of the projecting spurs) in
their front, and on their right the main
hill-chain. Both these slopes were
wooded. The main force of the enemy
were in front, some on the plain, some
on the wooded slope rising behind it;
the Cherusci were on the hills to the
Roman right, ready to charge the
Roman right flank so soon as the front
ranks should be engaged. Germanicus
sends off his cavalry in two detachments.
The validissimi equitum are sent
round to the right, to take the Cherusci
in the rear. Stertinius, cum ceteris
firmis, is to get in the rear of the main
army—marching probably round their
right flank. Thus both the Cherusci
on the enemy's left, and their main
body, found themselves attacked at the
same time in front and rear; the
Cheruscan attempt to force a wedge
into the Roman right flank being thus
foiled. Stertinius, having made his way
round behind the Cheruscans, fell on
their rear just as they were about to
charge the Roman right flank. Their
charge was thus disordered; and they
also, as well as the main body, found
themselves between two attacking forces.

\(^8\) Nipp, thinks that these praetorian
cohorts must have been sent to Ger-
manicus from Rome, just as two were
sent with Drusus to Pannonia; for the
name was now appropriated to the
city Guards. Possibly Germanicus
may have been allowed praetorian co-
horts of his own; though no mention is
and a body of picked cavalry; then four more legions, the light infantry and the mounted bowmen, with the rest of the allied cohorts. All were on the alert, ready to pass from the order of march into the order of battle.

On sighting the Cheruscī, who had dashed forward impetuously, Germanicus ordered his best squadrons to charge them in flank, sending Stertinius round with the rest of the cavalry to take them in the rear, while he himself was to come up at the critical moment. In this interval, a splendid omen arrested his attention: eight eagles were seen flying towards and entering the wood. Forward, legions! he cried, follow the birds of Rome, your own Divinities! The infantry charged in front, and at the same moment the cavalry that had been sent forward fell upon the rear and flank. Thereupon a strange sight was to be seen—two bodies of the enemy flying in opposite directions: those who had occupied the wood were running into the open, those formed up on the plain, into the wood. Midway between the two the Cheruscī were being pushed down from the heights; conspicuous among them was Arminius, sustaining the fight by hand, voice, and wound. Throwing himself upon the bowmen, he would have broken through at that point, had not the Raetian, Vindelician and Gallic cohorts planted their standards in the way. Making a desperate effort, thanks to the swiftness of his horse, he got off: he had smeared his face with his blood so as to prevent his being recognised.

made of such a body in connection with Germanicus throughout the mutiny. They were evidently picked troops (chap. xx, 6).

1 For the special signa of the cohorts, see l. 18, 3: 34, 4. The Chauci were subject to Rome. A Vexillum is stationed in their country (l. 38, 1); they offered assistance in the campaign of A.D. 15 (l. 60, 3), and in committitum adscidi sunt.
Others say that the Cherusci serving among the Roman auxiliaries recognised him and permitted him to escape. Inguiomerus owed his safety either to his own bravery, or to a like device; the rest were cut down in every direction. Many attempted to swim across the Weser, but were shot down by javelins, carried off by the current, or overwhelmed by the rush of fugitives and the falling in of the banks. Others ignominiously climbed up trees and hid themselves in the branches. Some of these were shot down, by way of sport, by archers brought up for the purpose; or else the trees were felled, and the occupants dashed to the ground.

18. 1 It was a great victory, and one not costly to our side. The slaughter of the enemy lasted from the fifth hour till night-fall; the ground was covered with their arms and corpses for a distance of ten miles. Among the booty captured there were chains which had been destined for the Romans, brought in expectation of certain victory.

2 The troops hailed Tiberius as ‘Imperator’ on the field of battle, and built a mound on which were set up arms in the style of a trophy, with the names of the conquered tribes written below.

19. 1 This spectacle roused the indignation and fury of the Germans more than all their wounds, losses and disasters. The men who but now were preparing to abandon their settlements and retire behind the Elbe, flew to arms, and called for battle: chiefs and tribesmen alike, young and old. Sudden and harassing attacks were made upon the Romans on their march.

---

1 For this ancient custom, whereby the soldiers saluted their victorious commander as ‘Imperator’ on the field of battle, see lli. 74, 6, and note. The salutation was addressed not to Germanicus, but to Tiberius, whose imperium gave him the auspices and the command-in-chief of all the armies of the empire. See chap. 22, 1.
At last the enemy took up a position where some flat marshy ground was closed in all round by a river and a wood.\footnote{It is hopeless to attempt to localise the geography from the descriptions of Tacitus. Ancient historians, as a rule, had little eye for ground, and little sense of what was needed in order to make a description intelligible to a reader, or even to a traveller visiting the scene. No one can discover from Livy’s account of the battle of the Trebia on which side of that river the contending armies were originally drawn up; and having spent some time, Polybius in hand, in exploring the valleys which compete for the honour of having conducted Hannibal across the Alps, I formed the opinion that the conditions of the Polybian narrative which the champions of each route consider as decisive in their favour, are fairly satisfied in them all. Hence the vast literature on the subject. The river indicated in the present passage would seem to be some river E. of the Weser—possibly the Leine or the Aller—as Germanicus was obviously moving from the Elbe to the Weser. After the victory which follows, he boasts that he has conquered all the tribes up to the latter river (chap. 22, 1, and 41, 2). See Furn.’s note.} The wood itself was surrounded by another deep morass, except on one side where the Angrivarii\footnote{The Angrivarii were N. of the Cherusc; they apparently occupied the part of Hanover E. of the Weser.} had raised a broad mound as a boundary between themselves and the Cherusi. On this mound the enemy posted his foot; his cavalry were concealed in the adjoining wood, so as to be on the rear of the legions as soon as they should enter it.

These dispositions were all known to Germanicus.\footnote{Seius Tubero is mentioned in iv. 29, 1 as a distinguished citizen and personal friend of Tiberius.} He knew the enemy’s plan of battle, and the nature of the ground; nothing escaped him: and he was ready to turn the cunning of his foes to their own destruction. On the level ground he placed the Legate Seius Tubero,\footnote{Seius Tubero is mentioned in iv. 29, 1 as a distinguished citizen and personal friend of Tiberius.} with the cavalry. The infantry he so disposed that one part should enter the wood on the flat, while another climbed up the mound in front; he himself took the post of difficulty, leaving the rest to the Legates. Those who had to enter on the level, got in easily; but those who had to attack the mound, having practically a wall to climb, were severely handled from above. Seeing that his men were getting the worst of it at close quarters, the General withdrew the legions for a while, and
ordered his slingers and javelin-men to drive off the enemy; spears too were hurled at them by engines. In this way the defenders, who suffered the more in proportion as they were the more exposed, were dislodged; Caesar himself stormed the mound at the head of his Praetorians, and charged into the wood beyond. Here a hand-to-hand fight took place. The enemy had a morass behind them; the Romans were closed in by hill or river. For both alike retreat was impossible; their only hope was in their valour, in victory their only safety.

21. 1 The courage of the Germans was equal to our own; but their arms and their style of fighting put them to a disadvantage. With their great numbers crowded into a narrow space, they had no room to thrust out, or draw back, their enormous spears; forced to a stand-up fight, they could not turn to account their natural strength and agility. Our men, holding their shields close against their breasts, and grasping their swords firmly by the hilt, hewed at the giant limbs and exposed faces of the barbarians, and so opened for themselves a road over the dead bodies of the enemy.

Under the strain of the prolonged conflict, and perhaps impeded by his recent wound, Arminius lost his presence of mind. Inguioomerus displayed his old valour in every part of the field, but his good fortune failed him. Germanicus had thrown off his helmet, that he might more easily be recognised. He bid his men slay and slay on: no captives were wanted: nothing but the extermination of the race would bring the war to an end. Late in the afternoon he withdrew one of the legions from the battle-field to lay out a camp;

1 The words of Tacitus (fundiorese) seem to refer to two different kinds of slingers; the distinction between them is unknown.
the rest gluttoned themselves with the blood of the enemy till night fell. The cavalry were engaged, but with no decisive result.

Having publicly commend his victorious troops, Germanicus set up a huge pile of arms with this proud inscription:—Dedicated to Mars, Jupiter and Augustus by the army of Tiberius, after conquering all the nations between the Rhine and the Elbe. Of himself he made no mention, fearing to excite jealousy; or perhaps satisfied with the consciousness of what he had done. Soon afterwards, he despatched Stertinius on an expedition against the Ampsivarii; but these made haste to surrender. Throwing themselves on his mercy, and accepting all his conditions, they received a full pardon.

The season being now far advanced, some of the legions were sent back to their winter quarters by land; but Germanicus put most of them on board ship, and took them down the Ems to the Ocean. At first the sea was calm, and the water rippled gently beneath the oars and prows of the thousand ships as they sailed or were rowed along. But before long a storm of hail burst out of a dense black cloud; the sea rose; and squalls, coming from every quarter at once, made it impossible for the mariners either to see or steer. The soldiers, in their terror and inexperience, got in the way of the crews, and impeded the skilled seamen by clumsy attempts at assistance. Then sea and sky together were swept by a southeast gale, bred in the swelling uplands and deep gorges of Germany. Gathering strength within a

---

1 See Furn. here, and on l. 44, 4. The phrase pro continent has the same meaning in both places, equivalent to "in public meeting."

2 Here again Nipp. reads Ampsivarii as in chap. 8, 4 (see n.), and 24, 5. He is apparently right in all three places.
vast bank of clouds, and chilled by the proximity of
the frozen north, this wind caught the ships and
scattered them, carrying some out to the open sea,
some among islands\(^1\) bristling with rocks and shoals.

4 Scarcely, and with much difficulty, had these dangers
been avoided, when the tide turned, so as to run in
the same direction as the wind. The anchors now
would no longer hold; the water came in faster than it
could be bailed out; horses, baggage-animals, and even
arms, were thrown overboard to lighten the vessels,
into which the water found its way by leaking through
the seams, or by dashing in over the sides.

24. 1 Just as the Ocean is the roughest of all seas, and
the climate of Germany the most inclement of all
climes, so did that disaster exceed all others in
novelty and magnitude. On one side were shores
occupied by enemies; on the other was a sea so
deep and vast that it is believed to be the outermost
of all, with no land beyond. Some of the ships
foundered; many were cast upon distant, uninhabited
islands, where the soldiers perished of starvation, or
had to support life by feeding upon the bodies of
horses thrown ashore along with them. The galley
of Germanicus, alone of the whole fleet, came to land
in the territory of the Chauci. Here he passed all
those days and nights upon the cliffs and headlands,
reproaching himself as the cause of this great disaster,
and was with difficulty restrained by his friends
from seeking an end in that self-same sea.

4 At length the tide flowed back, the wind became
favourable, and the disabled ships began to come in;
some with short complement of rowers, some with
outrace from garments for sails, some towed by vessels

\(^1\) Another romance. There are no rocky islands on these coasts near the Ems and the Weser, only shoals and quicksands.
that were less crippled than themselves. These were at once repaired and sent off to search the islands. In this way the greater number of the men were recovered; many were ransomed from inland tribes and brought back by the Ampsivarii, who had lately returned to their allegiance; some who had been carried as far as Britain were sent back by the princes of that country.\footnote{1} Strange were the tales told by those who returned from those distant parts: tales of whirlpools; of unheard-of birds; of sea-monsters; of forms half-beast, half-human: whether they really saw these things, or only imagined in their terror that they had seen them.

The rumour of the loss of the fleet roused once more the warlike hopes of the Germans; but this only increased the determination of Germanicus. He ordered Gaius Silius to march against the Chatti with 30,000 foot and 300 horse; while he himself, with a still larger force, attacked the Marsi,\footnote{2} whose chief Mallovendus had lately tendered his submission, and reported that the eagle of one of the Varian legions lay buried in a wood close by, with a small force to guard it. One detachment was sent off at once to draw out the enemy in front, while another was to go round behind and open up the ground. Both parties succeeded in their purpose; and the success encouraged Caesar to advance further into the interior, plundering and destroying as he went. The enemy did not venture on an engagement; or if they made a

\footnote{1} If this mention of Britain be not pure romance, it would imply that the British princes were friendly to Rome at this time.
\footnote{2} The fact that military expeditions should be necessary to hold in check such tribes as the Chatti and the Marsi, who had been already subdued (see 1, 50 and 56)—in spite of the boast of Germanicus that he had conquered all the nations between the Rhine and the Elbe (chap. 22, 1)—shows how transitory these successes must have been. See the virtual admission of Tacitus himself in chap. 26, 2.
stand anywhere, were at once routed. Prisoners reported that the tribes had never been so cowed before:—The Romans were indeed invincible, they muttered, no misfortunes could overcome them. Their fleet had been wrecked, their arms lost; the shores were strewn with the dead bodies of their men and horses, and yet they had attacked as bravely, as fiercely as before, and in numbers that seemed greater than ever.

26. 1 The army was now taken back to winter quarters, in high spirits at having made up for their disasters at sea by this successful expedition. Germanicus treated the soldiers handsomely, making good to every man his reported losses.

2 It was now evident that the enemy’s power was broken, and that he was preparing to sue for peace; one more summer would bring the war to a close. 1 But

1 This modest statement of the final result of the German campaigns of Germanicus—that the enemy was thought to be shaken and ready to sue for peace—carries with it the confutation of all the praises showered by Tacitus on his generalship. Tacitus attributes to him every quality of a great general; he does not hesitate to regard him as the equal, nay the superior, of Alexander the Great (ii. 73, 4): yet nothing is more certain, from the narrative of Tacitus himself, than that the history of these three campaigns is but a story of immense and finely organised forces led into aimless adventures without strategic foresight, winning barren victories at the cost of repeated disasters, and only rescued from destruction by the disciplined valour of the legions, and the steady hardihood of the subordinate commanders.

3 The failure of the operations as a whole is kept out of the reader’s view by the annalistic form of treatment. Each campaign, or part of a campaign, is narrated separately, under its own year; in each the story is so told as to bring out to the utmost the personal qualities of Germanicus, and the steadfastness of his troops. But there is no general review of the results as a whole; no criticism of the rashness which put in jeopardy the main military strength of Rome (praecipuam rovur Rhenum iuxta, iv. 5, 9); and although Tacitus had made a special study of Germany and the sources of her strength, he shows no appreciation of the political problem which should have stood first in the mind of Germanicus—how to win over the German tribes and enlist their sympathies on behalf of Rome, as Caesar had done with the Gallic tribes in Gaul. It was as much by gaining the good-will of the Gauls as by beating them down in battle that Caesar had won Gaul for Rome.

Let us recount briefly the details of the campaigns exactly as given by Tacitus.

First Campaign, A.D. 14.

Germanicus crosses the Rhine with a force of nearly 30,000 men. He storms the Marsian villages; ravages fifty miles of country with four columns or ‘wedges’; spares neither sex nor age; and destroys the temple of Tamfana. The Bructeri, Tubantes, and Usipetes rise in his rear, and beset his return. The army gets through with difficulty; fortifies a camp, and retires unmolested (quietum inde iter) to winter quarters (l. 49-51).
Tiberius plied Germanicus with letters pressing him to come home and celebrate the Triumph voted in his honour:—

He had achieved enough, and suffered enough. He had won great battles: but he must not forget the many and grievous losses which he had sustained, through no fault of his own, from the winds and the waves. He himself had been sent nine times to Germany by the Divine Augustus; but he had always effected more by policy than by arms. It was by policy that the Sygambri had been brought to submission, and peace imposed upon the Suevi and their king Maroboduus. Now that Roman

Second Campaign, A.D. 15.
In this year two separate expeditions are undertaken: (1) In early spring the entire army of eight legions, with allied forces, march out in two divisions to Mount Taunus. The Chatti are taken unawares, their women and children are slaughtered or captured. The Marsi (conquered last year), again in arms, are driven back. An embassy arrives from Segestes, asking for help against Arminius, who is besieging him. Germanicus turns back, rescues Segestes, captures Thusnelda and some Varian spoils. Arminius rouses the Cherusci and other tribes (i. 56–59). (2) In the summer, Caecina marches his four legions to the Ems; Germanicus takes the other four thither by sea. An eagle is rescued from the Bructeri; the country between the Lippe and the Ems is ravaged. The scene of the Varian disaster is visited, and a tumulus erected. Arminius draws on the Romans to wooded ground; the whole force barely escapes disaster (manibus aequis abscessum). The army returns to the Ems; Caecina, with his half of it, taking the route of the ‘Long Bridges’. He is all but intercepted by the Germans. After two days of desperate struggle, with every condition against him, he fights his way out and secures his legions in a camp: his escape, on the following day, and his safe retreat to the Rhine, are due to the rash attempt of the enemy to carry his camp by assault. P. Vitellius, returning with two legions by the coast, suffers severely from the equinoctial tides (i. 60–70).

Third Campaign, A.D. 16.
Final effort of Germanicus. A flotilla of 1000 vessels is built. Silius makes a fruitless expedition against the Chatti; Germanicus himself, in early spring, with a force of six legions, relieves a besieged fort on the Lippe, and restores the altar to Drusus; he retires without waiting even to rebuild the tumultus to Varus, destroyed since last summer.

The flotilla being now ready, it sails down the Rhine, passes through the fossa Drusiana, and lands at the mouth of the Ems. Germanicus marches to the Weser, and crosses that river, not without loss; he defeats the gathered tribes at Ildavisium with great slaughter. His erection of a trophy rouses all the tribes once more; he has to engage his whole army on ground of the enemy’s choosing. After a desperate fight Roman valour gains the day; Germanicus retreats to the Ems, leaving another boastful trophy as sole fruit of his victory. The flotilla returns, after suffering great losses in a storm. The year closes with an expedition by Silius and 33,000 troops against the Chatti, and one by Germanicus himself with a still larger force against the Marsi. Nothing but plunder is attempted by either force; one more of the standards of Varus is recovered (ii. 5–26).

Such were the achievements of Germanicus in Germany; thus ended the efforts of Rome to subdue that country. And yet it is on the strength of these three campaigns that we are calmly asked by Tacitus to regard Germanicus as the military equal, if not the superior, of Alexander I.
honour had been vindicated, the Cheruscii and other insurgent tribes should be left to their own dissensions.

Germanicus begged for one year more to complete his work; but the Emperor put a pressure on him too great to be resisted by offering to him a second Consulship—the duties to be discharged in person.¹ To this he added that if the war was to go on, he should leave his brother Drusus some opportunity of distinction, seeing that in the dearth of other enemies, Germany offered him his only opportunity of gaining the title of 'Imperator,' or the honour of a Triumph. Germanicus hesitated no longer; but he felt that the reasons assigned were false, and that it was out of jealousy that he was being dragged away from a distinction which he had already won.

About this same time Libo Drusus,² a member of the Scribonian family, was accused of treasonable designs. As it was on this occasion³ that those practices were first devised which for so many years⁴ ate

---

¹ This part of the promise was not fulfilled. Germanicus had already left Rome to discharge his Eastern mission, and was in the city of Nicopolis in Achaia, when he entered upon his consulship in the year A.D. 18. He spent the whole of that year abroad, and died at Antioch late in A.D. 19.

² This M. Drusus Libo was probably brother of the L. Scribonius Libo who was consul in this same year. His mother Pompeia was daughter of Sextus Pompey and Scribonia; hence Pompey was his great-grandfather. His grandmother, Scribonia, was niece to Scribonia, the first wife of Augustus and mother of Julia. Thus Scribonia was his great-great aunt, and her descendants, through Julia, would be consobrini.

³ The words tum primum are usually held to refer only to the treachery, now for the first time used in delation. But the words which follow, quae tot per annos rem publicam exederat, are more appropriate to the system of delation as a whole. Tacitus is never tired of denouncing the iniquities of that system; he comes fresh to the attack each time, and treats each outbreak of accusations as a new development. Delation for majestas is first formally introduced in i. 72; in i. 74 the rise of the delatores is described in scathing terms. The case before us (A.D. 16) is the next that occurred after those recounted in i. 73 and 74 (A.D. 15); yet Tacitus treats it as if it were the first of its kind, and takes the desired opportunity of denouncing it once more. In A.D. 17 he tells us adolescet interea lex maiestatis (ii. 50, 1); and after fully describing the cases of Clutorius Priscus, A.D. 21 (iii. 49–51), of Silanus, A.D. 22 (iii. 66–65), and of Egnius (iii. 70), he specially notes the year A.D. 23 as marking the deterioration of the Government of Tiberius in the matter of prosecutions: repente . . . saevire ipsa aut saevientibus vires pruèbere (iv. 3, 1).

⁴ Tacitus writes as if from a haven of rest, under the benign rule of Nerva and Trajan, when such political prosecutions were a thing of the past.
like a canker into our public life, I will recount with some minuteness the beginning, the development and the issue of this affair.

A Senator called Firmius Catus, one of Libo’s intimate friends, encouraged that feeble-minded and credulous youth to have recourse to magical rites, to Chaldean fortune-tellers and interpreters of dreams; representing to him that he was great-grandson of Pompeius; that Scribonia, once the wife of Augustus, was his great-aunt; that the Caesars were his cousins, and that his own house was full of ancestral images. Cato also encouraged him in extravagance, and led him into debt; sharing in all his debaucheries and embarrassments, so as to accumulate evidence for his entanglement.

Having collected enough witnesses, as well as slaves to testify to the same facts, he asked an audience of the Emperor; having first informed him of the nature of the charge, and the name of the accused person, through Flaccus Vescularius, a Roman knight, who was on more intimate terms with Tiberius than himself. Without rejecting the information, the Emperor declined the interview:—Communications, he intimated, might be conveyed as before through the same Flaccus as go-between. Meanwhile he advanced Libo to the Praetorship; he invited him to his table, shewing no estrangement in his face, no agitation, still less resentment, in his language; and although he might easily have put a stop to the whole affair,

---

1 Lit. ‘rites of the magi’ or mathematici, i.e. ‘astrologers.’ Tacitus himself believes in the art of astrology; though he admits that its reputation is damaged by impostors (vi. 22, 5). Tiberius and other emperors believed in it and practised it; hence all the greater danger to others who ventured to do the same. The Magi were an inferior order of spiritualists, dealing with drugs, philtres, raisings from the dead, etc.

2 Flaccus Vescularius is mentioned in vi. 10, 2 as one of the oldest intimates of Tiberius, his companion in Rhodes and Capri. He fell a victim to his fury after the fall of Sejanus, in A.D. 32.
he preferred to be kept informed of everything that Libo said or did. At last a certain Junius, who had been pressed by Libo to raise the spirits of the dead by incantations, reported this fact to the well-known informer Fulciniius Trio, 1 a man of sinister ambition, and notorious for his talents as an accuser. Trio at once impeached 2 Libo, waited on the Consuls, and demanded an investigation by the Senate: a summons was at once issued for the consideration of a grave and horrible affair.

29. 1 Meanwhile Libo assumed mourning attire, and accompanied by some ladies of high rank went from house to house, appealing to his kinsmen, and implored the services of an advocate. Every one refused: each giving a different excuse, but all alike afraid. On the day of the trial, broken down by terror and anxiety—some say his indisposition was feigned—Libo had to be carried to the door of the Senate-house in a litter. Leaning on his brother’s arm, he lifted up hand and voice to the Emperor, imploring mercy. Tiberius received him with an unmoved countenance. He then read aloud the indictment, and the names of the informers, in such a measured tone of voice as seemed neither to aggravate the charges nor to make light of them.

30. 1 Additional accusers had now come forward. Absurd charges

---

1 This man Trio was a notorious informer and instrument of imperial tyranny. He was the principal accuser of Cn. Piso (iii. 10, 1), and for that service Tiberius promised him promotion (iii. 19, 1); a promise fulfilled by his elevation to the consulship in A.D. 37, the year of the fall of Sejanus. During his year of office he attacked his colleague Regulus for being too lenient to the supporters of Sejanus; hence a bitter quarrel between the two (v. xi. 1–3). Finally Trio committed suicide in fear of accusation, A.D. 36 (vi. 38, 2).

2 Corripere reum seems only to be a stronger form of the phrase nomen defert, 'to institute a prosecution.' See iii. 28, 5 and 66, 2.

3 Apparently the consul of the year: see above. The libellus mentioned were the documents put in for the prosecution, as in chap. 30, 1.
Besides Trio and Catus, Fonteius Agrippa and Gaius Vibius disputed for the honour of conducting the prosecution. As none of them would give way and Libo himself was undefended, Vibius announced that he would state the charges, one by one, and produced the informations. These proved to be of the most absurd kind: for instance, Libo was said to have enquired of the astrologers whether he was likely to be rich enough some day to pave the Via Appia with money all the way to Brundisium. There were other follies of the same kind, deserving of pity rather than of censure.

There was, however, one document in which the accuser alleged that certain sinister or at least secret marks, in Libo’s handwriting, were set against the names of senators or members of the Caesarian family. As this was denied by the accused, it was determined to apply torture to the slaves who could give evidence; and as there was an old decree of Senate which forbade the torturing of slaves in regard to a capital charge against their master, Tiberius shewed his cunning as the inventor of a new principle of law by ordering the slaves to be sold singly to the agent of the Treasury. In this way testimony might be

1 The same who offered his daughter to be a Vestal Virgin (chap. 86).
2 [Ius perorandi] is not the right of speaking last, but of making the chief speech in prosecution, after evidence had been taken.
3 This was an old legal rule; but there were certain statutory exceptions to it (Cic. pro Deliot. 1. 3, and pro Mil. 22, 59). Among these exceptions probably [maiestas] (certainly in later times) was included. Dio speaks of Augustus resorting to this device in B.C. 8 (lv. 5, 4), so that the sarcasm of Tacitus seems ill-placed. The words of Tacitus, as they stand, would imply that in old times the senate had the power of legislating, and of laying down principles of law. This was not the case. The praetors had the power of laying down principles of interpretation in their annual edicts; in this case perhaps the senate had approved of the particular point referred to after it had been agreed upon by the magistrates (Greenidge, p. 275). The senate could only recommend a particular measure, or interpretation of law, to the magistrates; if the recommendation was adopted, it might be described (as here) as introduced by a decree of senate. See n. on vi. 17, 2.
4 The [actor publicus] was an official of the treasury who had to do with state property. He appears again in iii. 67, 3 as taking over the possession of
extracted from the slaves against Libo without infringing the rule of Senate. Thereupon the accused asked for an adjournment until the day following; and on returning to his own house, he drew up a final appeal to the Emperor, putting it into the hands of his kinsman Publius Quirinius for presentation.

The answer he received was that the petition must be addressed to the Senate. Meanwhile soldiers surrounded his house, and even clattered about the fore-court; making themselves heard and seen at the very moment when Libo was at table, holding a feast which he had ordered as a final gratification. In an agony of terror, he called upon some one to strike: then clutching at his slaves, he sought to thrust a sword into their hands. Shrinking back in horror, the slaves upset a lamp which was standing on the table; and then in the darkness, which was for him the darkness of death, he stabbed himself twice in the belly, and fell groaning to the ground. His freedmen

4 Nipp. here supplies a fine instance of the sense of humour sometimes displayed by learned commentators. From the special mention of the feast, he argues that the word escrutatus must refer, not to mental anguish, but to the agonies of indigestion, brought on by terror! Equally happy is his note on the passage in chap. 13, 1, where Tacitus tells how Germanicus overheard his soldiers in their tents praising him for his per seris per iucos eundem animum. A fondness for jests, Nipp. tells us, could not have been part of the character of Germanicus, since Tacitus describes him, in chap. 72, 3, as 'venerable' (visuque et auditu insita venerabilitis). As no man worthy of veneration could indulge in jests, he therefore inserts the word in before animum in chap. 13, 1, and translates 'heard the soldiers praise him in words of jest or earnest to the same purport.' Apart from the defective psychology of the commentator, it must be pointed out that the words in eundem animum could not possibly mean 'to the same purport.'
ran up at the sound; the soldiers, seeing he was dead, took their departure. The prosecution, nevertheless, was carried through in the Senate with the same determination to the end, though Tiberius declared on oath that he would have begged for the life of the accused, however guilty, had he not put an end to himself so precipitately.

The property of Libo was divided among his accusers; and Praetorships were conferred, out of the ordinary course, on such of them as were of senatorial rank. Cotta Messalinus proposed that Libo's bust should not be borne in procession at the funerals of his descendants; Gnaeus Lentulus, that none of the Scribonian family should bear the name of Drusus. Days of public thanksgiving were appointed on the motion of Pomponius Flaccus; offerings were voted to Jupiter, Mars, and Concord; and it was resolved that the 13th of September, the day on which Libo had put an end to himself, should be kept as a public holiday. These last resolutions were adopted on the motion of Lucius Piso, Gallus Asinius, Papius Mutilus, and Lucius Apronius respectively: I give the names of those who brought forward these adulatory proposals that all may learn how long this form of evil has flourished among us.

1 We know from vi. 29, 2 that, as a rule, suicide saved a condemned man's property from complete confiscation; but in such cases, whether suicide followed or not, the accusers received a fourth part of the condemned man's property as a reward. In the case before us they received the whole. Some years later (iv. 3, 3), it was proposed that in cases of suicide the accusers should receive nothing at all; but to that Tiberius objected. The case in iv. 30, 1, quoted by Furn., is not in point; the money there refunded was not a reward for the accusers, but a repayment of sums claimed as legally due to the fiscus.

2 This does not necessarily imply, as Furn. supposes, that these men received supernumerary praetorships, but only that they were admitted to the office before the regular time.

3 For Cotta Messalinus see iv. 30, 6; v. 3, 4.

4 The word here used is auctoritates. The phrase auctoritas senatus is properly used of a resolution of senate on a matter not within its competence, and therefore not having the force of law, but yet carrying much weight as an important expression of opinion—like an abstract resolution in our House of Commons.
Decrees were also passed for the expulsion of astrologers from Italy. One of their number, Lucius Pituanius, was hurled from the Tarpeian Rock; another, of the name of Publius Marcius, was executed by the Consuls after the old fashion,\(^1\) to the sound of the trumpet, outside the Esquiline gate.\(^2\)

33. At the next meeting of Senate denunciations of the luxury of the time were delivered by Quintus Haterius,\(^3\) a Consular, and by Octavius Fronto, an ex-Praetor. A decree was passed prohibiting the use of solid gold plate for private entertainments, and forbidding for men the shameful practice of wearing clothes made of silk. Fronto went still further, and called for restrictions in regard to silver-plate, furniture, and the number of a man’s slaves; for it was still a common thing for senators, when called upon\(^4\) to speak, to make any proposal which they might deem for the public good.

Gallus Asinius took the other side. With the increase of the Empire, he argued, private wealth had increased also. There was nothing new in this; it had been so from the earliest times. Wealth meant one thing in

---

1. *i.e.* decapitation, after being beaten to death. See Nipp.’s note, and xiv. 48, 4; xvi. 11, 6; also Suet. Nero, 49.
2. The usual place of execution, just inside the modern *Porta Maggiore*. In old times the trumpet was sounded through the city as a summons to the *comitia centuriata* to bear a capital case.
3. Q. Haterius was evidently a person anxious to keep himself in evidence. See i. 13, 4, and iii. 57, 3. The character of his oratory is described iv. 61, 2; being deficient in *mediatio et labor*, his *canorum et prodromi* style of oratory secured no reputation for him after his death.
4. *i.e.* for private, as distinct from sacrificial, use.
5. A Roman senator could not speak unless called upon by the presiding magistrate; but once called upon, he could speak on any subject he pleased, whether relevant to the motion before the house or not. A good example of this occurs in Cicero’s 7th Philippic. Cicero devotes a few words at the beginning and at the end of that speech to the motion under discussion; the body of the speech is taken up with a general harangue against Antony. See chap. 38, 3. The motion of Caecina that wives should not accompany their husbands into provinces was brought on in this way (ll. 33: see iii. 34, 1; and also iv. 74, 3). Tacitus commends the practice, as enabling independent members of Senate to call attention to matters of public importance. It may be compared in this respect with the practice of putting questions to Ministers in our Parliament; or with special motions for adjournment.
the days of the Fabricii, another in those of the Scipios; all must be judged with reference to the condition of the State. When the State was poor, the establishments of citizens were small; but now that it had reached its present scale of magnificence, private grandeur had increased also. In such matters as slaves, plate, and articles of daily use, nothing was moderate or extravagant except in proportion to the owner’s means. Senators and knights had special scales of fortune required of them, not because they were different from other people, but that they might have the same pre-eminence in matters conducive to peace of mind and health of body as was accorded to them in place, rank, and privilege: unless indeed it were maintained that men of mark were to have more anxieties, and to run greater risks, than others, and yet be deprived of the means for their alleviation.

Veiled under fine phrases like these, this acknowledgment of vice won for Gallus a ready assent from an audience like-minded with himself. Tiberius added that the time was not opportune for such a censorship; but that, should any deterioration in manners take place, he would not fail to apply a remedy.

In the course of this debate Lucius Piso, after 34.

1 i.e. distinct from each other, as well as from those of a lesser rank. The fortune required for a senator was a million sesterces; for an eques, 400,000. See i. 75, 5, and Dio, liv. 17, 9.

2 The insertion of nunc after ut in this passage, with Halm and others, may be avoided by supposing that by careless writing ut does duty twice over; first with locus, ordinibus and dignationibus, in the sense of ‘just as,’ the verb antistitis being supplied; and again before antistitis, in a Final or Definitive sense. See the curious use of ut in chap. 35, 2.

3 The wisdom and good sense of this speech of Asinius, which reads as if it had been delivered in a modern political assembly, are distasteful to the ideas of Tacitus; yet he puts the case so admirably that it is hard to believe that he did not feel the force of the reasoning.

4 Here, and in iii. 33, 1, Nipp. takes the words inter quae to mean ‘in the course of the same debate’ or ‘the same meeting of senate,’ as here rendered.

5 This L. Piso (there were several of the name) ventured to defend his brother Gnaeus Piso, when others declined through fear (iii. 13, 2). Tiberius never forgave him the freedom he showed on the occasions here mentioned. He was accused of majestas, and committed suicide, A.D. 24 (iv. 21, 1-4).
declamimg against the favouritism of the courts, the corruption of the tribunals, and the savage eagerness of orators in threatening prosecutions, announced his intention to withdraw from the city, and take up his abode in some retired and distant country place; with which words he proceeded to leave the Senate-house.

2 This greatly disturbed Tiberius: he did all that soft words could do to soothe Piso, and urged his relatives also to use their influence and entreaties to prevent his departure.

3 Not long afterwards, this same Piso gave a no less notable example of sturdy independence by summoning into court Urgulania, a lady raised above the reach of the law because of her friendship with Augusta. Defying Piso, she refused to obey the summons, and went in her litter to the Palatine; but in spite of her protest that Piso's action was an affront and outrage to herself, he refused to give way.

4 Tiberius thought it due to his mother to humour her so far, and announced that he would appear before the Praetor to support Urgulania. Bidding his guards follow at some distance, he came forth from the Palace, and might be seen making his way through the crowd, conversing calmly as he walked. In vain did Piso's friends implore him to desist; and at last Augusta gave orders for payment of the sum demanded. Thus ended an affair which redounded much to Piso's honour, and to that of Caesar also.

5 Urgulania, however, still remained so powerful, so entirely above the law, that when summoned as a witness in a case which was being tried before the Senate, she haughtily declined to appear. A Praetor

---

1 This anecdote gives a curious picture of how, with all their absolutism, the emperors would go in and out like ordinary citizens, without pomp or escort. It is an example of the kind of conduct which would be termed civilis.
was sent to take her deposition in her own house; though according to ancient custom even Vestal Virgins, when they gave evidence, had to appear in open court.

Of the prorogation\(^1\) of the Senate this year I should take no notice, were it not worth while to record the opposing opinions of Gnaeus Piso\(^2\) and Asinius Gallus upon the subject. The Emperor had intimated his intended absence; and Piso thought that business should be proceeded with all the more on that account. *It was for the credit of the State, he urged, that the knights and the Senate should be ready to do their duty, even in the absence of the Emperor.* Forestalled by Piso in making a show of independence, Gallus urged that the business of the Roman people would suffer in distinction and dignity if it were not transacted in the presence, and under the eyes, of the Emperor. He proposed therefore that the business pouring in from Italy and the provinces should be kept back until the Emperor could attend in person. Tiberius listened in silence while the point was hotly argued on both sides; but the adjournment was carried.

A contention then arose between Gallus and the Emperor. Gallus proposed that the election of magistrates should be held for five years in advance; that such Legates as were then serving in command to make himself obnoxious to Germanicus.

---

\(^1\) *Res prolatae* = 'the long vacation.'

\(^2\) The use of *ut* in this sentence is illogical and untranslateable. Tacitus might either have made Piso propose that the business should go on *in order that the magistrates might discharge their functions in the emperor's absence,* or say *that it would be a credit to the state* for them to do so. What he does say is, *in order that it might be a credit to the state that they should discharge their functions,* etc. That is, as he often does elsewhere, he attempts to put two meanings into one sentence.
of legions before having held the Praetorship, should be forthwith designated to that office; and that the Emperor should nominate twelve candidates for each year.¹ This motion had more in it than met the eye; it was, in fact, a blow aimed at the secret methods of autocracy. Tiberius, however, treated the proposal as if it were one for the increase of his powers:—

It would be too much to lay on him the burden of selecting or postponing so many claims. Even with annual appointments it was hard to avoid giving offence, though rejected candidates might solace themselves with the hope of an early success. How much greater would be the resentment of men whose claims were postponed for five years or more? Who could foresee the state of a man’s mind, family, or fortune, at the end of so long a period? Men plumed themselves on being nominated even one year in advance:² what if they could boast them of their offices for five whole years? Such a plan would multiply the number of office-holders by five, and upset the laws which prescribed to candidates definite periods for displaying their talents, for seeking office as well as for holding it.³

Such was the plausible language by which Tiberius retained his hold of power.

37. 1 As the Emperor had helped out the incomes of certain needy Senators, it was the more strange that he stiffly refused an application from Marcus Hortalus, a young noble in notoriously poor circumstances. He was a grandson of the orator

¹ The proposal had two parts: (1) The emperor was to nominate (commendatio) is evidently meant: see note on i. 14, 6) to all magistracies for five years in advance; and (2) Such legati legionum (commanding officers of legions: see note on i. 31, 2) as had not already held the praetorship were to be put on the lists from which the emperor should select for that office. The legati legionum were senators, and usually, as here appears, of praetorian rank.
² i.e. sometime during the preceding year. The practice varied; but as a rule, probably to lessen excitement, designations were made early in the year preceding the tenure of office.
³ Here again Tacitus puts with convincing force the views which he condemns.
Hortensius, and had been induced by the gift of a million sestertes from Augustus to marry, and bring up a family, and so prevent the extinction of that illustrious house. Posting his four sons at the door of the Senate-house when the Senate was meeting in the Palatine, he addressed the House, and casting his eyes now on the statue of Hortensius, which stood amongst those of other orators, now on that of Augustus, spoke as follows:—

These children, Conscript Fathers, whose number and tender age you see, I have reared, not of my own wish, but on the encouragement of my sovereign; and because my ancestors were men who deserved to have descendants. For myself, having no means, no popular following, and being unable, in these changed times, to succeed to or to acquire the hereditary possession of our house—that of eloquence—I should have been content if my own lack of fortune had brought no dishonour on myself, and laid no burden upon others. At the Emperor’s bidding, I took to myself a wife. Behold the offspring of all those Consuls and Dictators! It is not as a reproach that I recall these things; but to enlist your pity. Under your glorious reign, Caesar, they will attain such honours as you may be pleased to bestow; meanwhile I pray you to save from penury the great-grandsons of Quintus Hortensius, the nurslings of the Divine Augustus.

The favour with which this speech was received by the Senate made the Emperor more instant in his opposition to it. He replied nearly in these words:—

1 Q. Hortensius (8 B.C. 114–60), the famous orator, long the principal rival of Cicero, noted for his wealth and extravagance.
2 See note on chap. 23, 5.
3 A father was not bound to rear children born to him. He acknowledged them by lifting them from the ground. For this the technical phrase was tollere liberos; hence below, non sponte sustulit.
4 Probably in the library of the temple of Apollo, built by Asinius Pollio on the Palatine (Hor. Od. 1. 31; Prop. ii. 31), of which the foundations are still to be seen. In his later days, Augustus often held meetings of the senate there (Suet. Oct. 29).
If every poor man is to come to this House and ask for money for his children, there will be no satisfying the claimants, and the public exchequer will be emptied. When our ancestors permitted senators to pass beyond the limits of a motion, and use their turn of speaking to make suggestions for the public good, it was not to enable us to push our private interests, or advance our family fortunes, bringing odium thereby alike on Senate and on Emperor, whether the bounty were granted or refused. It is no petition, this: it is a demand, a demand as unseasonable as it is unexpected; that a member should get up, when the fathers have been summoned for some other purpose, and by recounting the number and ages of his children put pressure on the Senate, and on me also, and as it were force open the door of the public treasury. That treasury we may exhaust by favouritism: but if we do, we shall have to replenish it by crime. The Divine Augustus did indeed give you money, Hortalus, but he gave it unasked; nor did he bargain that he was to go on giving it for ever. If it be otherwise—if a man is not to rely upon himself in his hopes or fears—all energy will be sapped; a premium will be put on lethargy: men will look calmly for help to others, throwing on me the burden which they have not the spirit to bear themselves.

These and such-like words, though assented to by hearers ready to applaud everything, whether base or noble, that falls from a prince’s lips, were received by the majority in silence, or with suppressed disapprobation. Perceiving this, Tiberius who, however, gives a grant to the sons.

The speech of Tiberius, as here given, is unanswerable in its justice, but harsh and crushing. It is the sort of answer which such a Chancellor of the Exchequer as the late Lord Sherbrooke might have given to some unreasonable demand for public money. But nothing could be more unblushing than the request of Hortalus. His application, and his manner of making it, is one of many instances which show how destitute even the noblest Romans were of true self-respect, and of the feeling of personal honour, in the modern sense of those terms. Tacitus sympathises with the request—because made by a noble—but not at all with the well-merited rebuke. Nothing could be more unworthy than his comment on the speech.
proceeded, after a brief silence, to say that he had answered Hortalus; but that, with the approval of the Fathers, he would present each of his male children with two hundred thousand sesterces. For this the other senators thanked him. Hortalus alone uttered not a word: either because he was afraid, or because, even in his reduced fortunes, he still retained some vestiges of ancestral pride. The family soon sank into a state of abject poverty; but it met with no more compassion from Tiberius.

In this same year, but for prompt measures of repression, the State would have been plunged into the miseries of civil war by the audacity of a slave Clemens, who had once belonged to Agrippa Postumus. On hearing of the death of Augustus, this man, with a spirit unlike that of a slave, formed the project of crossing to the island of Planasia, carrying off Agrippa Postumus by force or fraud, and presenting him to the armies of Germany. The plan was only frustrated by the slowness of his ship; for Agrippa had been murdered before he arrived. Clemens then resolved upon a greater and more desperate enterprise. Carrying off by stealth the ashes of Agrippa, he crossed over to Cosa, a promontory on the Etruscan coast, and there kept himself in hiding till his hair and beard had grown; for he happened to bear some resemblance in age and appearance to his late master. He then let the idea get abroad, through suitable confederates, that Agrippa was still alive. The story was at first secretly whispered about, as is the way with forbidden topics; but it soon spread, and gained a

1 Cosa was a town on the mainland opposite to Planasia (Pianosa). The promontory in front of the town was called Mons Argentarius (Monte Argentario).
ready hearing from the ignorant, or among unquiet spirits ready for any change. Clemens himself would find his way into the towns at dusk, never showing himself in public, nor staying long in one place: knowing that truth comes out with publicity and delay, while hurry and evasion befriended imposture, he would run away from the rumour of his arrival, or arrive before it.

40. 1 Meantime the report spread throughout Italy that Agrippa had been saved by divine interposition; and the story was believed in Rome. On landing at Ostia, Clemens was received by a vast multitude; crowded meetings of his supporters were held in secret in the city; and Tiberius himself was distracted with doubt whether to use the soldiery to crush his own slave, or to allow men's idle credulity to die away through time. Wavering between shame and fear—thinking at one moment that he dare not disregard anything, at another, that he need not be afraid of everything—he put the affair at last into the hands of Sallustius Crispus. 1 Sallustius selected two of his own clients—some say they were soldiers—and instructed them to approach Clemens under pretence of sharing in his designs; to offer him money, and pledge themselves to share his perils. The men did as they were ordered. Furnished with a sufficient force, and watching for a night when Clemens was off his guard, they dragged him, gagged and bound, to the Palace. 2 Tiberius asked how he had made himself into Agrippa:—just as you made yourself Caesar, is said to have been his reply. Nothing could induce him to disclose his

---

1 For Sallustius Crispus see l. 6, 6.
2 The Latin Palatium stands properly for the Palatine Mount as a whole, but is frequently used to denote some building upon it, especially one or other of the palaces of the emperors which gradually occupied the greater portion of the hill.
and privately executed.

Arch, temple, and shrine dedicated.

accomplices. Not venturing to execute him in public, Tiberius ordered that he should be put to death in a private part of the Palace, and his body conveyed secretly away. And though many of the imperial household, as well as knights and senators, were said to have assisted Clemens with advice and money, no further enquiry was made into the affair.

At the end of the year, an arch was put up near the Temple of Saturn to record how the standards lost with Varus had been recovered under the leadership of Germanicus and the auspices of Tiberius. A Temple also was dedicated to Fors Fortuna near the Tiber, in the gardens which Caesar had bequeathed to the Roman people; and a shrine at Bovillae in honour of the Julian family, with a statue of the Divine Augustus.

A.D. 17. CONSULS C. CAELIUS RUFUS AND L. POMPONIUS FLACCUS.

Upon the 26th of May in this year, Germanicus Caesar celebrated his triumph over the Cheruscii, the Chatti, the Angrivarii, and the other German nations as far as the river Elbe. Spoils and captives, with representations of mountains, rivers and battles, were borne along in the procession; and as Germanicus

---

1 It is to this temple that the eight Ionic columns belong which form so conspicuous an object on the left hand of the ascent to the Capitol from the Forum.
2 Such was the regular formula applied to campaigns under the empire when not conducted by the emperor in person.
3 These gardens were beyond the Tiber (Hor. Sat. i. 9, 18).
4 The Juli had a special connection with Bovillae, a town ten miles from Rome on the Via Appia, close under the Alban Mount. Both town and gens were supposed to have sprung from Alba Longa. Recent excavations have revealed there the remains of a stadium and a theatre.
5 Such representations were commonly borne along in triumphal processions. Propertius finely describes the Nile as sorrowfully dragged to Rome after the conquest of Egypt by Augustus (iii. 1, 31-32).
6 A coin represents Germanicus in a triumphal chariot, with the inscription Germanicus Caesar signis receptis devictis German(iis). See Nipp.
had been forbidden to end the war, it was held as ended. What riveted most of all the gaze of the spectators was the splendid figure of the General himself, with his five children in the car beside him.

And yet there were misgivings in their hearts as they reflected how the popular favour had brought no good to his father Drusus; how his uncle Marcellus, the darling of the people, had been carried off in the hey-day of youth: how short-lived, how ill-starred, were the beloved ones of the Roman people.

42. Then Tiberius, in the name of Germanicus, presented the populace with a largess of 300 sesterces per head; and designated himself to be his colleague in the Consulship. Yet this did nothing to make people believe in the sincerity of his affection. Having resolved to send Germanicus out of the way on the pretence of some honourable appointment, he now created an opportunity, or seized on one thrown in his way by chance.

Archelaus had been for fifty years on the throne of Cappadocia; but he had incurred the displeasure of Tiberius by omitting all marks of respect towards him when residing at Rhodes. This had not been due to insolence on the part of Archelaus; but to a hint from the intimate friends of Augustus that at a time when young Gaius Caesar was in favour, and charged with a mission to the East, it was hazardous to be the friend of Tiberius. But now that the young Caesars had been put out of the way, and Tiberius was in power, he caused his mother to write to Archelaus and invite him to Rome. She made no secret of her son's displeasure, but held out hopes of a pardon if he would come to sue for it. Suspecting no treachery, or perhaps fearing violence if he should be thought
to suspect it, he hastened to the city. He found the Emperor inexorable. He was impeached before the Senate,¹ and came to his end soon afterwards, either by his own hand, or by a natural death: not because of the charges trumped up against him, but from chagrin and old age; and because Kings cannot brook being treated as equals, much less as inferiors. His kingdom was reduced to the form of a Province; the Emperor announced that its revenues would enable him to reduce the tax of one per cent.² on saleable articles, and he fixed the amount for the future at one half per cent.

About the same time, the deaths of Antiochus, king of Commagene,³ and Philopator, king of Cilicia, created trouble in those countries, the majority wishing for the rule of Rome, the remainder for that of their native princes. And the provinces of Syria and Judea, borne down by taxation, petitioned for a diminution of their tribute.

These facts, as well as the state of affairs in Armenia as described above, Tiberius laid before the Senate, informing them that *nothing short of the wisdom of Germanicus could compose the troubles in the East: he was declining in years himself,⁴ and his son Drusus had

¹ The senate was the ordinary High Court before which misconduct by a foreign prince would be brought. So with the case of Rhescuporis (chap. 67). The lot of princes semi-dependent on Rome was not a happy one. Every species of treachery was practised on them. If troublesome, they might be lured to Rome, like Archelaus and Rhescuporis (chap. 67, 2-5), and cruelly made away with. If they had to take refuge within the empire, like Maroboduus (chap. 62-63), however loyal their previous services, they were treated as puppets, to be used as occasion served to further Roman interests.

² This tax of a hundredth per cent. (i.e. 1 per cent.) on sales was pronounced by Tiberius to be indispensable for the expenses of the army (l. 78, 2). Though the evidence is not clear, the tax seems to have been raised to its original amount some years later by Tiberius (Dio, lviii. 16, 2), and abolished altogether by Gaius. See i. 42, 7.

³ Commagene was a small mountainous district on the upper Euphrates, lying between Cilicia and Armenia. Its princes, descended from the Seleucidae, were the last reigning dynasty among the successors of Alexander. Temporarily put under the legatus of Syria in A.D. 17 (chap. 56, 5), it was not finally incorporated in that province until A.D. 39, under Vespasian.

⁴ Tiberius was now 59 years of age.
2 not yet attained to man's estate. Upon that, a decree was passed committing to Germanicus all the provinces beyond the sea, together with powers, wherever he should go, greater than those of other Governors, whether of Senatorial or Imperial provinces. Meanwhile Tiberius had removed from Syria Creticus Silanus, who was connected with Germanicus—the daughter of Silanus having been betrothed to his eldest son Nero—and had appointed in his place Gnaeus Piso, a man of violent and insubordinate temper, who inherited the fierce spirit of his father. The father had opposed Caesar during the civil war, and strenuously supported the republican cause in Africa; after that, he had followed the fortunes of Brutus and Cassius; and on being permitted to return to Rome, had abstained from seeking public office until Augustus himself solicited him to accept the Consulship. The haughtiness which Piso inherited from his father was still further heightened by the high birth and wealth of his wife Plancina. He would scarce yield precedence even to Tiberius; he looked down upon the sons of Tiberius as far beneath himself, and he never doubted that he had been selected for the command of Syria for the purpose of holding in check the ambition of Germanicus. Some believed

1 Germanicus was now granted an imperium superior to that of all ordinary governors in the East, similar to that which he had exercised in Germany. For such a maius imperium see note on i. 14. 4.
2 i.e. in both classes of provinces: whether senatorial and proconsular, to which the senate appointed qualified consuls, or by lot (sorte); or imperatorial, governed by legati appointed by the emperor (missus principis). Suet. Oct. 47 explains the principle of division: provinciae validentes ipse successit... ceteras proconsulis sortito permisit. The latter were provinciae inermes, Hist. i. 11. 4. For an enumeration of the provinces, see n. on i. 76. 4.
3 Q. Caecilius Metellus Creticus Silanus had been consul in A.D. 7, and legatus of Syria since A.D. 11.
4 Plancina was probably a granddaughter of the famous Plancus (the consule Plano of Hor. Od. iii. 14, 20) who, when commander of Gaul in B.C. 43, went over to Antony and Lepidus with all his army, in spite of the entreaties of Cicero, and so sealed the fate of the Republic.
5 Cn. Piso (Coxa. in B.C. 7) was a formidable personage, counted by some as a possible aspirant to the empire.
that he had been furnished with instructions by Tiberius to that effect; and it is beyond dispute that Augusta prompted Plancina to do all that female rivalry could do to harass Agrippina.

For the Court was torn asunder by a secret rivalry between the partisans of Drusus and Germanicus. Tiberius was partial to Drusus, as his own son, and of his own blood; but Germanicus was the more popular of the two, not only because his uncle hated him, but also by reason of his more illustrious birth on the mother’s side. For whereas Drusus had for his great-grandfather a Roman knight, Pomponius Atticus, a man whose image was scarce fit to stand beside those of the Claudii, Germanicus could count Marcus Antonius as his grandfather, and Augustus as his great-uncle.\(^1\) Agrippina, too, the wife of Germanicus, outshone Livia,\(^8\) the wife of Drusus, both for her character and her fertility. Yet the two brothers lived on terms of beautiful harmony together, unshaken by the rivalries of those around them.\(^8\)

Shortly after this, Drusus was sent to Illyricum for military training, as well as to gain the goodwill of the army. It would be better for the young man, Tiberius thought, to be leading a camp life than a

---

1. Augustus was great-uncle of Germanicus; Octavia minor, the sister of Augustus, was his grandmother. The mother of Drusus was Vipsania Agrippina, daughter of Agrippa by his first marriage to Pomponia. Pomponia was the daughter of Cicero’s great friend, T. Pomponius Atticus.

2. Livia was the daughter of Drusus major and Antonia minor (daughter of Octavia and Antony), and sister of Germanicus. This picture of the two brothers (by adoption) living in perfect harmony with each other in the midst of the furious passions of their followers, is one of the most charming touches in Tacitus. The two are described on a coin (Eckhel vi. 217) as καταφαύς νικήθηκεν θεοί φίλοι φιλόκρατοι. See Furn, and Nipp.
life of dissipation in the city; his own position also would be more secure if both of his sons were in command of armies. The pretext alleged was the attitude of the Suevi, who had prayed for help against the Cherusci; for those two nations, being relieved from all fear of external enemies by the departure of the Romans, had been led by the warlike instinct of their race, and by rivalry in their thirst for glory, to turn their arms against each other. The two nations were as well matched in strength as were their leaders in valour; but Maroboduus bore the title of King, which was hateful to his countrymen, while Arminius, as the champion of freedom, possessed the popular favour.

45. 1 And so not only did the old followers of Arminius—the Cherusci and their allies—take up arms, but two of the Suevian tribes also who were subjects of Maroboduus—the Semnones and the Langobardi 2—went over to his cause. This accession of force would have given Arminius the preponderance, had not his uncle Inguiomerus, with a number of his followers, deserted to Maroboduus; for no other reason than that the uncle, being an old man, disdained to serve under his youthful nephew. The two armies drew up for battle, each equally confident. Taught by long experience of warfare against us, they had discarded the old German method of desultory fighting without regular formation, and had learned to range themselves behind standards, to have troops in reserve, and to obey the word of command. Passing the whole army in review, Arminius rode up to each division in turn, reminding them how they had

---

1 For Maroboduus, see chap. 62–64, and Vell. Pat. ii. 108, 109.
2 The Semnones and the Langobardi were between the Elbe and the Oder, to the N. of Bohemia. The former made terms with Rome A.D. 5 (Mon. Anc. v. 27).
won back their liberty, and cut to pieces the Roman legions; pointing to spoils and arms wrested from the Romans which many of them had still in their hands. Maroboduus he styled a run-away, with no experience of war, who had first sought safety in the recesses of the Hercynian1 Forest, and then with gifts and embassies had sued for a treaty with Rome. A traitor to his country, a hanger-on of Caesar, they should thrust him forth with the same hostile fury which had brought Quintilius Varus to destruction. Let them but remember 5 all their battles, and what came of them: that they had at last driven forth the Romans proved well enough which of the two nations had been conquerors in the war.

Nor did Maroboduus abstain from boasting, and flinging insults at the enemy. Holding Inguiomerus by the hand, he declared that all the glory of the Cherusci was centred in his person, all their successes were due to his counsels. Arminius was a madman, ignorant of affairs, who took to himself the honour due to others; he had treacherously beset three legions that had gone astray,2 and their unsuspecting General—and that not without disaster to Germany and to his own honour, seeing that his wife and son were now in slavery—whereas he himself, attacked by Tiberius at the head of twelve legions,3 had kept the German name unsullied, and left the field on equal terms. Thanks to him, it was now in their power to decide whether to make war upon Rome with their forces unimpaired, or to secure a bloodless peace.

Incited as they were by these words, each army 3

---

1 The country called Hercynia probably corresponded to the mountain district of Bohemia, the Erzgebirge, etc. (Vell. ii. 108).
2 The MS. reading here is vacnas, for which vagas, as translated in the text, has been adopted from Draeger. Vacasad might possibly mean ‘without a general,’ referring to the ignorance and incompetency of Varus; or, as Furn. suggests, ‘taken unawares,’ ‘off their guard.’
3 Tiberius had projected a comprehensive attack on Maroboduus in A.D. 6, from both S. and N., when he was called off by the Illyrian revolt.
had motives of its own to prick it on. The Cherusci and Langobardi were fighting for ancient renown, or new-won liberty; their foes for increase of dominion.

4 Never did armies engage in deadlier struggle; never was issue more doubtful. The right wing on each side was routed; and a renewal of the struggle was expected when Maroboduus gave sign of discomfiture by withdrawing his camp to the hills. Left gradually alone by desertions,¹ he retired to the country of the Marcomanni,² and sent envoys to beg help from Tiberius. The reply returned was that, as he had given no aid to the Romans when fighting against the Cherusci, he had no title to claim Roman help against them now. Drusus however was despatched, as above related, to secure the peace of the border.

47. 1 In this same year, twelve famous cities of Asia were destroyed by an earthquake.³ As the disaster occurred in the night, there was no warning, and the destruction was all the greater. Even the usual mode of escape in such cases, that of rushing into the open, was of no avail; for people were swallowed up by fissures opening in the ground. Men say that great mountains sank down, that what had been plains were seen high in air, and that flames burst out amid the ruins. The greatest sufferers were the people of Sardis, and their case attracted most commiseration:

¹ This refers to the recent defection from Maroboduus of the Langobardi and Sarmatians.
² The Marcomanni were a powerful tribe who joined Ariovistus in the invasion of Gaul (Cæsar B. G., i. 51, 2), and had now retired into Bohemia.
³ Pliny also, who calls this earthquake maximus terrae memoria mortalium modus, gives 12 as the number of cities destroyed (H. N. ii. 86); but an extant inscription, on a huge monument raised in honour of Tiberius by the grateful cities for his liberality on this occasion, adds Ephesus and Cibyra to the list. As this monument was set up in A.D. 30, it is supposed that Ephesus may have suffered and been relieved at a later date than the rest. The ruin of Cibyra and the relief accorded to that city are mentioned in iv. 13, 7. For details of the above monument, see Rushforth, p. 124.
the Emperor promising them ten million sesterces, with remission of all contributions either to the public or the Imperial\(^1\) exchequer for a period of five years. The Magnesians of Sipylus came next, both in suffering and compensation. It was resolved to give remission of tribute for the same period to the people of Temnos, to those of Philadelphia, Aegeae and Apollonis, to the people called Mostenians or Hyrcanian Macedonians, to Hierocaesarea, Myrina, Cyme and Tmolus; and to send a senator to inspect and give relief upon the spot. For this duty a senator of praetorian rank, Marcus Ateius by name, was selected, for fear that if a man of equal consular rank with the Governor were appointed, there might be rivalry and difficulties between them.

In addition to this splendid public munificence, the Emperor performed acts of private generosity which were no less welcome. A rich lady of the name of Aemilia Musa having died intestate, her property was claimed for the Imperial exchequer; but Tiberius let it pass to Aemilius Lepidus, to whose family she was reputed to belong. In another case, a wealthy Roman knight, of the name of Patuleius, had made the Emperor joint-heir with others; but on discovering that in a previous will, undoubtedly genuine, Marcus Servilius had been named sole heir, Tiberius gave over to him the property. In both cases, he remarked, the money was needed to maintain the nobility of the family. He would accept no inheritance which he had not deserved by private friendship;\(^2\) and he would have nothing to do with

---

\(^1\) As Asia was one of the senatorial provinces, it thus appears that even in these there were certain payments due to the emperor's fiscus, collected, no doubt, by one of his fiscal procurators in the province. For the office of procurator see n. on iv. 6, 5.

\(^2\) Caligula and Nero had no such scruples as to accepting inheritances. The former calmly pronounced null
bequests from strangers, or from persons who left fortunes to the Emperor because they had quarrelled with their own relations.

3 But whilst relieving innocent and honourable poverty,1 he either expelled or permitted to retire from the Senate the following persons, whose indigence was due to extravagant or vicious habits—Vibidius Varro, Marius Nepos, Appius Appianus, Cornelius Sulla, and Quintus Vitellius.2

49. 1 About this same time, Tiberius dedicated certain temples which had fallen into decay, or had been destroyed by fire, the restoration of which had been begun by Augustus. One of these was to Liber, Libera and Ceres, near the Circus Maximus, vowed originally by Aulus Postumius the Dictator. Another, in the same place, was to Flora, built by the Aediles Lucius and Marcus Publicius; and a third, to Janus, in the Vegetable Market,3 built by the Gaius Duilius who won the first sea-victory for Rome, and celebrated a naval Triumph over the Carthaginians.

3 Germanicus consecrated a temple to Hope, vowed in that same war by Aulus Atius.

50. 1 Meantime the law of treason was growing to its maturity. Appuleia Varilla, a great-niece4 of Augustus, was accused of that offence for having spoken slanderously of the Divine Augustus, of Tiberius and his mother; and for having committed5 adultery—a high

---

1 Seneca tells us that Marius Nepos had once asked Tiberius to help him to pay his debts. The emperor asked him to send in a list of his creditors, and paid them in full (De Ben. ii. 7, 2).

2 *Uncle of the future emperor of that name.

3 This market was situated between the Capitol and the river, outside the Porta Carmentalis. Part of the site is now occupied by the remains of the Theatre of Marcellus.

4 The pedigree of this lady is not clearly made out.

5 The meaning of the word teneri in a context like this is 'to be found guilty;' not merely 'to be implicated.
misdemeanour for one related to the Emperor. For 2 the adultery, it was held that the punishment provided under the Julian Law 1 would suffice; as to the treason, Caesar required that a distinction should be drawn between blasphemous remarks about Augustus, and those directed against himself. For the former the accused should be condemned; but he did not wish the latter to be brought under the notice of the court. Being asked by the Consul what he thought of the 3 unseemly remarks which Appuleia was accused of making against his mother, he said nothing; but at the next meeting of Senate, 8 he begged in her name also that no words against her, whatever their import, should be held as criminal. So he acquitted 8 4 Appuleia on the charge of treason; and deprecating too severe a punishment for the adultery, he recommended that she should be dealt with by her kinsfolk, 4 in accordance with ancient custom, and removed to a distance of two hundred miles from the city. Her 5 paramour Manlius was interdicted from Italy and from Africa.

A division of opinion then arose as to the appoint- 51. 1 ment of a successor to the Praetor Vipsanius Gallus, who had died in office. Germanicus and Drusus, who 2

---

1 The Julian Law ‘de adulteriis et stupris’ was passed B.C. 17, and is alluded to by Horace in the Carmen Saeculare composed in that year. See iv. 42, 3.

2 The limits of the criminal jurisdiction of the senate were not strictly defined. We find that all cases of public or political importance, especially charges for treason, came before it; and also ordinary crimes when committed by senators or other important persons. See n. on iii. 10. Novel offences also, unknown to the law, might be tried by the senate, as in vi. 49; and in the present instance two separate charges (adultery and treason) are mixed up together, in a way not permitted in the ordinary courts of law (Greenidge, p. 387). It is to be noted, however, that the adultery in this case was regarded as a treasonable offence, having been committed with a member of the imperial family. See iii. 24, 3. Tiberius in his judgment refuses to recognise this view.

3 Here the emperor dismisses Appuleia, not by the exercise of any general right of pardon, but by placing his tribunitian veto on the action of the senate. See iii. 70, 2, and xiv. 48, 3.

4 The old custom referred to was that whereby the penalty for such offences was inflicted, though not imposed, by the relatives.
were still in Rome, supported Haterius Agrippa, who was a relative\(^1\) of Germanicus; but many contended that, as prescribed by law,\(^8\) the number of a candidate’s children should be the determining factor in the nomination. Tiberius was well pleased\(^8\) to see the Senate divided in opinion, with his sons on one side and the law on the other. The law, of course, was set aside; but not without long discussion, and only by a narrow majority, just as used to be the case even in the days when law prevailed.

52. 1 In the same year war broke out in Africa, under a leader of the name of Tacfarinas. This man was a Numidian by birth, who after serving as an auxiliary in the Roman army had deserted, and gathered round him a roving body of freebooters for purposes of rapine and plunder. These he formed into a regular force, organised in cohorts and squadrons, till at length, from being the captain of an undisciplined horde, he became the recognised leader of the Musulamii,\(^4\) a powerful nomad tribe on the borders of the African desert. This people now took up arms, and dragged into the war the neighbouring Moors,\(^5\) who had a chief of their own called Mazippa. The whole force was divided into two; Tacfarinas

---

1 The mother of Haterius was probably a Marcella, daughter of Agrippa and Marcella, and half-sister to Agrippina the wife of Germanicus.
2 For the Papia-Poppaea Law here referred to, see iii. 25, 1, 2, and Furn., appendix to Book iii.
3 This seems a needless cruel comment. The suggestion made by Tacitus is twofold: first that Tiberius, jealous of the popularity of his sons, rejoiced to see them at loggerheads with the Senate; and secondly, that he was pleased that the occasion of the friction was one in which the youths, who were supposed to have popular leanings, were taking a non-popular view in defiance of the law. We may compare with this the cynical motive attributed to Augustus in i. 10, 6. Furn. can hardly be right in supposing that Tiberius rejoiced at the infraction of a law telling in favour of autocracy; for during the early part of his reign he showed himself a jealous stickler for law and precedent.
4 This important name, corrupt in the text here, is correctly given in iv. 24, 2. Florus (iv. 12, 40), and Ptolemy (iv. 3, 24), both give it under slightly different forms. Ptolemy places the tribe S. of Cirta (Constantine), in Numidia.
5 These would be the Mauri, immediately to the W., of the river Ampsagas (El Kibr), which formed the E. boundary of Mauritania.
retaining a picked body of men in camp, armed in Roman fashion, to accustom them to discipline and command; while Mazippa, at the head of a light-armed force, spread the terror of fire and sword far around.

The two leaders having compelled the Cinhithii, a tribe of considerable consequence, to join them, they were met by Furius Camillus, the Proconsul of Africa, who had united into one body the Roman legion and all the allies under our standards. His numbers were small in comparison with those of the Numidians and Moors; yet his only anxiety was lest the enemy should take fright and give him the slip. As it turned out, the hope of victory lured the Africans on to their defeat. Camillus placed his legion in the centre; his light cohorts and two squadrons of cavalry on the wings. Tactarianis did not shrink from the combat; but his Numidians were routed, and thus, once again, after an interval of many years, the Furian family distinguished itself in arms. For never since the days of the famous Camillus who delivered the city, and his son, had that family gained military laurels; and this particular member of it was looked upon as a soldier without experience. Tiberius was all the more ready for that reason to make honourable mention of his services in the Senate. The Senate voted him the Triumphant ornaments; and, as he led a quiet, unambitious life, these honours brought no punishment in their train.

1 Ptolemy puts the Cinithians to the W. of the lesser Syrtis, extending as far E. as the Cinymp. It is impossible to fix the localities of the campaigns against Tactarianis. The Roman province of Africa was of vast extent from E. to W., extending from the great Syrtis to the boundary of Mauritania. It included most of modern Tripoli, all Tunis, and part of Algeria (see Furr. Intr. p. 97). The head-quarters of the legions which garrisoned the province were at Thevesta, on the N. slope of the Mons Aurusius, on which were the fastnesses of Tactarianis. The Musulamii were apparently on the side of that mountain which faced the desert (Rushforth, p. 129), as the words solitudinis Africae prope ingua seem to imply.
Tiberius now entered upon his third Consulship, Germanicus upon his second. Germanicus entered upon office in Nicopolis, a town in the Province of Achaia, which he had reached by way of the Illyrian coast after paying a visit to his brother Drusus, then quartered in Delmatia. Having encountered bad weather in the Adriatic, and again in the Ionian Gulf, he spent a few days at Nicopolis to refit. From this place he visited the bay famed for the victory of Actium, where he inspected the spoils dedicated by Augustus, and the camp of Antonius. These scenes revived family memories in his mind; for as he was great-nephew of Augustus and grandson of Antonius, they called up before him many visions of triumph and disaster. Thence he passed on to Athens, where out of compliment to our treaty with that ancient and allied city, he contented himself with a single lictor. He was received with extraordinary attentions, the Greeks parading the exploits and sayings of their forefathers to add importance to their flatteries.

He then made for Euboea, crossing thence to Lesbos, where Agrippina gave birth to her youngest child Julia. Next, skirting the province of Asia, he

---

1 This city was founded by Augustus, in commemoration of his great Actian victory, on the N. or Epirotic side of the Ambracian gulf, where his camp was situated. Actium was opposite to Nicopolis on the S. side of the bay.

2 For a proconsul, the full number would have twelve. In spite of her defection in the Mithradatic war (see note on chap. 53. 2), Athens had always been treated by Rome with distinguished favour. ‘Athens was never placed under the fasces of a Roman governor, and never paid tribute to Rome; she had always a sworn alliance with Rome, and granted aid to the Romans only in an extraordinary, and, at least as to form, voluntary fashion.’ See Mommsen, Roman Provinces, i. p. 258.

3 This Julia (also called Livilla), the youngest child of Germanicus, was married to L. Vinicius A.D. 33 (see vi. 15. 1), and was banished by Caligula, A.D. 39, along with her sister Agrippina, the mother of Nero. She was recalled by Claudius in B.C. 41, was again banished, and finally put to death to please Messalina (Dio, lx. 8, 5).
touched at the Thracian cities of Perinthus and Byzantium, passed through the Bosphorus, and entered the Euxine Sea. He was anxious to become acquainted with places so famed of old; and as he went along he gave relief to the communities which had suffered from domestic factions, or from the misrule of magistrates. On his way back, he endeavoured to visit the sacred places of Samothrace; but he encountered northerly winds and was driven off.

He then visited Ilium, a spot so venerable for its varied fortunes, and as the cradle of our race; coasted again along Asia, and put in at Colophon, to consult the oracle of the Clarian Apollo. There is no priestess at this place, as at Delphi, but a priest, who is selected out of certain families; he is usually a citizen of Miletus. The priest is informed only of the number and the names of those who ask his counsel; he then descends into a cave, drinks a draught of water from a secret spring, and though, as a rule, ignorant both of writing and of metre, he produces an answer in correct verse on the subject thought of by the enquirer. On this occasion it was reported that, in the dark language usual with oracles, he prophesied an early death to Germanicus.

Meanwhile Gnaeus Piso was in haste to enter upon the work before him. He scared the people of Athens by making a noisy entry into their city, and then rated them soundly; indirectly rebuking Germanicus for having dishonoured the name of Rome by paying extravagant compliments to a populace who were no true Athenians—the real Athenians had all

---

1 Probably the local magistrates are meant—not provincial governors. One beneficent result of imperial administration was to check the misgovernment of local native magistrates. See next n. but one.
died out under their calamities—but the mere off-scorings of the earth; a people who had allied themselves with Mithradates against Sulla, and with Antonius against the Divine Augustus. He even raked up old stories against them: their defeats at the hands of Macedon, and their acts of violence to their own countrymen; for he had reasons of his own for a grudge against the city, since the Athenians had refused his request to give up to him a certain Theophanes, who had been found guilty of forgery by the Areopagus. Sailing swiftly thence by the shortest course through the Cyclades, he caught up Germanicus at the island of Rhodes. Germanicus had not failed to hear how he had been attacked by Piso; but such was his kindliness that when Piso’s vessel was being driven on to some rocks in a gale, and the death of his enemy might have been put down to accident, he sent some of his own triremes to rescue him from danger.

But this did nothing to allay Piso’s rancour. Scarcely allowing a delay of one day, he left Germanicus and went on before him. No sooner had he reached Syria and joined the army, than he began to pay court to the lowest of the common soldiers by means of gifts and favours; removing from command old centurions and Tribunes known for the strictness

1 i.e. in the first Mithradatic War, B.C. 87, 86. Like most of the Greek states, Athens had taken the side of Mithradates when he crossed to Greece in B.C. 87. Sulla took the city by assault after a siege of some months, and destroyed the long walls and fortifications.
2 No Greek city from the standpoint of Roman policy erred so greatly against Rome as this; its demeanour in the Mithradatic war would, had its case been that of any other commonwealth, have inevitably led to its being razed.’ Mommsen, Rom. Provinces, i. p. 258.
3 As Furn. points out, Athens had been pillaged by Philip, the last king of Macedon, in B.C. 300; by Sulla in B.C. 86; and had lost her last fleet at Actium, B.C. 31. The wrongs here referred to are doubtless those inflicted by the native magistrates upon their fellow townsmen. Cicero found that the native Greek magistrates of Cilicia had been plundering the local revenues for ten years (Ad Att. vi. 2, 5). It would appear that as much injury was done to the provincials by the carelessness of Roman governors in calling local authorities to account, as by their own exactions. See Greenidge, p. 319.
of their discipline, and replacing them by creatures of his own, or by men of the worst character; permitting idleness in the camp and license in the towns, and allowing the men to roam and riot through the country; and so far did he carry the work of demoralisation, that he came to be called, in the talk of the common soldiers, 'The Father of the Legions.'

Nor did Plancina confine herself to matters that befitted her sex. She assisted at reviews of horse and foot, and spoke in insulting terms of Germanicus and Agrippina. Some even of the better soldiers shewed an evil compliance with such courses, a rumour having secretly gained ground that the Emperor approved of them. All this was known to Germanicus; but he felt that his first and more urgent duty was to deal with the Armenians.

This people has borne from early times an equivocal character, both in regard to their own temper, and the limits of their territory, which borders on our provinces for a long distance, and extends as far as Media. Wedged in between the

---

1 It is to be noted that the conduct which was approved in Agrippina in i. 59. 2 and 3, is here condemned in the case of Plancina.

2 This description of Armenia is not very wide of the mark. That interesting country—on one of whose mountains the Ark of Noah was supposed to have rested—seems to have been originally, like Parthia, inhabited by Turanian tribes, who, from the ninth century B.C., were engaged in constant warfare with the Assyrians (see Rawlinson’s ‘Sixth Oriental Monarchy,’ pp. 125-131). By the time of the Median and Persian empires, a new Armenian race—being in fact the Armenian people as we now know it—seems to have been formed by the admixture of a ruling Arian population with the native Turanian tribes held in subjection. Submitting first to the Medes and Persians, and then to Alexander, the country became part of the kingdom of the Seleucidae, until the defeat of Antiochus by the Romans, in B.C. 190, enabled the Armenians to achieve a transitory independence, under a native prince called Artaxias. This independence was maintained, with varying fortunes and varying frontiers, first against the reviving authority of Antiochus Epiphanes, then against the aggressive designs of the Parthians, and lastly against Rome: Rome arrogating to herself, and to some extent exercising, the functions of a Protectorate over a country which was responsive to every movement in Parthian politics, which was a continual object of ambition to Parthian monarchs, and, by mingling in whose affairs, Rome could check Parthian aggression more cheaply and securely than by embarking on a war with the formidable monarchy of
great Empires of Rome and Parthia, they are frequently at enmity with both; their hatred of the one being as great as their jealousy of the other. They had no king at this time, as Vonones had been deposed; and the popular favour inclined to Zeno, son of Polemo king of Pontus, because he had adopted from early childhood the manners and customs of the Armenians, and had won the hearts of high and low alike by his love of sport and revel, and other qualities dear to the hearts of barbarians.

3 With the full consent therefore of the nobles, and in presence of a vast assembly, Germanicus set the sign of royalty upon his head, in the City of Artaxata. All paid him homage, and bestowing on him a name taken from that of the city, saluted him as Artaxias.

4 Cappadocia was now reduced to the form of a Province, with Quintus Veranius as Legate; and in order to raise hopes of kindlier treatment under Roman rule, some deduction was made from the amount of the royal tribute. Quintus Servius was appointed to Commagene, which was then, for the first time, transferred to the jurisdiction of a Praetor.

57. But though Germanicus had settled thus successfully the affairs of the allies, his satisfaction was marred by the contumacious attitude of Piso. He had ordered Piso to march part of his legions into Armenia, either in person, or under the command of

the East. The position of Armenia, situated as a buffer state between the two great empires of Rome and Parthia, and inclining now to the one, now to the other, has been well compared to that of Afghanistan between Russia and the British Empire. (See Pelham, 'Outlines of Roman History,' p. 419.)

1 *i.e.* the tiara and the diadem.

2 This city was on the Araxes.

3 Like several other outlying and comparatively unimportant provinces,
his son: but Piso had done neither the one nor the other. The two met at last at Cyrurus, 1 at the winter quarters of the 10th Legion. Each shewed a resolute face; Piso was resolved to make no sign of fear, and Germanicus was equally determined to avoid all appearance of using threats. Germanicus, as I have said, was by nature kind-hearted; but his friends had skilfully inflamed his resentment, exaggerating what was true, suggesting what was false, and insinuating various charges against Piso, Plancina and their sons. The meeting took place in the presence of a few intimates. Caesar spoke first, in a tone of suppressed anger; Piso shewed as much insolence as deference in his reply. They parted open enemies. After that, Piso rarely took his seat on the tribunal beside Germanicus; or, if he did, he would behave rudely, and openly indicate dissent. On one occasion, at a banquet given by the king of the Nabataei, 8 when massive golden crowns were presented to Germanicus and Agrippina, while lighter ones were given to Piso and the others, he was heard to say that it was not the son of a Parthian King that was being feasted, but of a Roman Emperor. With that, he flung away his crown, and launched out in a tirade against extravagance. Gallling as this was, Germanicus put up with it nevertheless.

During these occurrences, an embassy arrived from Artabanus, King of Parthia, to recall the old friendship and alliance between the two peoples, and to ask for some fresh assurance of good-will. Out of compliment to Germanicus, the King offered to come as far as the bank of the Euphrates; meantime he

---

1 Cyrurus (modern Cherós) was on the road from Antioch to the Euphrates at Zeugma.
8 A powerful tribe in the NW. of Arabia, who had driven the Idumaeans out of their capital Pétra.
begged that Vonones should not be permitted to remain in Syria, to carry on treasonable correspondence, from quarters so close at hand, with the princes of that country. Germanicus, in his reply, referred in dignified terms to the alliance between Rome and Parthia, speaking modestly and becomingly of the proposed royal visit, and of the respect thereby shewn to himself. Vonones was removed to Pompeiopolis, a city on the coast of Cilicia, not merely because of the request of Artabanus, but also as an affront to Piso. For Vonones stood high in Piso's favour, having ingratiated himself with Plancina by various presents and attentions.

A.D. 19. CONSULS M. JUNIUS SILANUS AND L. NORBANUS BALBUS.

59. 1 Germanicus now set out for Egypt, wishing to become acquainted with its antiquities; though his professed object was to look after the affairs of that province. He there lowered the price of grain by throwing open the public granaries; and did many other things pleasing to the multitude, such as appearing without an escort, wearing sandals, and adopting a Greek style of dress: in all which he followed the example of Publius Scipio, who is said to have done the same thing in Sicily, though the Punic War was raging at the time. Tiberius animadverted slightly on the matter of his apparel and behaviour, but rebuked him sharply for having violated the rule of Augustus in entering Alexandria

---

1 Formerly Soloi (near Metais), renamed after its restorer (Furn.). How Vonones came to his end is related in chap. 68.
2 *i.e.* wearing Greek sandals instead of the Roman *calceus*, and the Greek *gallium* instead of the *toga*. Cicero reproaches Antony for entering the city *cum gallicis* (slippers) and *iacerna* instead of *cum calcis et toga* (Phil. ii. 29, 76).
without the Emperor's leave. For amongst other secret principles of his imperial policy, Augustus had put Egypt in a position by itself, forbidding all senators and knights of the highest class to enter that country without his permission. For Egypt holds the key, as it were, both of sea and land; and he was afraid that anyone occupying that country, with however small a force, and however great the opposing armies, might threaten Italy with starvation.

Before learning, however, that his expedition was to be thus censured, Germanicus was on his way up the Nile. He started from Canopus, a city founded by the Spartans to mark the burial place of Canopus, master of the vessel in which Menelaus, on his way back to Greece, had been driven out of his course on to the shore of Libya. From that place he embarked on the nearest of the mouths of the Nile, that dedicated to Hercules; for the natives maintain that the most ancient hero of that name was born in their country, his name having been adopted for those

---

1 The command of the two legions which formed the garrison of Egypt (iv. 5, 3) was not held by a senatorial legatus, but by an officer called praefectus exercitus qui est in Aegypto. Rushforth, p. 132, suggests that this officer can have been none other than the praefectus castrorum; see i. 20, 1.

2 An excellent description of the position of Egypt, which holds the keys (1) of the waterways to and from the E. to the Mediterranean; (2) of the passage between Africa and Asia. Hirtius, in his Alex. War, chap. 26, describes more particularly the island of Pharos as commanding the sea access, Pelusium the land access (i.e. from Asia) to Egypt. Liv. xlv. 11, 5 speaks of claustra Aegypti, i.e. 'Egypt, the key-country;' and in Hist. iii. 8, 3 Tacitus uses the remarkable expression Aegyptius claustra annomae, 'the land that holds the key of our granary.' In Hist. iii. 48, 4 and 5 Vespasian hurried to Alexandria ut urben same urgeret claustrum annomae subsidis.

3 The annexation of Egypt by Augustus (B.C. 29) is thus recorded on the obelisk which now stands in the Piazza del popolo at Rome, placed originally by Augustus in the Spina of the Circus Maximus:—Aegyptum in potestate populi Romani redactum. The reasons why Augustus 'set Egypt apart' are more fully stated Hist. i. ii, 1: Aegyptum copiasque quibus coeretur, iam inde a divo Augusto equites Romani obtinere loco regum; ita visum expedire provinciis aditus difficilem, annomae fecundum, superstitione ac lascivia discordem et mobilem, insciam legum, ignaram magistratuum, domi retinere. The government by an eques, who was the mere agent and nominee of the emperor, kept the country under his immediate personal control.

4 The etymology of this name is still obscure. The city was probably a relatively late foundation. For the Greek legend, see Wiedemann, Herodot's Zweites Buch (1890), p. 91.
who shewed like qualities in after times. He then visited the mighty remains of ancient Thebes, whose stately monuments, graven with Egyptian writing, attest the former splendour of the country. One of the older priests, bidden to act as interpreter, related how the country had once borne a population of seven hundred thousand warriors; how with that army Rameses had conquered Libya and Aethiopia, the Medes and the Persians, the countries of Bactria and Scythia; how he had ruled over all the country inhabited by the Syrians, the Armenians, and the neighbouring Cappadocians, from the Bithynian to the Lycian sea. They could read the tributes imposed on all these nations: the weight of silver and of gold, the number of arms and horses, the gifts of ivory and incense for the temples, together with the amount of corn and other necessaries which each people had to furnish: all on as grand a scale as the contributions now exacted by the Parthian monarchs or under the rule of Rome.

61. 1 Germanicus took notice of other wonders besides, the chief of which were the marble statue of Memnon, whom he sees

1 The writing was doubtless hieroglyphic, such as covers the walls and pillars of most Egyptian temples. This writing could evidently be read by the priests who informed Germanicus; it was used for religious and state purposes down to the middle of the third century A.D. 'Annals' similar to those described by Tacitus are common on temples erected by the Pharaohs of the eighteenth and nineteenth dynasties, who built largely at their capital Thebes.

2 The Rameses here referred to is no doubt Rameses II (B.C. 1324–1298) of the nineteenth dynasty, although the most extensive Egyptian conquests (a better term would be 'sphere of influence') were those of Thothmosis III (B.C. 1515–1490) of the eighteenth dynasty. The former king, however, became better known to history, as he built more and inscribed himself more energetically than the latter. The conquests of the Rameside kings extended as far as the Antilibanus and the White Nile; the Aegean Islands and coasts were under their sovereignty to some degree. Tribute, or rather presents, may have been received from provinces beyond the Euphrates; but these and Armenia were never really subject to Egypt.

3 These words are interesting as showing that, in the opinion of Tacitus, Rome and Parthia might be placed more or less on a level, as the two great powers of the civilised world.

4 The so-called Vocal Memnon is one of a pair of colossal statues representing Amenophis III. of the eighteenth Dynasty, set up in front of his temple at Thebes. The Colossus to the north is made in one piece. The one to the
which emits a vocal sound when struck by the rays of the sun; those monuments of kingly opulence and pride, the pyramids, reared mountain-high out of wastes of shifting sand; the basin excavated to receive the overflowing waters of the Nile, and elsewhere again channels so narrow and profound that no sounding-line can reach the bottom. He then passed on to Elephantine ¹ and Syene, ² which at that time marked the boundaries ³ of the Roman Empire—an Empire which now stretches as far as the Persian Gulf. ⁴

Whilst Germanicus was thus spending the summer ⁶ ² ¹ ² ³ ⁴ of Eōs, and picture him as saluting his mother on her daily re-appearance. (See Lefrançais's work; Baedeker, Ed. 5 (1902), p. 307; and Wiedemann, Aeg. Geschichte, p. 367, and Supplement, p. 44; also Mommsen on C. I. L. iii. 1, 30-66; and Mayor upon Juv. xv. 5.) Elsewhere the Romans discovered marvels unknown to the inhabitants of the country. The Greeks knew nothing of the inspiring qualities of the Castalian spring, so vaunted by the Roman poets.

¹ Elephantine is an island opposite to Syene (Assouan), which marked the Egyptian frontier towards Nubia.
² Syene is on the site of the modern Assuan or Assouan, on the right bank of the Nile, just below the first cataract. Immediately opposite to Assouan is the island of Elephantine—called by the Arabs "the flowery isle"—on which remains of numerous ancient buildings may be traced. It is at Assouan that the great dam of the Nile has now been constructed. Two hundred miles above Assouan is Wadi Halfa, to which point the frontier of Egypt had receded before the successful advance of Lord Kitchener in 1896.
³ Claustra is here used in a different sense from that in chap. 59, 4. Here it means simply 'the extreme limit.'
⁴ As in xiv. 25, 3, the rubrum mare of Tacitus is our Persian Gulf.
in moving from one province to another, Drusus had earned for himself no little credit by sowing dis-
sension among the Germans, and inducing them to
give a final blow to the already broken power of
Maroboduus. There was among the Gotones 1 a young
chief called Catualda, who had been expelled the
country by Maroboduus, and was now emboldened
by that king's difficulties to seek revenge. Entering
the territory of the Marcomanni with a large force,
and winning over the leading men by bribes, he forced
his way into the palace and a fort adjoining it. He
there found a quantity of old Suevic plunder, together
with a number of camp followers and traders from
our provinces, who had been induced by the grant
of trading rights and the love of gain to forget
their fatherland, leave their homes, and settle in the
enemy's country.

63. 1 Maroboduus, now entirely deserted, could only
throw himself upon the Emperor's mercy. Crossing
the Danube where it forms the frontier of the province
of Noricum, 2 he wrote a letter to Tiberius, not in the
tone of a fugitive or a suppliant, but in a style be-
fitting the memory of his former greatness:—In the
days when he was an illustrious monarch—and his aid
had been invoked by many nations—he had preferred the
friendship of Rome to all others. Tiberius replied that
he should have a safe and honourable residence in
Italy, should he choose to remain there; should his
interests call him elsewhere, he might depart as freely

1 The famous 'Goths' of history.
They seem to have occupied the ex-
treme E. of Germany, beyond the
Vistula.
2 The province of Noricum was first
formed in B.C. 16. It comprised the
square bounded on the N. by the
Danube, extending down that river
almost as far as Vienna; on the E. by
Pannonia; on the West by the river
Inn and the provinces Raetia and
Vindelicia; while on the S. it was
separated from Italy by the Upper
Save and the Carnian Alps. This
country now forms the heart of the
Austrian Empire, while Pannonia cor-
responds to that part of Hungary which
lies S. and W. of the Danube.
as he had come. To the Senate he spoke in another tone. Maroboduus, he declared, in a speech still extant, had been a more formidable enemy to Rome than Philip to the Athenians, or either Pyrrhus or Antiochus to the Romans. He made much of the great power of the king, and the savage nature of the tribes under his sway; he dwelt on the danger of an enemy so near to Italy, and on his own adroitness in accomplishing his destruction.

Maroboduus was kept at Ravenna, where his possible restoration was held as a threat over the Suevi, in case they should shew signs of turbulence. For eighteen years, however, he never quitted Italy, living on to old age, and losing much of his reputation because of his undue love of life. Catualda met a similar fate, and found a similar retreat. Expelled not long afterwards by the forces of the Hermunduri under Vibilius, he was received and sent to Forum Julii, a Colony in Narbonensian Gaul. The barbarian followers of these two princes were settled beyond the Danube, between the Rivers Marus and Cusus, under a king Vannius, who belonged to the tribe of the Quadi; for it was feared that they might create trouble if introduced into the peaceful provinces.

News arriving about the same time that Germanicus had put Artaxias on the throne of Armenia, the Senate decreed that Germanicus and Drusus should enter the City in Ovation; arches also were

---

1 For the treatment of Maroboduus, see n. on chap. 49, 5.
2 A truly Stoical touch. To shrink from suicide in face of humiliation was considered a mark of cowardice.
3 This tribe was on the borders of Raetia (Germ. 41, 1).
4 The modern Fréjus, used by the Romans as a naval station for the protection of the Gulf of Lyons (iv. 5, 1).
5 The Marus is the river March, or Morava, which joins the Danube at Pressburg; the Cusus perhaps the Waag, which falls into the Danube at Komorn (Furn.).
6 The Quadi adjoined the Marcomanni, inhabiting Moravia and part of Hungary.
set up, one on each side of the Temple of Mars Ultor, together with statues of the two Cæsars.

As Tiberius felt more satisfaction at having secured peace by policy, than if he had ended a war by victory, he proceeded to employ the same crafty methods with Rhescuporis, king of Thrace. That country had been under the rule of Rhoemetalces; but upon his death, Augustus had given one part to his brother Rhescuporis, the other to his son Cotys: Cotys getting as his share the cultivated land, the towns, and the parts adjoining the Greek states; Rhescuporis, the wild uncultivated country, close to the enemy's border. The character of the two kings corresponded to their portions; the former being gentle and genial, the latter fierce, ambitious, and unable to brook any partnership in power. At first, a hollow friendship was observed between the two; but before long Rhescuporis began to encroach, to appropriate territory assigned to Cotys, and to use force when resisted. So long as Augustus was alive, he proceeded with caution, being afraid that the Emperor would chastise any infraction of the arrangement which he had made for the two kingdoms; but no sooner had he heard of the change of sovereignty in Rome, than he began to let loose marauding bands, and destroy his brother's forts, thus paving the way for war.

1 The Temple of Mars Ultor is the celebrated temple built by Augustus to commemorate the avenging of the death of Caesar, in the centre of the new Forum Augusti, and dedicated B.C. 2. The well-known Arco dei Pantani, at the end of the Via Bonella, formed one of the entrances to the Forum Augusti; the fragment of wall and the three Corinthian pillars close to the formed part of the temple itself.

2 This preference for astute diplomacy represents a cardinal feature in the foreign policy of Tiberius. It is deliberately set forth in his letter to Germanicus, chap. 26, 3.

3 The kingdom of Thrace, divided from Macedonia by the river Nestus, had been finally subdued in B.C. 11, after a war lasting for three years (Vell. ii. 98, 1), by L. Piso (vi. 10, 4). It was still governed by native princes, and was not reduced to the form of a province till A.D. 46, under Claudius (Marquardt, Statut., vol. i. p. 159).

4 i.e. the Greek colonies on the coast.
Now there was nothing which troubled Tiberius so much as the disturbance of a settlement once made; he therefore despatched a centurion to forbid the two kings to appeal to arms. Cotys at once dismissed the force which he had collected; Rhescuporis, feigning compliance, suggested that he and his nephew should meet and dispose of their differences in a conference. Place, time, and at last conditions, were agreed upon, each conceding the points demanded by the other; the one out of good nature, the other, with intent to deceive. By way of ratifying the treaty, as he termed it, Rhescuporis insisted on a banquet; and when the night had been long drawn out in merry-making, feasting and wine-drinking, he took Cotys unawares, and thrust him into irons. In vain did Cotys appeal, so soon as he discovered the trick played upon him, to his sacred kingly office, to their common family Gods, and to the rights of hospitality.

Rhescuporis having thus possessed himself of all Thrace, he wrote to Tiberius that a plot had been laid against him, but that he had been beforehand with the plotter of it; and at the same time, on the pretext of a war against the Bastarnae and the Scythians, he collected a strong force both of horse and foot. Tiberius returned a soft answer:—If he had acted in good faith, Rhescuporis might trust confidently to his innocence; neither he himself nor the Senate would pronounce upon the merits of the case until they had heard it.

---

1 This people, spoken of by Tacitus (Germ. 46, 1) as Germans, seem to have occupied the country at the mouth of the Danube. Ovid, writing from Tomi, speaks of them as neighbours: Proxima Bastarnae Sauromataeque tenent (Trist. ii. 198). They must therefore have been situated in the imperatorial province of Moesia.

2 It would appear that the Thracian princes were charged with defending the Danube frontier for the last part of its course down to the Euxine Sea. Thus Rhescuporis makes the necessity of chastising the Bastarnae and the Scythians on the N. side of the Danube an excuse for collecting an armed force.
Let him therefore deliver up Cotys, come to Rome, and pass on to others the odium of preferring an accusation.

66. 1 This letter Latinius Pandusa, the Propraetor of Moesia, sent off to Thrace, with a band of soldiers into whose hands Cotys was to be delivered. After hesitating for a time between fear and rage, Rhescuporis preferred to be charged with an accomplished rather than an attempted crime: he ordered Cotys to be put to death, pretending that he had made away with himself. This, however, made no change in the policy resolved on by Tiberius. On the death of Pandusa, whom Rhescuporis had accused of personal hostility to himself, the Emperor appointed a veteran soldier, Pomponius Flaccus, to the province of Moesia; mainly because he was on terms of close intimacy with the king, and was therefore the better fitted to betray him.

67. 1 Flaccus crossed over to Thrace. The king at first wavered, feeling misgivings at the recollection of his crimes; but at last Flaccus, holding out great promises, induced him to come within the Roman lines. Under name of a guard of honour, a strong force was attached to his person. By dint of warning and coaxing, the Tribunes and centurions led him on; the further they advanced, the more undisguised was the restraint put upon him; till at last, on reaching Rome, he recognized that he was a prisoner. He was accused before the Senate by the wife of Cotys, and condemned to exile from his kingdom. Thrace was divided between his son Rhoemetalces, who was known to have opposed his father's projects, and the sons of Cotys; but as these last were not of full age, Trebellenus Rufus, an ex-Praetor, was appointed to

1 An inscription shows that the correct form of this name was Trebellenus, which appears here in the MS. In four other places in Tacitus it is written Trebellenus (C. I. L. v. i. 1878).
manage the kingdom for the present, after the pre-
cedent set by our ancestors in Egypt when they
sent Marcus Lepidus\textsuperscript{1} to be Governor to Ptolemy’s
children. Rhescuporis was conveyed to Alexandria,\textsuperscript{5}
and was there put to death on a charge, whether true
or false, of attempting flight.\textsuperscript{6}

About the same time Vonones, whose removal to
Cilicia I have mentioned above, managed to bribe his
guards and take flight for Armenia; intending to pass
on thence to the country of the Albani\textsuperscript{8} and Heniochi,\textsuperscript{4}
and so to his relative the king of Scythia. Quitting
the sea-coast on pretence of a hunting expedition, he
made for a trackless forest country; and pushing his
horse to the utmost, reached the river Pyramus. Here
the natives, having heard of the king’s flight, had
broken down the bridge; and as the river could not
be forded, Vonones was caught on the bank by Vibius
Fronto, a cavalry officer, and put into chains. Soon
afterwards a veteran of the name of Remmius, who
had previously been the king’s keeper, ran him through
with his sword, in pretended rage: hence the general
opinion that Remmius had connived at the king’s
escape, and had slain him for fear of detection.

Meanwhile Germanicus, returning from Egypt,\textsuperscript{69}
found that all his dispositions, whether civil or military,
had been cancelled or reversed. For this he severely
rebuked Piso; Piso retorted with equal acrimony.
Piso then resolved to quit the province; but Ger-
manicus taking ill, he waited on. News came that

\textsuperscript{1} This M. Lepidus was cos. in B.C.
187 and 175; he was sent, on the death
of Ptolemaeus Epiphanes (B.C. 181), to
be guardian of his sons.

\textsuperscript{5} Rhescuporis meets the usual fate
of princes who trusted themselves to
the tender mercies of Rome. So with
Vonones, chap. 68, 3.

\textsuperscript{6} The Albani were a tribe living N.
of Armenia, and extending as far as the
Caspian Sea on the E. The modern
province is Dagestan.

\textsuperscript{4} The Heniochi extended from the
Caucasus to the Euxine on the
W.
Germanicus had recovered: whereupon, as the people of Antioch\(^1\) were paying the vows offered for his restoration to health, Piso made his lictors drive away the victims, break up the sacrificial preparations, and disperse the mob in the midst of its rejoicings. He then went down to Seleucia\(^2\) to await the issue of the malady, which had come on once more, and was aggravated by a conviction in the mind of Germanicus that he had been poisoned by Piso. Remains of disinterred human bodies had been found beneath the floor and in the walls of the house, together with spells and magical formulae; leaden tablets with the name of Germanicus inscribed upon them; charred and blood-stained human ashes, and other baneful substances by which people believe that souls may be devoted to the Gods below.\(^3\) Piso was accused also of sending messengers to spy out unfavourable symptoms in the case.

70. 1 This roused the fears, not less than the indignation, of Germanicus. If his threshold were to be beset; if he had to draw his last breath under the eyes of his enemies: what would become of his unhappy wife and his infant children?\(^4\) Poisoning, it would seem, was too slow a process; Piso was in hot haste to be in sole command of the Province and the legions. But Germanicus had not yet sunk so low; nor would the murderer reap the recompense of his crime. With that he wrote a letter renouncing Piso's friendship;\(^5\) many add that he

---

\(^1\) Antioch\(\alpha\) or Antioch\(\varepsilon\) (now Antakia), on the Orontes, capital of the Greek kingdom of Syria, founded by Seleucus Nicator in B.C. 301. It rivalled Alexandria, and probably approached Rome, in population. Germanicus was lying in the suburb of Epidaphna, five miles from the town (chap. 83, 3).

\(^2\) Seleucia Pieria, on the mouth of the Orontes, was the sea-port of Antioch. See Acts, xiii. 4.

\(^3\) Tacitus has a half-belief in magic, just as he has in astrology.

\(^4\) Caligula and Julia (b. at Lesbos the year before, chap. 54, x) were the two children with Germanicus at this time.

\(^5\) The repudiation of a friend was a formal act (iii. 24, 5), which Tiberius raises to the rank of a 'national custom' (vi. 29, 3).
ordered him out of the province. Piso set sail without further delay; but he proceeded slowly, that he might have the less distance to return in case the death of Germanicus should open up Syria to him.

For a moment Germanicus rallied, and hope revived; but his strength again failed, and as his end drew nigh, he thus addressed the friends who stood beside him:

If I were paying my debt to Nature, I might deem that I had a grievance even against the Gods for snatching me thus, so young, and before my time, from my parents, my children and my country; but now that my days have been cut short by the guilty hands of Piso and Plancina, I leave my last prayers with you. Tell my father and my brother what cruel wrongs I have endured, by what artifices I have been beset: how I have ended a miserable life by a most unhappy death. Those who have shared my hopes—those who are near to me in blood—nay, even those who have envied me in life—will weep that one who had known such high fortunes, and had come safe through so many wars, should have perished by the treachery of a woman. It will be for you to lay complaint before the Senate, and invoke the law: for it is the first duty of a friend, not to follow the dead with idle lamentations to the grave, but to remember what he desired, to execute what he enjoined. Men who knew not Germanicus will lament him; but if it was himself, rather than his fortunes, that you loved, you will avenge him. Shew to the people of Rome my wife, grand-daughter of the Divine Augustus; count over to them our six children. Men's pity will be with the accusers; and, if the accused plead

1 i.e. Drusus. His own brother Claudius (afterwards emperor) was left out of account. See l. i. 18, 5-7. The date of the death was Sept. 26th, A.D. 19.
that they were bidden to do the foul deed, none will believe, or, if they believe, forgive.

7. The friends swore, as they touched the dying man’s right hand, that they would give up life sooner than revenge.

72. 1 Germanicus then turned to his wife. He implored her by the love she bore him, and for their children’s sake, to tame her high spirit, to bow beneath the stroke of fortune, and when she returned to Rome, not to anger those more powerful than herself by entering into rivalry with them. This he said openly; he kept more for her private ear, bidding her beware, it was supposed, of Tiberius. Soon after that, he breathed his last, amid the profound sorrow of the Province and the surrounding peoples. Foreign nations also, and their kings, bewailed him; so genial was he to friends, so courteous to foes. His looks and his speech alike commanded respect; his manners had no arrogance, and provoked no ill-will; yet they had all the dignity and distinction which befitted his high estate.

73. 1 No procession of images graced his funeral; but it was signalised by encomiums on his virtues. Some compared him to Alexander the Great, because of his beauty, the age at which he died,¹ the manner, nay, even the place,² of his death, near to that where Alexander died. Both were handsome and high-born; both died soon after attaining the age of thirty, by the treachery of their own people,³ and in a foreign land. But Germanicus was kindly to his friends, and moderate in his enjoyments; he had lived with but one wife, and had none but lawful children. And he was as great a warrior as Alexander, without

¹ Alexander died in his 33rd year; Alexander died at Babylon, B.C. 323.
² Germanicus in his 34th. Thus Tacitus assumes Piso’s guilt as a fact.
³ The places were not at all near.
his rashness: although he had been debarred, after striking down Germany by his victories, from completing the subjection of that country. Had he been the sole arbiter of events, had he held the powers and the title of King, he would have outstripped Alexander in military fame as far as he surpassed him in gentleness, in self-command, and in all other noble qualities.¹

The body, before being buried, was exposed to view in the Forum of Antioch, the place appointed for the sepulture; but whether it exhibited signs of poisoning or not, is uncertain.² For according as men were inclined towards Germanicus by compassion and preconceived suspicion, or towards Piso by friendship, they arrived at opposite conclusions.

A consultation was now held among the Legates and other Senators on the spot as to who should be placed in command of Syria.³ There was long deliberation as between Vibius Marsus and Gnaeus Sentius, the only two who seriously pressed their claims; in the end, as Sentius was the elder and the more insistent of the two, Marsus gave way. At the instance of Vitellius,⁴ Veranus⁵ and the other friends who were getting up the case against Piso

---

¹ The absurd partiality of this estimate does little credit to the historical judgment of Tacitus. According to his wont, he escapes responsibility by putting his own opinion into the mouths of others (erant qui adaeguarent), though he gradually passes into a form of speech which adopts the estimate as his own. The reputation of Germanicus has had the good fortune which seldom fails to wait upon heirs-apparent who have never reigned. As to his qualities as a general, see n. on chap. 26, 2.

² Suetonius asserts roundly that his body was covered with black spots; that there was foam at the mouth; and that the heart was found among his ashes unburnt—a sure sign of poisoning (Cal. 1).

³ It would appear from this passage that in such an emergency the senators present could make an ad interim appointment. C. Vibius Marsus was cos. suf. in A.D. 17, and was subsequently proconsul of Africa for three years, probably A.D. 27-29. Cn. Sentius seems to have been cos. suf. in A.D. 4.

⁴ This was P. Vitellius, uncle of the future emperor; the same who conducted part of the force back by land in the campaign of A.D. 15 (l. 70).

⁵ This Q. Veranus is mentioned in chap. 56, 4 as the legatus placed in command of Cappadocia when first erected into a province. Both he and Vitellius acted afterwards as accusers of Piso.
and Plancina as though they were already on their trial, Sentius sent to Rome a woman called Martina, a notorious poisoner in that province, and a great favourite with Plancina.

75. 1 Meantime Agrippina, bowed down by grief, and sick in body, yet impatient of everything which might delay her revenge, embarked with her children and the ashes of Germanicus. At the sight of this high-born lady—till yesterday the spouse of an illustrious prince, and who had never appeared but to be courted and complimented—bearing in her bosom the sad remains, with no certainty of vengeance, full of fears for herself, and exposed at so many points to the attacks of fortune by her ill-starred fertility, all hearts were filled with compassion.

2 The news of the death of Germanicus overtook Piso at the island of Coos, and filled him with extravagant joy; he sacrificed victims and visited the temples; there were no limits to his exultation. His wife Plancina was more triumphant still; she now for the first time put off the mourning which she had been wearing for her sister's death.

76. 1 Centurions now came streaming in, telling Piso that the legions were favourable and ready to stand by him, and urging him to return to the province which had been wrongfully taken from him, and was now without a Governor. He proceeded therefore to take counsel as to what he should do. His son Marcus advised him to go straight to Rome:—He had as yet committed no unpardonable offence; unfounded suspicions and empty rumour were not things to be afraid of. His quarrel with Germanicus might merit odium, but not punishment; his enemies would be satisfied by his deposition from the province. If, on the other hand, he were to
return, and be resisted by Sentius, that would be to embark on civil war. In that event, neither men nor centurions would stand by him. The memory of their late Imperator was still fresh in their minds; their affection for the Caesars was deep and strong, and would outweigh all other considerations. 

Domitianus Celer, one of the most intimate friends of Piso, took the opposite view. He urged him to make the most of the opportunity; it was he, and not Sentius, who was Governor of the Province; it was to him that the fasces, the praetorian jurisdiction, and the legions, had been committed. If any act of war were to occur, who had greater right to meet it with force than the man who held the position of Legate, and had received instructions of his own? It would be well too to give rumour time to die away; innocence itself could hardly hold its own against the first outburst of angry feeling. If he only kept his army together, and added to its strength, chance might help him in many unexpected ways. Are we to hurry, he asked, to land along with the ashes of Germanicus, in order that the tears of Agrippina, and the first rush of ignorant popular fury, may sweep you away unheard and undefended? You have on your side the complicity of Augusta; you have the approval, though unavowed, of Caesar himself: and none so ostentatiously lament the death of Germanicus as those who most rejoice at it.

Piso himself, always inclined to daring courses, was easily brought over to this view. He sent a letter to Tiberius, accusing Germanicus of extravagance and high-handed proceedings:—It was to make room for revolutionary designs that he had been driven from his Province; he was now resuming his command
in the same spirit of loyalty with which he had held it. At the same time he put Domitius on board a trireme, bidding him avoid the shore, and without touching at the islands make straight for Syria by the open sea. As deserters flocked in, he organised them in maniples; he armed his camp-followers; then passing over with his fleet to the mainland, he intercepted a body of young soldiers going out as drafts to Syria, and sent orders to the princes of Cilicia to furnish him with auxiliaries. His son Marcus, though he had given his counsel against war, helped vigorously in these warlike preparations.

79. 1 Coast ing thus along Lycia and Pamphylia, he encountered the ships which were conveying Agrippina. Both parties at first stood to arms; but each being afraid of the other, they did not get beyond angry words. Marsus Vibius told Piso that he would have to come to Rome to stand his trial. Piso mockingly replied:—He would not fail to attend when accusers and accused had been duly summoned by the Praetor whose business it was to try cases of poisoning. ¹

2 Domitius, meantime, landed at Laodicea ² in Syria, and was proceeding to the winter quarters of the 6th Legion, believing that legion to be the most likely to lend itself to his designs. But he had been forestalled by the Legate Pacuvius; ³ a fact which Sentius communicated to Piso by letter, warning him against any attempt to corrupt the army, or to embroil the province in war. Sentius gathered together all whom he knew to have a regard for the memory of

¹ What Piso meant was that it would be time for him to go to Rome when duly summoned to appear in the regular court for trying offences of that kind, i.e. the quaestio de ricaris et veneficiis.
² There were two towns of this name in Syria; the one here meant is Laodicea on the coast opposite Crete, now Ladi- kieh or Latakia, famous for its tobacco, and still more famous for the character of lukewarmness attributed to the Church there, in Rev. iii. 15: 'I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou were cold or hot.'
³ Pacuvius would be the legatus legio- nis in command of the 6th legion.
Germanicus, or to be hostile to his enemies; and impressing upon them that this was an armed attack upon the Emperor’s own Majesty, and upon the State itself, he took the field at the head of a strong force ready for battle.

Foiled in his first attempt, Piso adopted the most prudent course open to him, and threw himself into a well-fortified position in Cilicia, called Celenderis. Mixing up the deserters, the intercepted recruits, and his own and Plancina’s slaves, with the auxiliaries furnished by the Cilician princes, he had raised his force to the full strength of a legion. He assured them that he was the Imperial Legate, and that he was being kept out of the Province which the Emperor had given him, not by the legions—at whose instance he had come—but by Sentius, who had trumped up false charges against him to screen his personal animosity:—They had only to shew themselves in the field; the soldiers would never fight if they once caught sight of that Piso whom they had formerly styled their ‘Father.’ His was the better cause, if it were a question of right; and were it a question of arms, he had no mean force behind him.

Piso then drew out his maniples in front of the fortifications on a high steep hill, the other sides of which were surrounded by the sea. Against him stood the veterans, drawn up in regular order, with supports behind. The one side had the more formidable force: the other the more formidable position. But the latter had neither hope nor spirit, and their weapons were mere rustic implements, extemporised for the occasion. No sooner had the Roman cohorts struggled up to the level ground and come to close

1 The town Celenderis is known from coins, and still bears the name of Chelendresh or Kliindri. It was part of the principality of Cilicia Trachea.
quarters, than all doubt of the issue was at an end. The Cilicians fled, and shut themselves up within the fort.

81. 1 During the interval that followed, Piso made an idle demonstration against the fleet, which was lying not far off. He then came back, took his stand upon the walls, and now beating upon his breast, now calling on his men by name, attempted to draw them from their allegiance by promises of reward; but with no further success than that a single standard-bearer of the 6th Legion went over to him with his standard. Sentius now sounded his horns and trumpets,¹ and ordered an attack upon the defences. The best men were to plant their ladders and mount them, the rest were to pour out spears, stones, and burning brands from the engines. Then at last Piso's obstinacy gave way. He begged that he might be permitted to remain in the fort on surrendering his arms, pending a reference to the Emperor as to the Governorship of Syria. But this was refused; nothing was granted to him but some ships, with a safe conduct to Rome.

32. 1 When the news of the illness of Germanicus arrived in Rome, with all the exaggerations that are bred by distance, there was an outburst of grief and anger and indignant comments:—It was for this, was it, that Germanicus had been despatched to the uttermost parts of the earth? for this that Piso had been appointed Governor of Syria? Was this the meaning of Augusta's secret conferences with Plancina? Well and truly had their fathers said of Drusus, that their rulers liked not their sons to love the people: the young princes had been

¹ The cornu was a curved horn, the tuba a straight trumpet. Vegetius states that while the cornu and the tuba were used for different purposes, the blowing of both together was the signal for battle (ii. 23). See also i. 68, 3.
cut off for no other crime than this, that they had designed to give back to the people of Rome their liberty, with equal rights to all.\footnote{Popular sentiments have at all times been attributed to the younger members of reigning families—especially such as have never had the chance of giving effect to their opinions. Suetonius asserts that Drusus (the elder) had openly announced that he would restore the Republic (whatever that might mean) if ever he had the opportunity; and that, according to some authorities, Augustus, incensed thereby, had caused him to be poisoned. The facile manner in which he adds that ‘he mentioned this report, not because he thought there was any truth or probability in it, but merely ne praetermitterem,’ shows how little weight we need attach to the many sinister remarks of a similar kind which he records (Claud. 1 and Tib. 59).} Amid talk like this, came news of the death; which so moved the populace that before the magistrates could issue an edict, or the Senate a decree, all business was suspended, the Courts were deserted, and private houses closed. Everywhere silence, broken only by lamentations; there was no parade of grief, no show; and although men did not fail to exhibit all the outward marks of mourning, the sorrow in their hearts was deeper still.

It chanced that some traders who had left Syria when Germanicus was still alive brought better news of his condition. This was at once believed, and spread abroad; catching up the good tidings on the slenderest hearsay, men passed them on to every one they met, and these again to many more, in an extravagance of joy. They ran through the city and burst open the doors of temples: night fostered men’s credulity, and darkness gave fresh confidence to assertion. Tiberius did nothing to contradict the false report, leaving it to die away through time. And then the people grieved all the more, as though Germanicus had been taken from them a second time.

Every distinction which affection or ingenuity could devise was voted\footnote{Some fragments of this decree, as well as of that conferring similar honours on Drusus (iv. 9, 2), have been preserved (C.I.L. vi. 1, 911, 912).} in honour of Germanicus.
that his name should be inserted in the Salian hymn;¹ that curule chairs, surmounted by chaplets of oak leaves, should be set in the places reserved for the Augustales; that his effigy in ivory should be carried at the head of the procession at the Circensian games; that no Flamen or Augur should be elected in his room who did not belong to the Julian family. There were to be triumphal arches³ in Rome, on the banks of the Rhine, and on the Mons Amanus in Syria, with inscriptions recording his achievements, and how he had died for his country. A sepulchre was raised at Antioch, where he had been burned, and a tribunal at Epidaphna, where he died. The number of his statues, and of the places where they were to be honoured, can scarcely be enumerated. It was proposed to have an immense shield⁴ of gold placed amongst those of famous orators; but Tiberius announced that he would dedicate one of the usual size and material. A man's eloquence, he said, was not to be measured by his rank; it was honour enough for Germanicus to be classed among the great writers of old.

The knights gave the name of Germanicus to one of the blocks⁴ of seats in the theatre known as 'the benches of the Juniors'; and ordained that his image should be carried at the head of the squadrons in the procession of the 15th of July. Most of these honours are still maintained; but some were omitted

¹ This was the famous ancient hymn sung by the Salii, a college of priests dedicated to Mars by Numa. Horace pronounces the hymn to be unintelligible. (Epp. ii. 2, 86). See C.I.L. vi. 1, 2104, and Wilmans, 2879.
³ Three fani, or archways, are mentioned in the inscription referred to above.
⁴ The clipeus was a bust or medallion. Such memorials were probably placed along with the busts of poets in the Palatine Library. A medallion of the orator Hortensius is referred to above, chap. 37, 3.
⁴ Cuneus, 'a wedge,' was the name given to the wedge-shaped blocks into which the fourteen front rows allotted to equites at the theatre were divided by the passages. The passages running downwards were called scalae; those running round the semicircle of seats were praecinctiones.
from the first, or have fallen into disuse with time.

While the public sorrow was still fresh, Livia, the wife of Drusus, gave birth to twin sons.\(^1\) An event so rare—one that would bring joy even to a humble home—afforded the Emperor such delight that he could not contain himself, boasting to the Senate that never before had twin sons been born to any Roman father of equal eminence. Thus would he turn everything, even the merest accidents, into matter for self-glorification. To the people, however, even this event, occurring at this particular time, was a cause of sorrow; the birth of children to Drusus seemed like a fresh blow to the house of Germanicus.

In this same year the Senate passed severe measures to repress female profligacy, forbidding the profession of prostitution to all whose grandfathers, fathers or husbands, had been Roman knights. For a woman called Vestilia, belonging to a praetorian family, had given in her name to the Aediles\(^4\) in accordance with the rule adopted by our ancestors, who believed that wanton women would be sufficiently punished by the mere acknowledgment of their shame. Vestilia’s husband, Titidius Labeo, was called upon to explain how it was that, though the guilt of his wife was notorious, he had failed to put in force against her the penalties of the law.\(^8\) His excuse was that the sixty days allowed

---

\(^1\) Drusus had already a daughter, Julia; she was married in the year following to Nero (iii. 99, 4). Drusus thus acquired the *ius trium liberorum*.

\(^2\) Under the republic, besides the care of public buildings indicated in their title, the aediles had exercised various functions in regard to keeping the streets, policing the city, securing public decency and order, as well as superintending the markets and public games. Though shorn of much of their power under the empire, they still superintended the cleaning of the city, supervised places of public resort, destroyed books condemned by the senate (iv. 35, 5), and were supposed to enforce the sumptuary laws (iii. 52, 3, and 53, 1).

\(^3\) The law referred to is the *Lex Julia de adulterii*, passed B.C. 17. By that law the injured husband was bound to separate at once from his wife; and for
him to make up his mind had not expired. It was determined therefore to deal only with Vestilia, and she was secluded in the Island of Seriphos.

5 A debate then took place as to the expulsion of Egyptian and Jewish worship; and a decree was passed that four thousand freedmen of full age, infected with those superstitions, should be transported to Sardinia, to put down brigandage:—Should they perish from the pestilential climate, they never would be missed. The rest were to leave Italy if they did not abjure their profane rites before a certain day.

86. 1 After this, Tiberius reported that a Vestal Virgin had to be chosen in room of Occia, who had presided over the worship of Vesta with the utmost sanctity for fifty-seven years. Fonteius Agrippa and Domitius Pollio having both made offer of their daughters, they were thanked for their zeal in the public service; but the daughter of Pollio was preferred, for no other reason than that her mother had never had but one husband; whereas Agrippa had impaired the honour of his house by a divorce. As a consolation, however, to the daughter for being passed over, Tiberius presented her with a dowry of a million sesterces.

87. 1 A popular outcry having been occasioned by the high price of corn, Tiberius fixed a price to be paid by purchasers, undertaking himself to give traders two

the next sixty days he had the sole right of taking proceedings against her. See Furn. on chap. 50, 2.

1 The senate was the authority to which questions of religion, such as the permission of foreign cults, were referred in the first instance. So with the right of asylum in the provinces (iii. 60); petitions for permission to set up a temple to the emperor (iv. 13, 1); or the claim of the Flamen Diaulis to assume the government of a province (iii. 58, 1). Yet in all such cases the emperor, if he chose, had the ultimate deciding voice; partly from his general control over all proceedings of the senate, partly from his special religious prerogative as Pontifex Maximus (iii. 59, 2).

2 Josephus (Ant. xviii. 3. 4) gives an account of the circumstances which occasioned these decrees.
sesterces per bushel in addition. But he declined to accept the title of ‘Father of his Country’ which was offered to him on this account, as indeed it had been offered to him before; and he sternly rebuked those who would speak of his occupations as ‘divine,’ or of himself as ‘master.’ So narrow and so slippery were the paths of speech under a prince who hated flattery as much as he dreaded liberty!

I find it recorded by writers who were senators at that time that a letter was read from Adgandestrius, a chief of the Chatti, in which he offered to bring about the death of Arminius if poison were sent to him for the purpose. The reply returned was that it was not by treachery and stealth, but openly and by force of arms, that the Roman people took vengeance on their enemies. A proud answer this; by which Tiberius likened himself to those generals of old who had forbidden and denounced the poisoning of King Pyrrhus.

Now that the Romans had retired, and Maroboduus was defeated, Arminius aimed at making himself king; but his countrymen’s love of freedom barred the way, and they rose against him. After fighting with varying fortune, he fell at last by the treachery of his kinsmen. He was, in real truth, the Liberator of Germany. He had measured himself with the Roman people, not in the days of their infancy, as other kings and generals had done, but in the hey-day of their power; and, if his battles were of doubtful

---

1 See Marquardt, Staatsv. ii. p. 122 foll., and the references quoted by Furn. as to regulations for the corn-supply of Rome.

2 Suetonius says that Tiberius made one senator substitute laboriosas for sacrus in speaking of his occupations; and another sustine for auctores in regard to his recommending a question to the senate (Tib. 27). According to Dio, lvii. 8, 2, he described himself thus: ἐξομολογήσας τοὺς δοχούς, ἀντικρατεὶ τὰν στρατιῶτα, τὸν δὲ ἐφ’ ἀλλ’ ἐπὶ πράξεως εἶμι.

3 In reference to the well-known story about Pyrrhus and C. Fabricius, coa. B.C. 276 (Plut. Pyrrhus 21 (p. 397); Val. Max. vi. 5, 1).
issue, he was never beaten in a campaign. He had lived thirty-seven years; he had ruled for twelve; and his name still lives in the songs of the barbarians. Greek writers, who can admire nothing but what is Greek, know him not; and we Romans honour him not as he deserves. We belaud the past; but we pay no heed to the glories of yesterday.
BOOK III.

A.D. 20. CONSULS M. VALERIUS MESSALLA AND M. AURELIUS COTTA.

Meanwhile Agrippina, continuing her voyage over the winter seas without a break, arrived at Corcyra, an island which lies over against the coast of Calabria. Overwhelmed by a tempestuous grief which she knew not how to bear, she tarried there a few days to compose her spirits. During this interval, at the news of her approach, there was a rush of her intimate friends to Brundisium, which was the nearest and safest port at which to land. Among the number were many officers who had served in various positions under Germanicus; many even who had never known him flocked in from the neighbouring towns, some as a matter of duty to the Emperor, some merely doing as others did.

When the fleet was first sighted in the offing, not only the harbour and the adjoining parts of the beach, but also the city walls, the housetops, and every point which commanded a distant view out to sea, were thronged with a sorrowing crowd, each man asking his neighbour whether they should receive Agrippina in silence when she landed, or with speech of some sort. Before they could agree what best befitted the

1 The modern Corfu. 2 The modern Brindisi.
3 Ignori is here used in an active sense, as in ii. 71, 6; Agr. 43, 1.
occasion, the fleet came slowly in. There was none of the usual alertness in the rowing; everything was arranged to betoken sorrow. And when Agrippina, with her two children, stepped off the ship, carrying the funeral urn in her hands, and with her eyes fixed upon the ground, one cry of grief burst from the entire multitude, kinsfolk and strangers, men and women, all lamenting alike, save that the grief of Agrippina's attendants was worn out by long continuance, while that of those who had come to meet her was the more fresh and strong.

2. The Emperor had sent an escort of two Praetorian Cohorts, and had ordered the magistrates of Calabria, Apulia and Campania to pay the last offices of respect to the memory of his son. And so the ashes were carried on the shoulders of Tribunes and centurions; in front went the standards, undecorated, and the fasces reversed; when they passed through a Colony, the populace were clothed in black, while the knights

1 These children were Gaius, or Caligula as we call him (Suet. Cal. 14), and the infant Julia, born at Lesbos A.D. 18 (ii. 54, 1); she was also called Livilla. She was married to M. Vinicius (vi. 15, 2) in A.D. 33; was banished and recalled with her mother Agrippina; banished again, and put to death in A.D. 41 at the instigation of Messalina (Dio, lx. 8, 5).

2 The route followed would be by the Via Appia, the great high road from Rome to the East, passing through the towns of Tarentum, Venusia (Horace's birthplace), Beneventum, Capua, Sinuessa, then along the coast by Formiae and Fundi to Terracina; thence straight to Rome by Aricia, over the low land of Latium.

3 The distinction between Coloniae and Municipia was now nominal; and, in fact, every one of the towns above mentioned was a colony. Here and elsewhere, Tacitus uses the phrase municipia et coloniae to embrace all the provincial towns of Italy, whether known originally as coloniae, municipia, or praefecturae. The coloniae civilium Romanorum stood in the first rank, being the oldest, and having enjoyed from the beginning the full Roman Civitas. The coloniae Latinae had probably only private rights; there were municipia cum suffragio, and municipia sine suffragio; while the term praefectura applied to all towns (some of which were municipia) governed by a praefectus sent from Rome. All these towns enjoyed, under various conditions, certain rights of self-government. The Lex Julia, passed in B.C. 90 after the Social War, conferred the full franchise on all towns in Italy which chose to accept it; and from that time, practically all old Latin and allied communities in Italy became municipia, in possession of full political rights. The name of colonia, however, was still used and cherished as a distinction by the old colonies; but politically all alike were municipia. See App. XII. to Watson's Cic.'s Letters.
in their robes of state\(^1\) burned garments and spices and other funeral oblations,\(^2\) in proportion to the wealth of the community. Even from cities far off the line of the procession people came out to meet it, offering victims, setting up altars to the Manes of the deceased, and testifying their grief by tears and wailings for the dead.\(^3\)

Drusus came out as far as Terracina, accompanied by Claudius,\(^4\) the brother of Germanicus, and such of the latter’s children as happened to be in Rome at the time. Thither came the newly-installed Consuls,\(^5\) Marcus Valerius and Marcus Aurelius; the roadway was taken up by a vast concourse of senators, and people from Rome, each man standing apart and weeping as his heart inclined him. For there was no sycophany in their sorrow: every one knew that Tiberius was well pleased at the death of Germanicus, and could scarce conceal his satisfaction.

Tiberius and Augusta did not appear in public, thinking it beneath their dignity to display their grief; perhaps they feared that if exposed to the public gaze, their faces might betray their insincerity. As regards his mother Antonia,\(^6\) I cannot discover either

---

\(^1\) Clothed in the handsome cloak *tibiae*, *i.e.* in full official dress. The *tibiae* was an ancient form of the *toga*, ornamented with stripes of scarlet and a purple border. It is called by Virgil the robe of Romulus; it was worn by consuls when opening the gates of the Temple of Janus in declaring war (Aen. vii. 188 and 612), by the Salii (Dionys. ii. 70), and by Augurs (Servius ad Aen. vii. 612). Dionysius adds that it was worn by knights, and the passage in the text proves it; but it cannot be identified on monuments (see Dict. Ant. i. p. 849, 8).

\(^2\) These costly stuffs and perfumes would probably be burnt on imitation pyres, as if at an actual funeral.

\(^3\) *Conclamatia* was the cry raised immediately after death, as soon as the eyes of the dying person were closed. The name of the deceased was repeated with loud cries by the friends, together with last farewells (*extremum vale*). Apparently also horns were blown.

\(^4\) This was the future emperor. The other children of Germanicus here alluded to were Nero (14), Drusus (13), Agrippina (5), and Drusilla (3).

\(^5\) Contrary to his usual custom, Tacitus mentions the names of the new consuls in the middle of the chapter, as the voyage of Agrippina had begun before the close of the year.

\(^6\) This was *Antonia minor*, wife of Drusus the elder, and mother of Germanicus. She was the younger of the two daughters of Mark Antony by Octavia, the sister of Augustus. She was celebrated for her beauty and her
in the histories or the journals\(^1\) of the time that she took any prominent part in the proceedings, though besides Agrippina, Drusus and Claudius, the names of all the other relatives are specially mentioned. Perhaps she was kept away by indisposition; perhaps her mind was so overcome by sorrow that she could not bear to look upon the grievous spectacle. For myself, I am inclined to believe that Tiberius and Augusta, who never left the house, compelled her to do as they did, that it might appear that their grief was not less than her own, and that the grandmother and the uncle had but followed the example of the mother.

4. 1 On the day when the remains were borne to the Mausoleum\(^2\) of Augustus, there was at one moment a silence like that of the desert; at another, cries of grief rent the air. The streets were thronged; the Campus Martius was one blaze of torches. The soldiers were drawn up under arms;\(^3\) the magistrates appeared without their insignia of office; the people, marshalled according to their tribes,\(^4\) cried aloud that *the commonwealth was lost, and all hope was gone*—so spontaneously, so openly, that they seemed to take no heed of the powers above them. But what made the deepest impression on Tiberius was the storm of enthusiasm for Agrippina. Men called her *the glory*

---

\(^1\) These *acta diurna* were a kind of official gazette, instituted by Julius Caesar, in which important daily events, political, legal or other, were recorded. They were also called *acta populi, diurna urbis acta*, and *acta diurna populi Romani* (xiii. 31, 1).

\(^2\) For the Mausoleum of Augustus, see n. on i. 8, 6.

\(^3\) *i.e.* in full uniform. Usually soldiers went about the city in mufti, even when on duty (Hist. i. 38, 3).

\(^4\) Furn. points out that the rabble of the city at this time were not included in the 35 Tribes (Intro. p. 89).
of her country; the sole remnant of the blood of Augustus; the one remaining model of olden virtue: they looked to heaven and prayed that her offspring might be spared to her, and escape the toils of their enemies.\(^1\)

There were some who missed the pageant\(^3\) of a 5. 1 state funeral,\(^8\) and drew comparisons with the splendid obsequies which Augustus had provided in honour of Drusus,\(^4\) the father of Germanicus. On that occasion, 2 it was remarked, he had himself travelled as far as Ticinum in the depth of winter; he had never left the body, and had entered the city with it; the bier had been surrounded by the images of the Claudii and the Julii; the deceased had been bewailed in the Forum, and belauded from the Rostra; every honour devised by ancestral usage or modern ingenuity had been heaped upon him. But Germanicus had not received the ordinary honours due to every Roman noble. Distance from Rome, no doubt, was 4 good reason why the body should have been burned in a foreign land, and without ceremony; but if fate had denied him honours at the beginning, that were all the more reason why they should have been multiplied upon him in the end. His brother\(^5\) had travelled but one day's 5 journey to meet him; his uncle\(^6\) had not gone even as far

---

\(^1\) It must be confessed that Agrippina's conduct and that of her supporters, on this and other occasions, was in the highest degree calculated to inflame to the utmost the jealousy of a jealous prince. See v. 4, 3.

\(^3\) The omission of the customary procession of ancestors and of the funeral laudatio is very remarkable. It contrasts strongly with the splendour of the funeral of Junia (iii. 76, 4).

\(^8\) Also called censorium funus, because held at the public expense under the superintendence of the censors.

\(^4\) The elder Drusus died in Germany, B.C. 9, by a fall from his horse. Augustus was in Gaul at the time; he at once despatched Tiberius to Germany, who marched back with the procession the whole way to Rome in mid-winter, Augustus himself joining it at Ticinum (Pavia). Both Augustus and Tiberius pronounced laudationes in Rome, the latter in the Forum, the former in the Flaminian Circus.

\(^5\) Claudius, the brother of Germanicus, had also gone with Drusus to meet the body at Terracina (chap. 2, 4); but he was held in no account, and was persistently ignored. See chap. 18, 4-7.

\(^6\) Paternum here refers to Tiberius; but owing to the constant confusion between adoptive and blood relationships, it is not so clear whether fraterem refers to his own brother Claudius, or to Drusus, son of Tiberius, his brother
as the city gates. Where were the usages of olden times? Where was the effigy\(^1\) at the head of\(^2\) the bier? Where the laboured poems\(^3\) and panegyrics, to tell of the dead man's virtues? Where were the tears, or at least the semblances of affliction?

6. 1 All this reached the ears of Tiberius. To put down the public talk, he issued a proclamation to this effect:—Many illustrious Romans had died for their country; but none had ever been so passionately lamented.

2 That feeling did honour both to himself and to them all, were it only kept within due bounds; but what befitted a modest household, or a petty state, might not be seemly for Princes, or for an Imperial people. While their sorrow was still fresh, it had been natural for them to mourn, and find solace in lamentation: but they should now recover their composure, remembering how the Divine Julius, when he lost his only daughter,\(^4\) and the Divine Augustus, when his grandchildren were taken from him,

3 had thrust away their sorrow. There was no need of ancient instances, or to tell how often the Roman people had borne with fortitude the loss of armes, the death of generals, the annihilation of entire families. Princes were but mortal: the commonwealth was everlasting. Let them return, therefore, to their wonted occupations, and as the

by adoption. It probably refers to the latter, as during this period Claudius was hardly thought of. Similarly, in the dying speech of Germanicus, fratri refers to Drusus (ii. 71, 3). In either case the statement is false; for both Claudius and Drusus went to meet the body at Terracina. This passage, like many others in Tacitus, shows how bitter and unscrupulous was the spirit in which the acts of the Government were judged; and in spite of the vehemently denounced tyranny of Tiberius in the capital, how free and outspoken in its comments was the clever and cynical society of the day.

See Appian Bell. Civ. ii. 147; Dio lvi. 34; Herodian iv. 2, 3; Suet. Vesp. 19. Furneaux, reading præpositam, and relying on the preposition, supposes the reference to be to a waxen effigy placed upon the couch.

\(^1\) There seems no reason here for changing the præpositam of the MS. into præpositam, with Halm and other editors. On the contrary, a slight variation of word is quite in the manner of Tacitus.

\(^2\) To be chanted at the funeral, like the poem composed by the unfortunate Clutorius Priscus in anticipation of the death of Drusus (chap. 49, 1).

\(^3\) i.e. Julia, the only legitimate child of Caesar, who was married to Pompey b.c. 59, and died in child-bed b.c. 54.
Megalesian Games\(^1\) were now near at hand, let them resume their pleasures also.

And so business began again, and men returned to their usual employments. Drusus set out for the Illyrian army. One thought exercised every mind—the hope of wreaking vengeance upon Piso. It was matter of indignant comment that with cunning and contumacious deliberation he was meandering through the pleasant regions of Asia and Achaia, so as to frustrate investigation into his crimes. For the story had got about that the notorious poisoner Martina, who, as above related,\(^8\) had been sent off to Rome by Gnaeus Sentius, had died suddenly at Brundisium; and that although poison had been found concealed in a lock of her hair, there were no signs upon her person that her death had been self-inflicted.\(^8\)

Meanwhile Piso had sent his son\(^4\) on to Rome\(8, 1\) before him, furnished with explanations wherewith to appease the Emperor. He himself went first to see Drusus, whom he hoped to find more pleased at the removal of a rival than outraged at his brother's death. Tiberius received the young man kindly, to shew that he had not prejudged the case, and gave him presents, such as are usually given to the sons of noble houses on like occasions.

The reply of Drusus to the father was that if the...
stories going about were true, none would be more grieved than he; but he hoped they would prove false and without foundation, and that the death of Germanicus would bring ruin to none. This he said in public audience; for he declined a private interview. No one doubted but that the answer had been dictated to him by Tiberius; for whereas at other times he was noted for the simplicity and youthful frankness of his demeanour, he exhibited on this occasion all the astuteness of an old man.

9. Crossing the Adriatic, and leaving his ships at Ancona, Piso passed through Picenum, and thence on to the Flaminian Way. He overtook on the road a legion marching from Pannonia to Rome, on its way to join the forces in Africa. It was much remarked upon that he shewed himself frequently to the soldiers throughout the march. At Narnia—either to avoid suspicion, or because fear unsettles all men’s plans—he took boat, and descended first the Nar, and then the Tiber. The popular feeling against him was much heightened by his landing in broad daylight, when the river-bank was crowded, close to the Mausoleum of the Caesars; whence he and his wife, with confident faces, proceeded on foot to their house, which overhung the Forum: Piso escorted by a train of clients, Plancina by a company of ladies. The festal decorations of the house, the feastings and banquetings

---

1 The *Via Flaminia*, made by C. Flaminius when censor, B.C. 220, was the Great North Road from Rome. Running close to the line of the modern Corso, and issuing from the city by the Porta Flaminia (*Porta del Popolo*), it crossed the Tiber two miles further on by the famous Milvian Bridge; returned to the left bank at a point N. of Falerii; crossed the Nar, and then passing through Spoletium (*Spoletó*), Fulinum (*Foligno*) and Nuceria (*Nocera*), crossed the Apennines by a low pass leading down into the valley of the Metaurus, finally reaching the Adriatic at Panum Fortunae (*Fano*), a point one hundred and ninety Roman miles due N. from Rome. Ancona was some thirty-five miles S. of Panum Fortunae. Piso seems to have struck inland through Picenum by a by-road, joining the *Via Flaminia* at Nuceria, near Assisi. From that point to the Nar, where he took to the water, was a distance of fifty-three Roman miles.
which followed, visible to all from the publicity of the spot, added to the general exasperation.

Next day, Fulcinius Trio¹ impeached Piso before the Consuls. To this Vitellius and Veranius and the rest of the following of Germanicus objected, contending that Trio had no standing in the case:—They themselves were not there as accusers, but as witnesses, to testify to facts, and to convey the instructions of Germanicus. Thereupon Trio, abandoning his right to prosecute on the present charge, made good his claim to denounce Piso’s previous career; and demanded that the Emperor should try the cause himself. To this the accused offered no objection. He was afraid of the feeling against him among the people and in the Senate, whereas Tiberius, he believed, would stand firm against clamour, and Livia’s complicity would tie his hands.² He thought moreover that a single judge would separate truth from misrepresentation more readily than a larger number, among whom feelings of prejudice or ill-will might prevail. Tiberius himself was fully alive to the difficulties of the enquiry, and knew what damaging reports were in circulation about himself. So having heard the accusations on the one side, and the appeals for mercy on the other, before a few chosen intimates, he remitted³ the whole case for trial to the Senate.⁴

¹ A notorious accuser. See ii. 28, 3.
² The difficult phrase conscientiae matris innoxium esse seems to mean that Tiberius would be unable to disentangle himself from, and would feel himself committed by, the secret instructions supposed to have been given by Livia to Piso and Plancina (ii. 43, 4–5). The words Augustae conscientia are used in exactly the same sense by Domitian when urging Piso to re-occupy his province: Est tibi Augustae conscientia, est Caesarii favor, sed in occulto (ii. 77, 6).
³ The phrases relationem remittere and relationem facere are specially included among the powers conferred upon the emperor by the Lex de imperio. The latter was the ordinary power of the presiding magistrate to put a question to the vote; the former enabled the emperor, without attending himself, to refer a question to the senate for decision. See Rushforth, pp. 82 and 85.
⁴ As we have seen elsewhere, a trial of this kind might take one of three forms. It might be tried: (1) By the
I. 1 Drusus meantime returned from Illyricum, and entered the city, postponing the honour of an Oration voted to him by the Senate for the submission of Maroboduus, and for his successes during the preceding summer.

2 Piso now applied in turn to Lucius Arruntius, Publius Vinicius, Asinius Gallus, Aeserninus Marcellus and Sextus Pompeius, to conduct his defence; but they all on various pleas excused themselves. Thereupon Manius Lepidus, Lucius Piso, and Livineius Regulus offered their services. The whole town was on the tip-toe of expectation:—Would the friends of Germanicus prove staunch? On what did the accused rely? Would Tiberius contain himself? Would he suppress all indication of his own opinion? Never was public feeling more on the stretch, never did the people indulge more freely in secret murmurs against

emperor himself; the emperor might choose assessors from the senate to assist him, but would not be bound to follow their opinion. (a) By the senate as a whole, under the presidency of a consul or a praetor; or (3) in an ordinary court of law. See ii. 28, 5. The case of Piso admirably illustrates these different modes of procedure. When Piso passed the ship bearing Agrippina and her friends off the coast of Lycia in A.D. 19, his retort to Marsus Vibius shews that he expected to be tried by a praetor and a jury in the ordinary court (quae sit) for trying cases of poisoning under the Lex Corinellia de Veneficiis (ii. 79, 2). The prosecutor, however, in presenting his case to the consuls, petitions that it may be tried by the emperor; and the emperor actually undertakes the preliminary investigation with the assistance of a consilium of friends. In the end, feeling how difficult it would be for him to conduct a trial in which the charge was that of murdering his own nephew and adopted son, Tiberius remits the whole case for trial to the senate. See Greenidge, ‘Roman Public Life,’ p. 388.

1 These were all distinguished men; all consulars, i.e. men who had held the consulship. For Arruntius (cos. A.D. 6), see i. 13, 2; for Asinius Gallus (cos. B.C. 8), i. 12 and 13, 2. P. Vinicius was apparently cos. in A.D. 2; Aeserninus Marcellus was a grandson of Pollio, and cos. sui. in some year unknown; Sextus Pompeius was cos. A.D. 44.

2 This distinguished man was cos. A.D. 11; and was described by Augustus as capax (imperit) sed aspernantem (l. 13, 2). He defends his sister Lepida in a prosecution, chap. 29, 2. In chap. 35, 1, he is nominated for the province of Africa; he makes a bold speech on behalf of Clutorius Priscus, chap. 50; and is warmly lauded (iv. 20, 3-5) for his rare mixture of firmness and discretion in resisting tyranny. He was appointed proconsul of Asia A.D. 26 (iv. 56, 3); and died a natural death in A.D. 33 (vi. 27, 4).

3 L. Piso is supposed to have been a brother of Cn. Piso. His independent conduct is described in ii. 34, 1-4; his accusation and death in iv. 21, 1-4.

4 Livineius Regulus also was a consular.
the Emperor: if they kept silence, it was the silence of suspicion.

On the day of the trial, Tiberius used language of studied moderation. Piso, he said, had been the Legate and the friend of his father; he himself had appointed him, at the instance of the Senate, to be coadjutor to Germanicus in the management of Eastern affairs. Whether, in that position, he had exasperated the young man by insolent and contumacious conduct, had exulted at his death, or even compassed it by crime, it was for them impartially to determine. For if, he continued, he out-stepped the limits of his position; if he failed in due obedience to his Imperator; if he shewed exultation at his death and my affliction, I shall indeed visit him with my resentment, and close my doors against him; but I will not use my authority as Emperor to avenge my injuries as a man. If, however, it shall appear that a crime has been committed, such as would call for punishment had the death been that of any private individual: then it will be your duty to afford just satisfaction both to the children of Germanicus, and to us his parents. You will also consider whether Piso encouraged insubordination and disaffection among his troops, whether he courted popularity with them for his own ends, and sought to regain possession of his province by force; or whether these are false charges, and made too much of by the accusers. Of these men's excessive zeal, I have some reason to complain. For what end was served by laying bare the dead body, and exposing it to the rude gase of the multitude, thus letting the rumour go abroad, even in foreign countries, that Germanicus had been poisoned, if that fact is still in doubt, and still calls for investigation?

1 This was done by a formal act, such as that by which Germanicus on his death-bed renounced the friendship of Piso (ii. 70, 3). See also iii. 24, 5, and vi. 29, 3.
Deeply as I lament, and ever shall lament, my son, I shall not prevent the accused from producing any evidence by which his innocence may be established, or by which any fault on the part of Germanicus, if such there were, may be brought home; but I implore you not to accept charges made as if they were charges proved, merely because my own personal grief is bound up in the case. If ties of blood or friendship have prompted any of you to undertake the defence, use all your eloquence, all your energy, on behalf of the accused. I exhort the accusers to be no less industrious, no less determined. In one point only can I place Germanicus above the law: that the enquiry into his death shall take place in the Curia rather than in the Forum, before the Senate, rather than in a Court of law. In all else, let like moderation be observed. Let none pay regard to the tears of Drusus, or to my own affliction; nor even to any calumnies fabricated against myself.

It was arranged that two days should be allowed for the prosecution, and that after an interval of six days, three more should be assigned to the defence.

Fulciniius began with old and irrelevant charges of intrigues and extortion during Piso’s Spanish command—charges which, even if proved, would not tell against the accused, were he to clear himself of those recently that Tacitus, a slave in the interests of Germanicus, regards it as far too impartial, and as indicating coldness on the emperor’s part in avenging his son’s death. He has little objection to high-handed judicial proceedings when directed against the objects of his aversion.

1 Apparently in allusion to L. Piso (see chap. xi, 3). This confirms the conjecture that this Lucius was brother to the accused.
2 The Latin is apud indices, ‘before a jury,’ the meaning of which phrase is explained in the n. on chap. 10, 4.
3 The tone of this speech, whether delivered by Tiberius or not, gives a high idea of Roman justice and Roman judicial proceedings. No British judge in summing up could put a case before a jury with more admirable precision and impartiality. The attitude of the emperor as exhibited in this speech, in a matter so closely concerning himself, is truly civilitas. Indeed, it is evident

Accusation begun by Fulciniius,
brought against him; nor could their refutation help him to an acquittal, should he be found guilty of the more serious offences. After him came Servaeus, Veranius and Vitellius, all with equal determination, and Vitellius with much eloquence besides, urging against Piso that out of hatred to Germanicus, and in furtherance of revolutionary designs, he had so corrupted the soldiery by relaxing discipline, and permitting outrages on the allies, that he had won for himself, among the riff-raff of the camp, the title of ‘Father of the Legions;’ that, on the other hand, he had been severe on all well-behaved men, and especially on the staff and personal friends of Germanicus; and finally, that he had brought about the death of Germanicus by means of poison and incantations. They dwelt upon his own and Plancina’s unholy vows and sacrifices, and his armed attack upon the commonwealth: it was not until he had been defeated in battle that he could be brought to justice.

On all points but one the defence broke down. The accused could not deny that he had courted the favour of the soldiers; that he had put the province at the mercy of men of the worst character; nor even that he had treated his Imperator with contumely. The only charge on which he succeeded in clearing himself was that of poisoning; for even his accusers could not make good their story that at a banquet

---

1 All three were friends of Germanicus. Q. Servaeus is mentioned in ii. 36, 5 (A.D. 18) as put in command of Com-magene with the ius praetoris; when accused and condemned in vi. 7, 2, he is described as quaestura functus, quondam Germanici Comes. P. Vitellius held command under Germanicus in Germany (i. 70, 1), and was afterwards proconsul of Bithynia; Q. Veranius was appointed legatus of Cappadocia, when reduced to a province (ii. 55, 4). Pliny says the speech delivered by Vitellius on this occasion was extant in his time; one of his arguments against Piso was that Germanicus must have been poisoned, as his heart resisted cremation. Vitellius was uncle to the future emperor of that name.
given by Germanicus, Piso had, with his own hand, mixed poison with his food when reclining above him at the table. It seemed absurd to suppose that he could have dared to do this with the slaves of his host all around him, with so many bystanders looking on, and under the very eyes of Germanicus himself.

The accused offered his own slaves for the torture, and demanded that the attendants should be torturd also. But the hostility of Piso's judges, arising from different reasons, was not to be appeased. Tiberius could not forgive him for having made war upon the province; the Senate could not bring themselves to believe that Germanicus had died a natural death.¹ A demand for the production of certain documents was resisted both by Tiberius and by Piso.

The mob in front of the senate-house was heard shouting that they would not keep their hands off Piso, if he were acquitted by the Senate. They dragged his statues to the Gemonian Stairs,³ and would have broken them in pieces had not the Emperor ordered them to be rescued, and put back in their places. Piso was thrust into a litter and taken home, under the escort of a Tribune of the Praetorian Guards, men wondering whether that officer were there to ensure his safety or to carry out his execution.

1. The feeling against Plancina was no less strong than that against Piso, but there was stronger

¹ There seems to be a gap in the text here. The trial must have been prolonged beyond the programme laid down in chap. 13, 1, as we find fresh accusations produced in chap. 15, and the defence abandoned. It is supposed that Piso asked leave to bring forward fresh charges against Germanicus, and that these were met by a demand for documents, which was inconvenient both to Piso and Tiberius. There is a similar gap in chap. 16, 3, after the words quaevis islam apud senatum; and Nipp. with some probability conjectures that part of a leaf in the original MS. had been torn off, so as to affect the pages on both sides.

³ The Scalae Geminae, or 'Stair of sighs,' led down from the Capitol to the Forum, past the so-called Mamertine prison. Hither bodies of criminals were dragged and exposed after execution. The same fate was meted out to the statues of the fallen: descendunt statuae restemque sequuntur, Juv. x. 58.
influence behind her; and people doubted how far Tiberius would be permitted to proceed against her.\footnote{As though Tiberius was powerless to shake himself free from his mother’s ascendency. \textit{Cp. iv. 57, 4, tradunt etiam matris impotentia extrusum.} See n. on l. 14, 3.} So long as the fate of Piso was in suspense, she \footnote{As though Tiberius was powerless to shake himself free from his mother’s ascendency. \textit{Cp. iv. 57, 4, tradunt etiam matris impotentia extrusum.} See n. on l. 14, 3.} professed herself ready to share all his fortunes, and even, if need be, to die with him; but when she \footnote{As though Tiberius was powerless to shake himself free from his mother’s ascendency. \textit{Cp. iv. 57, 4, tradunt etiam matris impotentia extrusum.} See n. on l. 14, 3.} had secured a pardon by the secret entreaties of Augusta, she gradually drew off from her husband, and separated her defence from his. Perceiving that \footnote{As though Tiberius was powerless to shake himself free from his mother’s ascendency. \textit{Cp. iv. 57, 4, tradunt etiam matris impotentia extrusum.} See n. on l. 14, 3.} this meant death for him, Piso hesitated whether to give up the case; urged on, however, by his sons, he hardened his heart, and made his appearance in the Senate once more. Once more he had to listen to the same charges, to face the hostile comments of the senators, and to find everything adverse and everybody relentless; but what alarmed him most was to see Tiberius pitiless, passionless, and doggedly resolved to remain impervious to every human feeling. Taken back to his house, Piso made as though he \footnote{As though Tiberius was powerless to shake himself free from his mother’s ascendency. \textit{Cp. iv. 57, 4, tradunt etiam matris impotentia extrusum.} See n. on l. 14, 3.} would prepare for his defence on the next day. He wrote out some memoranda, sealed them, and delivered them to a freedman; he then attended to his person as usual. In the dead of night, his wife having left the chamber, he ordered the door to be fastened: at daybreak, he was found with his throat cut right through, his sword lying on the ground beside him.

I remember hearing my elders say that a certain document was often seen in Piso’s hands, which he never made public. This document, his friends averred, was a despatch from Tiberius, containing instructions with regard to Germanicus: Piso had intended to produce it before the Senate, and thereby convict the Emperor, but Sejanus put him off with
empty promises. It was also said that Piso did not die by his own hand, but by that of the executioner.

2 I cannot affirm the truth of either story; but I feel bound not to withhold statements made by persons who were still alive in the days of my own youth.¹

3 Assuming an air of sadness, Tiberius complained before the Senate that such a death was deliberately designed to throw odium on him; and sending for Piso’s son,² he questioned him closely as to the manner in which his father had spent his last day and night.

4 Most of these questions the youth answered discreetly enough, others not so wisely; whereupon Tiberius read aloud a memorandum written by Piso in something like the following terms:

5 *Overwhelmed by a conspiracy among my enemies, and by the odium of a false charge, and seeing that there is no place left for truth or innocence of mine, I call the Immortal Gods to witness that throughout my life I have been loyal to you, O Caesar, and no less dutiful to your mother. I entreat you both to have compassion on my children. One of them, Gnaeus Piso, has had no part or lot in my fortunes, whether for good or evil, since he has passed all this time in Rome. The other, Marcus, entreated me not to return to Syria. Would that I had given way to him—the father to the son, the elder to the younger—rather than he to me!* I pray therefore the

¹ Tacitus thus avows that he regards it as a duty, living in an atmosphere alive with rumours, to record any tale, however little substantiated, related to him by persons living at the time. The present is a glaring instance. The story that private instructions had been given to Piso, either by Livia or Tiberius, to undermine Germanicus, is a cardinal feature in the case against Tiberius; it rests throughout on mere *ex post facto* rumour, without a tittle of positive evidence to support it; and it is here accredited by the gravest of historians on the authority of a report that somebody had seen a paper the contents of which, it is acknowledged, were never divulged to any one!

² The words *conquestus M. Pisonem vocari iubet* are supplied here by Halm to fill an obvious lacuna in the text. The lost passage must have contained a verb, together with the name of some person interrogated, who must have been a member of Piso’s household; and the words suggested well meet the desideratum.
more earnestly that, being innocent, he may not have to pay the penalty for my errors. By my five-and-forty years of devotion to yourself; by the Consulship which we held in common, and in which I commended myself to your father, the Divine Augustus: as a friend who will never again ask anything at your hands, I entreat you to spare my unhappy son. He made no mention of Plancina.

Tiberius exonerated the young man from the charge of making civil war:—The father, he said, had given the order, and the son was bound to obey. He spoke in feeling terms of the nobility of the house, and of the sad fate which had befallen Piso himself, whatever his deserts. He then pleaded for Plancina, not without shame at his own shamelessness, alleging the entreaties of his mother; but this inflamed all the more the secret indignation with which she was regarded by all right-minded people. So it was right and proper, they said, for a grandmother to look graciously on the murderess of her grandson, to hold converse with her, and to rescue her from justice! Germanicus alone had been denied the rights secured by law to every citizen. He had been lamented by a Vitellius and a Veranius; but Plancina had had the Emperor and Augusta for her protectors. Let Livia now turn against Agrippina and her children the craft and the poison which she had so happily essayed; let this precious grandmother, this egregious uncle, glut themselves to the full with the blood of that unhappy family!

Two days were wasted in this sham enquiry. Tiberius encouraged the young Pisos to defend

---

1 i.e. ever since his first entry upon public life.
2 Piso was colleague of Tiberius as cos. in B.C. 7, after which he was sent as legatus into Spain, where he exhibited much cruelty and avarice. He could only have gained the consulship on the commendatio of Augustus. See n. on i. 15, 2.
7 their mother. Counsel and witnesses vied with one another in denunciations, to which none made answer; but this, instead of adding to the feeling against her, excited pity in her behalf. The opinion first taken was that of the Consul Aurelius Cotta; for when the Emperor presided in person, the magistrates were called upon to speak first.  

1 Cotta moved that Piso's name should be erased from the calendar;  

9 that one half of his property should be confiscated, and the other half given to his son Gnaeus, who should change his praenomen; that Marcus Piso should be stripped of his rank, and banished  

for ten years,

---

1 This passage implies that the emperor might attend a meeting of senate without actually presiding. When he did preside, as on this occasion, the consuls would take their place as ordinary senators, and be called upon first for their opinion. Under the Republic, the presiding magistrate called first upon the princeps senatus (usually the senior consular), using the words *Quid censes*? (What is your opinion?); and then upon the other consuls in order of seniority. If, however, the consuls for the next year had been appointed, it was usual to call first upon the consuls designate (senatus consultus), as the magistrates responsible for the policy of the year following. When the emperor presided in person, he would follow the same rule. He was ex officio princeps senatus; but it does not appear that he could ever be called upon for his opinion: he could state it whenever he chose. See Greenidge, p. 375. Under the Republic, it would appear that all magistrates (from the rank of quaestor upwards), as well as the tribunes of the plebe, had the right of speaking when they chose, without being called upon by the president.  

9 Similarly, under the Republic, the praenomen Marcus had been forbidden to the Manlii after the so-called treason of the great M. Manlius Capitolinus (Liv. vi. 20, 14). This son is supposed to have taken the name Lucius, and to be the L. Calpurnius mentioned as cos. iv. 62, 1.  

8 The punishment here inflicted is *relegatio*. The term *exilium*, to denote a punishment inflicted by law, was unknown to Rome in republican and early imperial times. *Exile was conceived, not as a punishment, but as a means of escaping punishment, which the Romans left open to the accused up to the moment of his condemnation* (Dist. Ant. 1. p. 820, a). See Cic. pro Cæc. 54: *Exilium enim non supplicium est, sed perfunctum portuque supplicii, ... confugium, quasi ad aram, in exilium*. This voluntary retirement, on the part of an accused person, being regarded as an admission of guilt, was usually followed by a law or plebiscitum forbidding the use of fire and water (aguae et ignis interdictio), in order to prevent the exile's return. In the later Republic, such an *interdictio*, involving loss of *civitas*, became a regular form of punishment inflicted by the judge after conviction; and under the empire a new and severer form of exile, *deportatio in insulam*—of which we hear so much in Tacitus—came into use. Instances of this punishment are to be found in chap. 38, 3: 68, 2: 69, 8; iv. 13, 2: 21, 5: 30, 2 (where the word *reportatur* is used); vi. 30, 1 (de morti sunt). *Relegatio* was also known under the Republic, as a lighter punishment; it did not imply loss of *civitas*, or *deminution capitis*, although, as to Ovid (at Tomi), a definite place of abode might be assigned to the *relegatus*: *ipse relegatus, non exulcit, utitur in me = Nomine* (Ov. Trist. v. 11, 91).
receiving a sum of five million sesterces; and that, in deference to the intercession of Augusta, Plancina should be pardoned.

This sentence was mitigated in several particulars by the Emperor. He would not permit Piso's name to be removed from the calendar, as the names of Marcus Antonius, who had made war on his country, and his brother Iulus, who had wrought outrage in the family of Augustus, were still to be found in it. Nor would he permit degradation, or confiscation of his paternal property, to be inflicted on Marcus; for, as I have often mentioned, avarice was not one of his foibles, and a feeling of shame at the acquittal of Plancina made him all the more ready to be lenient on this occasion. Again, when it was proposed by Valerius Messalinus to set up a golden statue of the Emperor in the temple of Mars the Avenger, and by Caecina Severus to erect an altar in the same place to Vengeance, he refused his consent to both proposals. Such monuments, he observed, were appropriate for foreign victories; domestic calamities should be sorrowfully kept out of sight. Messalinus had added that thanks should be given to Tiberius, Augusta, Antonia, Agrippina and Drusus for avenging the death of Germanicus, omitting all mention of the name of Claudius; nor was his name inserted until Lucius Asprenas asked Messalinus publicly in the

---

1 Yet the name of Antony would seem to have been twice erased from the Fasti Capitolini, and twice restored.
2 This was probably not the cos. of this year (chap. a, 5), but his father, Valerius Messalla, whose syzyphy was described in i. 8, 5 as taking the form of an affectation of independence, and who champions the cause of the women in the debate in chap. 34. He was the son of the famous orator Messalla, patron of Horace, Ovid and Tibullus. See chap. 34. 2.
3 One of those noble human sentiments which historical truth, or his own epigrammatic instinct, compel Tacitus to put into the mouth of Tiberius, when the suitable rhetorical occasion occurs. For similar instances, see i. 81, 3; ii. 88, 1; iii. 69, 6. But while recording such utterances, Tacitus usually contrives to insinuate that Tiberius was insincere in giving expression to them.
6 Senate whether the omission was intentional. For myself, the more I muse upon the course of history, ancient or recent, the more am I struck by the irony: which pervades all human affairs: for the very last man that rumour, expectation, and public esteem were then marking out for sovereignty, was the man whom Fortune was keeping in reserve as future Emperor.

19. 1 Some days after this, Caesar recommended the Senate to bestow priesthoods upon Vitellius, Veranius and Servaeus: Fulcinius he promised to recommend for public office, but in doing so he took occasion to warn him not to spoil his eloquence by undue vehemence.

Thus ended the avenging of the death of Germanicus; an event which has been variously canvassed, not only by contemporaries, but by succeeding generations also. So grave are the doubts which encompass all great affairs; for while there are some who hold as proved everything that they chance to hear, there are others who turn truth into its opposite: and time, as it goes on, magnifies either error.

4 Drusus now quitted the city to resume the

---

1 The word ludibrium, and the notion that Fate, or its personified form 'Fortune,' loves to make a laughing-stock of human affairs, frequently recur in Tacitus and the Stoics generally. See Hist. ii. i. iv. 47, 2; and cp. Juv. x. 366, Te facimus, Fortuna, deam. The words which follow in § 7 of this chap. quem futurum principem fortuna in occulto tenebat, form an exact parallel in their grim humour to the passage in Juv. vi. 605, where Fortune is represented as chuckling to herself as she tosses her gutter-changelings into the houses of the great: stat Fortuna impura noctu = Arridens nudis infantibus. Hoc foveat omne = Involutique simu; domibus tunc forrigit altis, = Secretumque sibi minutum parat. See the famous passage in vi. 22, where Tacitus discusses the question of Fate or Necessity and Free Will.

2 I.e. as rewards for their services in the accusation. They were probably added to the colleges as supernumerary members; so in i. 54, 2. These appointments, formerly elective by the comitia out of selected lists, had now passed to the senate; the emperor exercising here also the right of commendatio.

3 Drusus had lost his imperium (without which no ovation or triumph could be celebrated) by entering the city; he had therefore to return to his army to re-assume his command. The phrase repetere auspicia, as Furn. points out, seems incorrect, as the auspicia were properly conferred in Rome itself (Liv. viii. 30, 2; Momms. Staatsr. i. 96).
auspices; and soon afterwards entered it in Ovation. Not many days after that, his mother Vipsania died—the only child of Agrippa who died in course of nature.\(^1\) For all the others either perished openly by \(5\) the sword, or were believed\(^2\) to have come to their end by poison or starvation.

In the same year war was renewed in Africa by Tacfarinas, whose defeat by Camillus in the previous summer\(^3\) I have already recorded. Beginning with marauding forays, in which he secured impunity by the rapidity of his movements, he proceeded to pillage and destroy the towns, gathering in this way a vast amount of booty. At last he beleaguered a Roman cohort stationed near the river Pagyda. The commander of the fort was one Detrius, a bold and experienced soldier, who regarding the siege as a disgrace urged his men to offer battle in the open, and drew out his force in front of the camp. At the first charge, the cohort was repulsed. Amidst a storm of missiles, Detrius threw himself in the way of his flying soldiers, and reproached the standard-bearers that Roman soldiers should be running away before irregulars or deserters. Braving all wounds, and with one eye pierced through, he kept his face to the enemy and fought on, until at last, abandoned by his men, he fell.

When news of this disaster came to the ears of Lucius Apronius, the successor of Camillus, he was more concerned at the shameful behaviour of his men

---

\(^1\) The statement is exaggerated. No notice is taken of Agrippa's children by Marcella, mentioned by Suet. (Oct. 63); and Julia died a natural death in exile (iv, 71, 6).

\(^2\) Notice the facility with which Tacitus glides from suspicion to assertion. The assertion is made absolutely; yet it rests upon no better authority than manifestum—vel creditum. Any false report, however monstrous, might be quoted among 'things which are manifesta vel credita.'

\(^3\) This is a mistake; the campaign of Camillus was three years before, in B.C. 17.
than at the success of the enemy. Resorting to an ancient form of punishment which had almost become obsolete, he caused every tenth man of the disgraced cohort to be chosen by lot and beaten to death. And so excellent was the effect of this severity, that when the same force of Tacfarinas attacked a fort called Thala, it was routed by a detachment of veterans not more than five hundred strong. In this engagement a common soldier called Rufus Helvius had the distinction of saving a comrade's life. Apronius presented him with a necklace and a spear, to which the Emperor added a Civic Crown, affecting rather than feeling annoyance that Apronius had not added that distinction in virtue of his Proconsular command.

The Numidians having thus received a check, and being disinclined for siege operations, Tacfarinas commenced a guerilla warfare, retreating when pressed, and then again turning upon the Roman rear. So long as the barbarians pursued these tactics, the Roman troops were baffled, worn out, and insulted with impunity; but, when he turned towards the coast, and being now hampered with booty, remained stationary in a fixed camp, the General sent his son Caesianus against him with a force of cavalry and auxiliaries, and some of the swiftest legionaries. Caesianus gained a victory over the Numidians, and drove them back into the desert.

At Rome, meanwhile, information was laid against Lepida, who besides sharing in the lustre of the

1 There were now two legions in Africa. The ordinary garrison of Africa consisted of only one legion, the 3rd (Augusta); but in consequence of the troubles created by Tacfarinas, it had been supplemented by a second legion, the 9th (Hispana) from Pannonia (iii. 9, x and iv. 5, 3). The 9th was prematurely sent back to Pannonia by order of Tiberius in A.D. 23 or 24 (iv. 23, 3).

2 Made of oak-leaves. Such a crown in gold was decreed to Augustus as 'Saviour of the citizens' in B.C. 27.

3 These methods recall the operations of De Wet and other Boer leaders in the late South African War.
Aemilian house, could claim to be the great-granddaughter both of Lucius Sulla and of Gnaeus Pompeius.¹ She was accused of having pretended to bear a son to a wealthy and childless man called Quirinius.² Further charges were added: charges of adultery, of poisoning, and of having enquired of the Chaldaeans concerning members of the Imperial house. She was defended by her brother, Manius Lepidus.³ Nefarious ³ and guilty as she was, the vindictiveness with which she had been pursued by Quirinius,³ even after declaration of divorce, created a feeling in her favour. What was the Emperor's own mind in regard to the case, it was not easy to discover; so strangely did he alternate, or intermingle, signs of severity and clemency. At first he begged the Senate not to take up the charge of treason; yet not long afterwards, he induced Marcus Servilius, a Consular, and other witnesses, to introduce the very matters which he had apparently desired to exclude. Then he handed over Lepida's slaves, who were in military custody, to the Consuls, prohibiting the question to be applied to them in regard to any matter relating to his own family. He also relieved Drusus, who was Consul Designate, of the duty of pronouncing judgment first.⁴ Some people regarded this as a sign of moderation, designed to relieve other speakers from the necessity of agreeing with Drusus. Others argued that it presaged a severe sentence: for the

¹ Lepida's mother Cornelia was daughter of Faustus Sulla and of Pompeia, daughter of Pompey the Great.
² We find two Lepidi in the Annals, one called Marcus, and one Manius, whose names are confused in the MS. This Manius (whose fore-name is here rightly given) appears to be the man described in i. 13, 2, as capакс nem aspernantem, who defended Piso (chap. 11, 2, where see n.). For Marcus Lepidus, see n. on chap. 32, 2.
³ For this Quirinius, see n. on ii. 30, 4. His full name was P. Sulpicius Quirinius, one of the first examples of a man bearing two gentile names. His death is mentioned and his career described in chap. 48, 1, 2. He seems to be the Cyrenius mentioned in St. Luke ii., 2.
⁴ See n. on chap. 17, 8.
right of speaking first would never have been given up if the judgment was to be other than one of condemnation.

23. The course of the trial was interrupted by the public games, during which Lepida entered the theatre, accompanied by a number of ladies of high birth. Appealing piteously to her ancestors, and to Pompeius himself, whose memorial and statues were there before their eyes, she aroused such a storm of sympathy that the audience burst into tears and imprecations, denouncing Quirinius as a low-born childless old man who was making a victim of one who had once been destined to be the wife of Lucius Caesar, and the grand-daughter-in-law of Augustus himself.

2 When the slaves were put to the torture, scandalous things were brought to light. Rubellius Blandus carried a motion that Lepida should be interdicted from fire and water; the motion was supported by Drusus, though others had proposed a milder sentence. At the request of Scaurus, to whom she had borne a son, the confiscation of her property was remitted. Not till then did Tiberius announce that he had ascertained from the slaves of Publius Quirinius himself that Lepida had attempted to take her husband's life by poison.

24. For these calamities to great families—for there was no long interval between the loss of Piso to the Calpurnii, and that of Lepida to the Aemilii—some consolation was afforded by the restoration of

---

1 Probably the Ludi Magni Romani, which began Sept. 4th. The first four days were scenic.

2 This was the great theatre in the Campus Martius dedicated by Pompey B.C. 55; the first permanent stone theatre built in Rome.

3 A son of this Rubellius Blandus (who was apparently cos. suf. for part of this year) married Julia, daughter of Drusus, after the death of her first husband Nero. By this marriage he became father of the Rubellius Plautus apostrophised by Juv. viii. 39 for his insane pride of birth.
Decimus Silanus to the Junian family. His story can be told in a few words. Great as had been the good fortune of the Divine Augustus in public matters, he had been unhappy in his domestic relations in consequence of the profligate conduct of his daughter and his grand-daughter. He had banished both of them from the city, and punished their paramours with death or exile. For he gave the harsh names of 'sacrilege' and 'treason' to offences between the sexes, now of common occurrence; thus at once departing from the tolerant attitude of our ancestors in such matters, and overstepping the provisions of his own laws. The fate of other delinquents, however, as well as the general history of that period, I shall narrate hereafter, if after the accomplishment of my present purpose my life shall be prolonged for further labours.

Decimus Silanus had been guilty of adultery with the grand-daughter of Augustus. Augustus had passed no sentence on him further than to exclude him from his friendship; but Silanus understood this to be an intimation of exile, and it was not until Tiberius had come to power that he ventured to make an appeal for pardon to him and to the Senate. This he did through his brother, Marcus Silanus, a man of great influence, who enjoyed a conspicuous position from his high birth and eloquence. When, however, Marcus Silanus returned thanks to Tiberius before the Senate for this favour, the latter replied that he too was pleased that his brother had returned from his

---

1 Tacitus cannot suppress a sigh over the condemnation, however well-deserved, of two such noble personages. The restoration of Silanus affords some compensation for their loss.

2 i.e. the Lex Julia de adulteriis, passed B.C. 17, which prescribed milder penalties. See li. 50, 2-4, and n. there.

3 This promise was never fulfilled.

4 Claudia, a daughter of this Silanus, was married to Caligula A.D. 33 (vi. 20, 1), who subsequently forced Silanus to commit suicide, A.D. 37.
25. 1 A motion was now brought forward for the relaxation of the Papia-Poppaean\(^1\) law, passed by Augustus in his old age after the Julian rogations, to increase the penalties on celibacy, as well as to bring in revenue to the Exchequer. That law had done nothing to make marriage, and the rearing of families, more frequent—so great were the privileges of the childless man—and yet the number of persons exposed to prosecution was continually increasing. Not a house but was at the mercy of informers, whose interpretations of the law caused as much mischief as

\(^1\) See Furn. 's Appendix on this law at the end of Book III. Roman law, in spite of the fact that it permitted a father to expose his children, had always encouraged marriage and discouraged celibacy. Horrified at the ravages made in the free population by the civil wars and the proscriptions, both Caesar and Augustus attempted to encourage marriage and child-rearing by an elaborate system of rewards and punishments. The first law on the subject proposed by Augustus (probably in B.C. 28) met with such opposition that he had to withdraw it (Suet. Oct. 34); the confirmed bachelor Horace, in his Carmen Saeculare, B.C. 17, implores Diana to prosper the milder law known as Lex Iulia de maritiandis ordinibus passed the year before: super singandis = Feminis gratique naves foraci = Lege marita (C. S. 18-20). A final law, codifying existing law on the subject, was passed in A.D. 9, and called after the consuls of the year Lex Iulia et Papia Poppaeae de maritiandis ordinibus. Besides placing certain restrictions on the marriages of senators and others, the law offered handsome privileges or exemptions to married men and fathers, in regard to holding public offices, the performing of public duties, the receiving of inheritances, and to women and mothers, in regard to guardianship, inheritances, etc.; while penalties were imposed upon divorce, and upon all men who were celibates between the ages of 25 and 60, or women between 20 and 50 years of age. Yet in spite of all these provisions, never was there an age or city in which the rewards of childlessness were greater (prævalit orbis orbitate). Old ladies and gentlemen that were rich and childless were the pampered tyrants of society, to whom every one paid court and toll (Hor. Sat. ii. 5, 28; Epp. i. i, 78; Juv. xii. 93-98); the accused Silanus is let off because valuit pecuniosa orbis orbitate et senecta (xiii. 52, 3). And as the famous tus liberorum could be conferred upon the childless by the senate or by the emperor, it is easy to understand how the law became inoperative, and famous chiefly as affording delators endless opportunities of paying into the private life of wealthy persons, or extorting from them black mail.
the scandals which preceded it. This prompts me to go back to the origin of law, and recount from the beginning the steps by which our statute book has attained its present bulk and complexity.

In the earliest times, when men had as yet no evil passions, they led blameless, guiltless lives, without either punishment or restraint. Led by their own nature to pursue none but virtuous ends, they required no rewards; and as they desired nothing contrary to right, there was no need for pains and penalties. But when equality ceased to be the rule; when self-seeking and violence drove out simplicity and modest living, great monarchies came into being, which in many countries have survived unto this day. Among some nations, a demand for law sprang up at once; among others, not until the rule of kings had been found intolerable. Such codes were at first simple, befitting simple folk; the most famous being those drawn up by Minos for the Cretans, by Lycurgus for the Spartans, and the larger and more elaborate system drawn up somewhat later by Solon for the Athenians. In Rome, Romulus ruled according to his pleasure; his successor, Numa, brought the people under a system of ceremonial and sacred ordinances; and a few new measures were devised by Tullus and Ancus. But the greatest of our law-makers was Servius Tullius, to whose laws even kings were to yield obedience.

1 The word statim is here used to cover the case of Rome. Tacitus implies that as a rule—he probably has the East in his eye—kings ruled despotically, without law; for such was the idea attached to the name of ‘King’ by the Roman mind. Rome was an exception, as explained below; Romulus is represented as the only arbitrary ruler of Rome, the reign of law, though as yet confined to religious matters, beginning with Numa. Tacitus thus takes no notice of the legendary account which attributes to Romulus the fundamental social, political, and military institutions of Rome.

2 A collection of so-called leges regiae or commentarii regum had been early made under the name of ius Papiri-anum.
27. 1 When Tarquinius had been expelled, the people got many measures passed during their contests with the patricians, to protect their liberties, and to establish concord. Then the Decemviri were appointed, who collecting what was best from every source\(^1\) drew up the Twelve Tables—the last embodiment of equitable legislation.\(^2\) For although subsequently to them laws were sometimes devised to check new offences as they arose, these owed their origin, as a rule, to class dissensions, and were passed by violent methods, for the conferring of unconstitutional powers, the banishment of illustrious citizens, and for other evil purposes.\(^3\) Then arose popular agitators like the Gracchi and Saturninus, or Drusus, who offered bribes no less lavish than theirs in the name of the Senate: first seducing the allies with the hope of obtaining the franchise, and then frustrating that hope by the exercise of the tribunitian veto.

Not even during the Social War, and the Civil War after that, was there any pause in the flow of conflicting enactments; until at last the Dictator

\(^1\) That any part of Roman law had its origin elsewhere than in Roman usage is a fiction of the historians (Liv. iii. 33, 5). But the Decemvirs may well have sent envoys to learn something from Greek examples as to how to set about the work, and as to the form which a code should take. See Arnold’s Rome, chap. 14, and Maine’s Ancient Law, pp. 14, 15.

\(^2\) The difficult phrase finis aequi iuris has by some been held to mean that the Laws of the XII. Tables constituted “a complete embodiment of equitable legislation.” But the words which follow, Nam secutae leges, etc., show that the view of Tacitus is very different. According to his view, Law was an evil thing, necessitated by the evil passions of mankind, which it was its object to restrain. That function it performed satisfactorily up to a certain point; and that point was reached in Rome by the legislation of the XII. Tables. After that, new laws, though occasionally aimed at checking new offences as they arose, were in the main the product of evil ambitions, proposed for the purpose either of obtaining personal advancement, or of gratifying personal animosity. Such a view entirely ignores the facts of early Roman history, and discredits the claims of Tacitus to be regarded, in any large sense, as a political philosopher. Livy, more justly, takes an entirely opposite view; he describes the XII. Tables as finis omnis publici privatique iuris (iii. 34, 6).

\(^3\) It would seem that these words, being coupled with dissensione ordinum, and relating to the period before the Gracchi, must refer to the agitation of the plebeians for admission to the higher magistracies. The language of Tacitus recalls the unbending Toryism of the early patrician leaders.
ANNALS OF TACITUS.

Sulla,\(^1\) repealing or amending all former laws, and adding many of his own, procured a temporary respite from legislation. But this respite was not to last; for the unsettling proposals of Lepidus quickly followed, and soon afterwards the tribunes had free license restored to them to agitate as they pleased.\(^5\) And now proposals were carried not only for the public good, but for the ruin of individuals also;\(^8\) for the more corrupt the State, the greater the number of its laws.\(^4\)

The task of stemming this tide of corruption was committed to Pompeius in his third consulship;\(^6\) but his remedies proved worse than the disease. He was at once a law-maker, and a breaker of his own laws;\(^6\) he held his power by the sword, and by the sword he lost it.

Then followed twenty years of ceaseless disorder, during which neither law nor morality were regarded; when the basest actions went unpunished, and the most honourable brought men to destruction.\(^7\)

---

1 Sulla's dictatorship ended in B.C. 79; and Lepidus, as consul in the year following, proposed to rescind many of his laws.

2 In B.C. 70 the consuls M. Crassus and Cn. Pompeius passed a law restoring the tribuneship of the plebe, which Sulla had abolished.

3 Such as the law passed by Clodius for the banishment of Cicero, B.C. 58. The XII. Tables had forbidden all privilegia, i.e. enactments specially directed against individuals.

4 The perverted view of the course of Roman legislation presented in this chapter would almost seem to have been designed for the purpose of leading up to this notable paradox. The phrase tempts one to say of Tacitus that the more false his view, the more brilliant he is in the expression of it.

5 Referring to B.C. 52, when Pompey was sole consul for seven months, having been created absens et solus quod nulli aliis usquam contigit (Liv. Epit. 107). The special object for which extraordinary powers were conferred on Pompey in that year was to check the intolerable violence under which recent elections had been conducted.

6 Two remarkable instances are (a) when he secured for himself the government of Africa for a fresh quinquennium on vacating his consulship, instead of waiting, as the law then required, for five years; and (a) when he consented to allow Caesar to stand for the consulship in absentia in B.C. 60.

7 This sweeping condemnation is here applied to the period from the battle of Pharsalus, B.C. 48, to B.C. 38. It thus includes the whole government and legislation of Caesar, the most splendid period of administrative and legislative reconstruction—destined to be permanent in its results—that the Roman world ever knew. To deny or overlook the lasting work which Caesar did for Rome were as vain as—indeed, far more vain than—to deny the great results which Napoleon, with all his destructiveness, left behind him in the reconstitution of France.
3 At last, in his sixth consulship, feeling his power firmly established, Caesar Augustus repealed all the acts of the Triumvirate; and establishing a new order of things,¹ gave us peace with empire.

4 Thenceforward, the laws were more strictly enforced. Men were appointed to watch their operation, and enticed by rewards to make sure that under the Papia-Poppaean act,² the property of men indifferent to the privileges of paternity should pass into the hands of the People, the common parent of all.

5 But the inquisitors did not stop there; the capital, Italy, and Roman citizens all over the world, fell into their clutches; ruin was brought into many households,³ and terror hung over every head. At last Tiberius appointed a Commission to devise a remedy, consisting of five Consuls, five men of praetorian rank, and a like number from the rest of the Senate, all chosen by lot. This body unravelled many of the complications of the statute, and thus produced a partial and temporary relief.

29. 1 About this same time Tiberius commended Nero, one of the children of Germanicus, who had just arrived at man's estate,⁴ to the favour of the Senate; and created some amusement by requesting that he might be relieved from the obligation of serving upon the Board of Twenty,⁵ and be allowed to stand for

¹ See nn. on i, 1, 3, and 2, 1.
² Tacitus passes abruptly from a disquisition on law in general to an account of the working of the Papia-Poppaean Law, the operation of which suggested this digression in chap. 25, 1.
³ i.e. through the loss of inheritances and the confiscations of property. The animosity of Tacitus to this particular law is to be explained by the fact that it greatly fostered, if it did not create, the terrible system of delation. Its minute provisions affected the most private relations of life; and infringements of the law could only be discovered by prying into the secret circumstances of every home. Hence the necessity of offering rewards to professional informers, whose interest it became to entangle every family in one or other of the complicated meshes of the statute.
⁴ Nero was born probably in A.D. 6.
⁵ The name of vigintiviratus was given to the group of lesser magistracies tenable by an aspirant for public office before the questorship. The group consisted of four separate boards, the
the Quaestorship five years before the legal age.¹ He quoted indeed the authority of Augustus, who had made a similar request on behalf of his brother and himself; but I should imagine that even in those days, when the power of the Caesars was yet in its infancy, and ancient customs were more before men’s eyes, there were those who secretly ridiculed petitions of this kind; and the relationship of step-father to step-children is less close than that of a grandfather to his grandson.

Nero was advanced also to the priesthood; and on the day of his first public appearance in the Forum, a largess was made to the populace. The people rejoiced to see a son of Germanicus grown to manhood; and their satisfaction was still further increased by the marriage of Nero to Julia, the daughter of Drusus. But in proportion to their joy at these events was their displeasure on learning that the son³ of Claudius was to take in marriage the daughter of Sejanus. Men felt that such a marriage would be a blot on the noble Claudian house, and would raise still higher the ambitions already attributed to Sejanus.

Two remarkable men died at the close of this year 30.¹—Lucius Volusius and Sallustius Crispus. Volusius belonged to an ancient family, though it had never risen above praetorian rank until he introduced into it the Consulship.⁸ He had also held the office of
collective membership of which amounted in all to twenty—hence the name. These boards were the Tresviri Capitales, the Tresviri Monetales, the Quattuorviri viis purgandis, and the Decemviri stilitibus judicandis.
¹ The legal age for the quaestorship at this time was apparently the twenty-fifth year.
² The name of this son was Drusus, by Plautia Urgulanilla (Suet. Claud. 27). This projected marriage caused great heart-burnings (iv. 7, 3 and 39, 4), but was never carried out. Suetonius says the lad died young, only a few days after the betrothal. The only known daughter of Sejanus was still a child in A.D. 31 (v. 9, 2). Either, therefore, Sejanus had an older daughter, or else the project, if anything more than a surmise, must be referred to a later period.
⁸ Apparently as cos. suf. B.C. 12.
Censor for selecting the Decuries\(^1\) of knights; and it was he who was the founder of the immense wealth of that family.

3. Crispus was of equestrian rank; he had been adopted by the famous historian Sallustius,\(^8\) and bore his name, being the grandson of his sister. But although the career of public office was thus open to him, he had preferred to follow the example of Maecenas; and without ever reaching the rank of senator, he had wielded an influence far exceeding that of many men who held Consulships and carried off Triumphs. In elegance and refinement, his style of living contrasted strongly with the simple ways of our ancestors; his opulence and profusion were almost those of a voluptuary. But beneath this exterior there was a masculine mind fit to grapple with great affairs, and indeed all the more active for its outward show of apathy and indolence.\(^3\) Second only to Maecenas, so long as Maecenas lived, he became afterwards the chief confidant of imperial secrets; he had been privy to the murder of Agrippa Postumus. In his latter days, his hold upon the Emperor's friendship was apparent rather than real. It had been the same with Maecenas. For there is a fatality which forbids an influence of this kind to last for ever; or perhaps a feeling of satiety comes on when the one side has given all that it has to give, or the other has nothing left to ask.

---

\(^1\) The Decurias were the three (in the time of Augustus four) bodies or panels into which the equites were divided for the purpose of acting as jurymen. Caligula added a 9th Decuria; see Dist. Ant. i. p. 1028, a. For cavalry purposes the equites equo publico were divided into turmae, six in number.

\(^2\) As Furr. here observes, though Tacitus mentions the historian Sallust nowhere but in this passage, he has throughout shown his appreciation of him by frequent imitation. See his Introd., p. 67.

\(^3\) In this also Crispus was the counterpart of Maecenas (Vell. Pat. ii. 88, a).
A.D. 21. CONSULS TIBERIUS CAESAR AUGUSTUS IV.
AND DRUSUS CAESAR II.

This year was notable for the partnership of father and son in the Consulship, Tiberius holding that office for the fourth time, and Drusus for the second. Three years before, Tiberius had shared the same honour with Germanicus; but in that case the relationship between the colleagues had been less close, and the uncle had felt but little pleasure in the association.

Early in the year the Emperor retired to Campania, on the plea of health; whether it was that he was paving the way for a prolonged absence from the city, or that he desired by his departure to leave Drusus in sole occupation of the Consulship. A trifling occurrence, ending in a serious dispute, gave the young man an opportunity of acquiring popularity. Domitius Corbulo, an ex-Praetor, complained to the Senate that a young noble of the name of Lucius Sulla had refused to give up his seat to him at a gladiatorial show. Corbulo had on his side age, ancestral usage, and the sympathies of older men; Sulla’s cause was espoused by Mamercus Scaurus, Lucius Arruntius, and others of his relatives. The matter was hotly argued; and precedents were quoted from ancient times of decrees severely censuring insolence on the part of young men. In the end, Drusus made a conciliatory speech; and Mamercus, who was both uncle and step-father to Corbulo, and was also one of the most fluent speakers of the day, offered an apology on behalf of Sulla.

1 See Furn’s n. and the instances quoted by Mayor on Juv. xiii. 55.
7 This same Corbulo, having called attention to the bad and even impassable condition of many of the roads in Italy, which he ascribed to the frauds of contractors and the negligence of magistrates, undertook the charge of the matter himself with much alacrity; in performing which duty, by means of prosecutions and confiscations, he managed to ruin many persons both in fame and fortune, but without securing thereby any corresponding benefit to the public.

32. 1 Not long after this, Tiberius sent a message to the Senate, informing them that the peace of Africa had been again disturbed by an inroad of Tacfarinas, and committing it to them to select for the office of Proconsul an experienced general, robust enough to bear the fatigues of a campaign. Sextus Pompeius took this opportunity of venting his animosity towards Marcus Lepidus, denouncing him for his indolence and poverty, and calling him a disgrace to his ancestors; he should not be permitted, so he declared, to ballot even for the province of Asia. This attack, however, met with no support in the Senate, where

---

1 Each of the main roads of Italy had a curator viarum, an office of much dignity. This service was reorganised by Augustus, who created special offices or boards to deal with roads, water-supply, the Tiber channel, the distribution of corn, the government of the city, the revising the lists of senators and equites, etc. (Suet. Oct. 37). Corbulo apparently was given a commission over the heads of all the curatores. That he feathered his own nest well out of the job appears from Dio. Caligula used him and his office as an instrument of extortion; under Claudius he was brought to trial and forced to refund (Dio, lix. 15. 5).

2 That is, the appointment was to be extra sortem; by selection, not by lot. The emperor could prohibit a consular from casting his lot for a province, as he did Galba (vi. 40. 3). Africa, as we have seen, was a senatorial province, and the appointment would naturally be made by lot, out of the eligible consulars, in the ordinary way. But in Africa, contrary to the rule in senatorial provinces, the governor had command of the legion (see n. on i. 76. 4). Hence, in the case before us, when a war was afoot, the senate left the choice with the emperor. See chap. 35. 1.

3 The MS. gives the full praenomen Marcus. He is described here as inops; in ii. 48. 1, Tiberius passes over to him the inheritance of Aemilia Musa; and he is again spoken of as pecunias modestus in chap. 72. 3. His poverty is here regarded as an offence; it is not clear whether Tacitus (here and elsewhere) sympathises with this view or not.
Lepidus was regarded as good-natured rather than poor-spirited; and it was reckoned to be to his credit rather than otherwise that, in spite of the smallness of his patrimony, he should have supported his illustrious name without reproach. He was appointed therefore to Asia; but in regard to Africa, it was resolved to beg the Emperor to make the appointment himself.

In the course of this discussion, Severus Caecina moved that no magistrate who had been appointed to a Province should be permitted to take his wife along with him. In a long preamble, he recounted on what excellent terms he lived with his own wife, how she had borne him six children, and how he had practised himself what he preached for others: seeing that, during a period of forty years' service in various Provinces, he had never permitted his wife to leave Italy.

His speech

It was a good old rule, he remarked, which forbade women to be taken to foreign countries, or to those of our allies. The train of attendants which women carried with them was a source of extravagance in time of peace, of panic and delay in time of war, converting the march of a Roman army into the semblance of a barbaric progress. It was not only that women-kind were weak in body, and unfit to undergo fatigue; but if free from control, they could be cruel, scheming and ambitious; they would move about among the soldiers, and have the centurions at their beck and call. It was not long since a woman had presided over the exercises of the cohorts, and the manoeuvres of the legions. Let them call to mind that in all prosecutions for misgovernment, it was against the wives that most of the.

---

1 The commander of the army of Lower Germany during the mutiny (i. 31. 2.)
2 The same number of years' service is attributed to him in i. 64. 6; and that was not his last campaign.
3 Referring to Plancina (ii. 55. 5).
charges were laid; it was the wives who gathered round them all the worst spirits in a province; it was they who took jobs in hand, and carried them through. Two persons had to be courted when they walked abroad instead of one; there were two sets of headquarters; and the orders issuing from those of the women were always the more peremptory and outrageous of the two. In olden days, women had been kept in order by the Oppian and other laws; but they had now burst through all bonds and were masters everywhere—in their homes, in the Courts of Law, and even in the Army.

34. 1 These remarks were listened to with little favour. The majority made interruptions, objecting that the question was not before the House, and that Caecina was no fit person to be censor in a subject of such importance. After an interval, Valerius Messalinus thus replied: he was the son of Messalla, and preserved some semblance of his father’s eloquence.

In many respects the harsh usages of our ancestors had been wisely softened. The city had no longer war always at its gates, as in the days of old; the provinces were no longer hostile. Certain concessions, no doubt, of this period felt at women taking a part in politics, and influencing the course of events, had probably been much intensified by their indignation against Cleopatra and her influence over Antony. The poets of the Augustan periods say little against Antony; their wrath culminates upon Cleopatra, and the indignity put upon Rome when she was made to tremble for the safety of the Capitol by the power and insane ambition of a woman. See Hor. Od. i. 37, 5-12. The Roman ideal of the true mission of a noble woman finds its highest expression in the Cornelia of Propertius (El. iv. 11).

2 An apparent exaggeration, perhaps taken from later experience. The only cases we hear of in the Annals are those of Plancina and Sosia (iv. 19, 4). According to Dio (livii. 24, 3), Paxana, whose voluntary death along with her husband, M. Pomponius Labeo, is recorded in vi. 29, 1, was implicated in the charges brought against her husband. On the other hand, we all remember what excellent advice Pilate received from his wife: 'Have thou nothing to do with that just man' (St. Matt. xxvii. 19).

3 The Lex Oppia, passed in B.C. 215, in the crisis of the second Punic war, forbade women to wear more than half an ounce of gold, or to dress in many-coloured dresses, or to drive in carriages within the city or for one mile round. It was repealed when the war was over. The horror which high-minded Romans meets with little favour.

Messalinus argues on the other side,
had been made to meet the needs of women; but these were not such as to be burdensome to their husbands, still less to the provincials. In all other matters, man and wife shared alike; and that caused no difficulty in time of peace. In time of war, no doubt, the husband must take the field without incumbrance; but on his return from a campaign, what comfort more excellent than that afforded by a wife? Some wives, it was said, had given way to ambition or love of money. Well? were not many of the magistrates themselves given over to all sorts of evil passions? Yet that would be no reason for leaving the Provinces without governors. Granted that husbands were often led astray by vicious wives: were the unmarried all immaculate? The Oppian laws had commended themselves to our forefathers because public needs so required; in later days, relaxations and mitigations had been admitted, as expediency suggested. It was idle for men to shift on to others the blame of their own remissness; if the wife broke all bounds, the husband was at fault. And if one or two husbands had shown weakness of mind, it would be a sorry thing to deprive all husbands of the joys of partnership, whether in success or failure. That would be to desert the weaker vessel; to leave her a prey to her own self-indulgence, or to the evil passions of others. It was no easy thing as it was, with the natural guardian on the spot, to preserve the marriage bond inviolate: what would happen if it were kept out of sight, for several years at a time, by a species of divorce? Let them check, by all means, such vices as prevailed abroad; but let them not shut their eyes to the scandals of the metropolis.

Drusus added a few words on the subject of his own married life. Members of the Imperial family, he observed, had often occasion to visit the outlying parts of the Empire. The Divine Augustus, on his frequent
journeys to the East and West, had always been accompanied by Livia; he himself had journeyed to Illyricum, and he would be ready to go to other countries also, if the public interest so required: but he could hardly do so without a qualm if he were to be torn from a wife whom he dearly loved, the mother of his many children.\footnote{There were only three in all: Julia, married first to Nero (chap. 29, 4 and n.), and the twins born in A.D. 19 (ii. 84, 1).} Thus was the go-by given to the motion of Caecina.\footnote{M. Gaston Boissier (Rev. des deux Mondes, July, 1901), doubts whether it can be discovered on which side of this controversy the sympathies ofTacitus lay. But apart altogether from his attitude towards women in general (and he seldom uses the word multiebris except in a depreciatory sense), the closing words of this chapter, \textit{sic Caecinæ sententia elusa}, the words \textit{fauorum haec assensu audita}, in chap. 34, 1, as well as the evident gusto with which he states the case against the women in chap. 39, make it abundantly clear that he sided with Caecina.}

35. 1 At the next meeting of Senate, a letter was read from Tiberius in which, after rebuking the fathers indirectly for heaping every responsibility upon his shoulders, he suggested two names—those of Manius Lepidus\footnote{For this Lepidus see n. on chap. 22, 2.} and Junius Blaesus—one of whom should be selected for the Proconsulship of Africa. Both candidates addressed the Senate. Lepidus begged earnestly to be excused, pleading ill-health and the tender age of his children, one of them a daughter of marriageable age, but making no reference to what was in all men’s minds—that Blaesus was the uncle of Sejanus, and his interest, therefore, all-powerful. Blaesus, in his remarks, made a show of declining, but only in a half-hearted way; and his refusal met with no support from the chorus of flatterers.

36. 1 Next, an abuse was brought to light which had become the subject of much secret animadversion. A practice was becoming prevalent by which men of the lowest character were suffered to vilify respectable people in the most scandalous and offensive manner, and then to secure impunity by

The motion rejected. Tiberius suggests two names for Africa; Blaesus is appointed.

Abuse of the right of shelter afforded by the Emperor’s statue.
laying hold of the Emperor’s statue. Even freedmen and slaves would thus terrorise their own patrons and masters by insulting language and threats of violence. The question was taken up by Gaius Cestius, a private senator. The Emperors were indeed as Gods, he said, but even the Gods listened to none but worthy suppliants; no one could take refuge in the Capitoline or other temples in the city for the purpose of turning the protection so afforded to scandalous uses. It was a subversion and nullification of all law that Annia Rufilla—a woman whom he had himself convicted of fraud before a judge—should assail him in the Forum, at the very threshold of the Senate-house, with insults and even with threats, while he himself dared not bring her into Court because she had taken refuge behind a statue of the Emperor. A chorus of voices quoted similar and more glaring instances, and implored Drusus to make an example. He accordingly summoned Annia Rufilla, convicted her, and ordered her to be detained in the common prison.

Two Roman knights, Considius Aequus and Caelianus, were then punished by the Senate at the instance of the Emperor for bringing a false charge of treason against the Praetor Magius Caecilianus. Both of these decisions redounded to the credit of Drusus. Living as he did in the city, people said, mixing and conversing with men, he was

---

1 Thus by degrees the sanctity attaching to the statues of deified emperors was being extended to those of the living. See iii. 70, 2, and iv. 67, 6, where Agrippina is advised to seek protection by embracing the image of Tiberius in the forum at mid-day. In regard to deified emperors, we have seen how a charge of treason was founded on the mutilation of a statue of Augustus (i. 74, 4); the triumvirs gave a right of asylum to the temple of Divus Iulius (Dio, xlvi. 19, 2); and the Cretans claimed a similar right for a statue of Augustus (chap. 63, 6). If we may believe Suetonius, the following acts were regarded as ‘capitalia’: ‘circa Augusti simulacrum servum cecidisse, vestimenta mutasse, nummo vel anulo efigiem impressam latrinae aut lupanarii intulisse’ (Tib. 58). To swear falsely by the emperor’s name became the worst form of perjury: Tertullian says people would more readily forswear themselves by all the gods in heaven than by the genius of Caesar (Apol. 28).
able to mitigate the harshness of his father's secret
counsels. Even the extravagance of the young man
met with little censure:—Better for him to turn his
mind that way, and to pass his days in building, his
nights in banqueting, than to devote gloomy vigils to
hatching sinister designs in solitary and pleasureless
retirement.

38. 1 For neither Tiberius nor the accusers showed any
symptoms of exhaustion. Ancharius Priscus had im-
peached Cordus, Proconsul of Crete, for extortion,
throwing in a charge of treason, without which in
those days no accusation was complete. Antistius
Vetus, a leading man in Macedonia, was accused of
adultery; but when he was acquitted on that charge,
Tiberius rebuked the jury, and had him dragged back
to stand his trial for treason, on the ground that he
had been mixed up in the treasonable designs of Rhes-
cuporis, at the time when that prince had murdered
his brother Cotys, and was meditating war against us.
2 He was interdicted therefore from fire and water; in
addition, he was to be confined in some island not
easily accessible either from Thrace or Macedonia.
3 For at this time Thrace, being unused to our rule,
was in a state of disaffection. The government had
been divided between Rhoemetalces and the children
of Cotys, who not being of full age, had been placed
under the guardianship of Trebellenus Rufus; and
the people found as much fault with Rhoemetalces as
with Trebellenus, complaining that he left the wrongs
of his own fellow-countrymen unavenged.
4 Three powerful tribes — the Coelaletae, the
Odrusae, and the Dii—took up arms, each under
leaders of its own, all equally undistinguished.
The result was that no formidable combination was

Accusa-
tions
against
Cordus and
Antistius
Vetus.

Disaffec-
tion in
Thrace.

Three
tribes take
up arms,
effected. One party brought about a rising in their own country; a second crossed Mount Haemus to raise the outlying tribes; the largest and best organised of the three forces besieged the king in Philippopolis, a city founded by the Macedonian monarch of that name.

When news of these movements reached Publius Vellaeus, who was in command of the nearest Roman army, he despatched a force of auxiliary cavalry and light-armed infantry against the plundering and recruiting parties, while he himself, at the head of the main body of foot, marched to raise the siege of Philippopolis. These operations were all successful at once. The marauding party was cut to pieces; dissensions broke out in the besieging force; and the king made an opportune sortie just as the legion came up. But there was no regular fighting, nor anything that deserved the name of a battle; nothing but a butchery of half-armed stragglers, with no loss to us.

In the same year some of the states of Gaul, overwhelmed with debt, broke out into revolt. The most active fomenter of the movement were Julius Florus

---

1 A town on the Upper Hebrus, in modern Roumelia, still called Flitile.
2 Vellaeus was governor of Moesia.
3 The alarini equites and leves cohortium are the auxiliary forces; the robur peditum below are the Roman legions.
4 Gaul was divided into four separate provinces: (1) Gallia Narbonensis in the South (senatorial); (a) Aquitania, in the South-West; (3) Gallia Lugudunensis in the centre; and (4) Belgica, between the Seine and the Rhine; the three last were imperatorial. The Aedui, Andecavi, and Turoni were in Lugudunensis; the Treviri in Belgica.
5 Besides the exactions of the governors, and of the publicans acting in concert with the governors, the provinces were preyed upon by Roman money-lenders. The Roman negotiatori, who flooded the provinces used their capital in usury, not in productive industry. Hence they were the first victims of an outbreak against Rome. When Mithradates, in B.C. 88, ordered a general massacre of Roman citizens in Asia, it was not from mere vindictiveness, but to show the provincials that he wished to relieve them of the most obnoxious incident in the Roman occupation. No less than 80,000 were butchered on that occasion. See iii. 42, 1. The ubiquity of the Roman money-lender in Gaul is thus testified to by Cic., pro Fonteio, 1, 11: Nemo Gallorum sine cive Romano quidquam negoti gerit: numerus in Gallia nullus sine civium Romanorum tabulis commovetur.
amongst the Treveri, and Julius Sacrovir among the Aedui. Both were men of noble family; both came of ancestors who had done good service to Rome, and had in consequence been made Roman citizens at a time when that privilege was rare, and only granted as a reward for merit. Gathering in secret conclave the boldest spirits, or those who had in their poverty the strongest motives for disaffection, or because they dreaded punishment for their crimes, Florus undertook to raise the Belgae, Sacrovir the nearer tribes of Gaul. Appearing at public gatherings, or in private meetings, they delivered seditious harangues denouncing the ceaseless exaction of tribute, the exorbitant rates of usury, the cruelty and insolence of the governors. The news of the death of Germanicus, they urged, had shaken the allegiance of the army; now was the time to recover their freedom. Let them reflect how great were their own resources, how impoverished was Italy, how unwarlike the populace of the city: the strength of the Roman armies lay in their foreign element.

41. 1 The seeds of sedition were thus scattered over almost every State in Gaul; but the Andecavi and the Turoni were the first to break out in open rebellion. The former were put down by the Legate Acilius Aviola, who called up for the purpose a cohort which was then doing garrison duty at Lyons; the Turoni he crushed with a legionary force supplied

---

1 The Treveri or Treviri were on the Moselle. Their chief town, Augusta Treverorum, is the modern Trier or Trèves.
2 The name Julius indicates a family which had received the citizenship from Caesar; or perhaps from Augustus.
3 The Aedui or Haedui, the most powerful of the Gallic tribes in Caesar’s time (B.G. vi. 12), occupied the country between the Saone and the Loire. Their capital was Augustodunum (Autun); probably the Bibracte of Caesar.
4 The Roman legions themselves were now composed mainly of provincials who had received the civitas. Probably only the Praetorians and household troops were of pure Italian blood. Tacitus ascribes the beginning of the mutiny in the German army to the ill-conditioned city riff-raff levied in Rome after the disaster of Varus (l. 31, 4).
5 i.e. legatus of Lugdunensis,
by Visellius Varro, the Legate of Lower Germany, aided by some Gallic Chiefs, who sent help with a view to disguise their disaffection and bring it forth at a more convenient season. Sacrovir himself might be seen doing battle in the front Roman line, bareheaded; this, he pretended, was to let his bravery be seen. Prisoners, however, declared that he had exposed himself to ensure recognition, and thus save himself from being attacked. This was reported to Tiberius; but he declined to act on the information, and by his irresolution fanned the war.

Meanwhile Florus, in pursuance of his design, tried to induce a division of cavalry which had been raised among the Treveri, and was serving as part of our army and under our discipline, to commence hostilities by a massacre of Roman traders. A few of the troopers were gained over; the majority remained loyal. In addition, a mob of debtors or clients took up arms and made for the forest of Arduenna; but these were cut off by the legionary troops which Visellius and Gaius Silius had sent against them by opposite routes from their respective armies. Julius Indus, who belonged to the same State as Florus, and was all the more eager to proffer his services because he was on bad terms with him, was sent on with a picked force; he dispersed the multitude before it could be brought into order. Florus eluded the conquerors for a while by changing his hiding-places; but at last, on seeing his retreat beset by soldiers, he put an end to himself. Thus ended the rising of the Treveri.

1 Successor to A. Caecina Severus, (i. 37, 2).
2 The auxiliary forces were being more and more raised and disciplined by the Romans as regular troops. This caused the Thracian revolt (iv. 46, 2–3).
3 Still legatus of Upper Germany (i. 31, 2).
43. 1 The outbreak among the Aedui was more formidable in proportion to the greater resources of that people, and the distance from which forces had to be brought\(^1\) for its repression. Sacrovir held Augustodunum, the chief city of the tribe, with a well-armed force. In this town was collected the flower of the young Gallic nobility, engaged in the prosecution of their studies. These youths Sacrovir retained as pledges for the adhesion of their parents and relations, and at the same time distributed among them some arms that had been manufactured in secret. His force amounted to forty thousand men, a fifth part of whom were armed as legionaries,\(^2\) the remainder being provided with spears, knives and other weapons of the chase. In addition, there was a body of slaves called Crupellarii, destined for the gladiatorial arena. These were clad after the fashion of their tribe in complete suits of iron armour, which, though unhandy for purposes of offence, render their wearers invulnerable. The force was swelled by volunteers from the neighbouring states; for though the communities did not as yet venture to join the movement openly, individual citizens came forward very readily. And there was a dispute between the rival Roman Generals, each of whom claimed for himself the conduct of the war; but in the end Varro, who was infirm and old, gave way to Silius, a man in the prime of life.

44. 1 In Rome it was believed that not only the Treveri and the Aedui, but all the sixty-four\(^8\) states of

\(^1\) *i.e.* far from the great armies on the Rhine.

\(^2\) These would belong to the troops mentioned above, *n. to chap. 42. 1.*

\(^3\) So Ptolemy (ii. 7, 9), in his enumeration of the tribes in Aquitania, Lugdunensis and Belgica. Strabo (iv. 3. 2) says that sixty was the number of states named on an altar to Augustus at Lyons,
Annals of Tacitus

[AD 21.]

Gaul¹ were in revolt; that Germany had made common cause with Gaul, and that the two Spains were wavering in their allegiance: rumour, as is her wont, exaggerating everything. All good citizens were distressed for their country’s sake; but many were so indignant at the existing state of affairs, and so anxious for a change, that they rejoiced at the very dangers with which they were threatened, and denounced Tiberius for occupying himself with the informations of accusers in the midst of so formidable a rebellion. Would Saco viri also, they asked, have to appear before the Senate on a charge of treason? Men had at last been found to reply to murderous messages with the sword: better war itself than a state of peace with infamy!

Talk like this only made Tiberius assume a more studied air of unconcern. He never changed his domicile or his demeanour; his days passed as usual. Possibly this was strength of mind; perhaps he knew that the trouble was not so serious as was reported.

Meanwhile Silius was advancing with two legions. ⁴ He had sent on a body of allies to lay waste the

¹ A Roman province was formed on the principle of aggregating together a definite number of states (civitates), which were usually cities in the East, tribes or cantons in the West. Pliny gives sixty-eight as the number of such states in Sicily (H. N. iii. 8, 88); we hear of forty-four in Asia under Sulla, and in this passage of sixty-four states in Gaul. These sixty-four states or cantons represent the original Celtic tribes of the three Gallic provinces, Aquitania, Lugdunensis and Belgica. With their genius for government and empire, the Romans, like the British, did not seek to set up everywhere a rigidly uniform system of administration, but permitted a wise elasticity in their arrangements, suiting them to the peculiar circumstances of the population or the locality. Thus in the Narbonensis, the administration was purely Roman, all the inhabitants being under the authority of Roman colonies; in the three northern Gaules, the tribes or cantons had a considerable amount of self-government, having their own local magistrates and local worship. In other cases, as in the Alpine valleys of North Italy, the native communities were attached as subjects to Roman towns in their neighbourhood, under a system called attributio, in order that they might be placed under rigorous military rule until they were fit for a greater degree of independence. See Rushforth, pp. 14, 15 and 38-39. This plan of differentiation according to circumstances, and the gradually progressive character thereby given to the process of Romanisation, account for the firm and enduring hold which Rome took of her Western empire, and for the few and slight attempts made to shake off her rule.
villages of the Sequani, a people whose territory lies on the furthest border of the Aedui, and who had taken up arms along with them. He now made a rapid march to Augustodunum, the standard-bearers vying with one another for the lead, and even the private soldiers imploring him not to halt for the usual rests, either by day or night:—*Let them but see the enemy before them, and be seen; that alone would give them victory.* At the twelfth milestone from the town, Sacrovir was discovered with his forces drawn up on open ground. He had placed his iron-clad men in front, his cohorts on the wings, the half-armed troops in the rear. He himself, mounted on a conspicuous charger, and with his chiefs around him, bade his men remember the past glories of their countrymen, and the defeats which they had inflicted on the Romans:—*How glorious to conquer and be free! If vanquished once again, their slavery would be more intolerable than ever.*

46. 1 This harangue roused but little enthusiasm, and was soon cut short; for the legions were upon them, and the town-bred levies, without discipline or experience of war, had neither eyes to see nor ears to hear. On the other side Silius, though the confidence of his men made exhortation unnecessary, proclaimed that it was a disgrace for them, the conquerors of Germany, to be led against Gauls, as against an enemy. *One cohort of yours, he cried, lately put down the Turoni, a single wing the Treveri; a few of your squadrons crushed the Sequani. Prove the Aedui to be as unwarlike as they are wealthy and voluptuous; and give a good account of them when they run!*

---

1 The Sequani were to the E. of the Saone, between the province of Germany and the Aedui.
2 Commod sense has here deserted the commentators, even Mr. Fyuentaux. They interpret the words *fugentibus consulte* literally, as if it were a recommendation to spare the enemy. This
These words were greeted with loud huzzahs. The cavalry threw themselves round the enemy’s flanks at the same moment that the foot charged in front. The flanks made no resistance. A momentary check was caused in front by the iron-clad battalions, whose plates of armour stood out against blow of sword or pike; but at last our men got hold of axes and mattocks, and hewed through armour, bodies and all, just as if they were breaking through a wall; some pushed over their helpless frames with poles and forks, and left them lying for dead, unable to make the effort to rise. Sacrovir fled first towards Augustodunum; then, fearing betrayal, made for a country house close by, with his most trusty companions. Here he perished by his own hand; the rest by each other’s swords. The house was set on fire over their heads, and all were burnt with it.

Not till then did Tiberius write to apprise the Senate of the outbreak and conclusion of the war. He told them what had happened without a word of exaggeration or extenuation:—The loyalty and valour of his Legates, acting under his own counsels, had carried the day. He explained at the same time why neither Drusus nor himself had gone to the seat of war. In so vast an Empire, he wrote, it was not seemly that the members of the Imperial family, if a disturbance arose in one State or another, should leave the seat of government. But now that his departure could not be put down to fear, he would go and see for himself, and settle matters on the spot.\(^1\)

\(^1\) On three separate occasions Tiberius made believe that he was about to undertake a journey into the provinces: (1) after the mutiny, A.D. 14 (i. 47, 5); (2) on the present occasion, A.D. 21; and again in A.D. 23 (iv. 4, 3). Each time he disappointed expectation. Suetonius says that Augustus visited every province in the empire in the course of his reign except Africa and Sardinia.
The Senate offered prayers for his safe return, thanksgivings and other compliments. Dolabella Cornelius, in his desire to outdo every one else in flattery, went to the ridiculous length of proposing that the Emperor should enter the City from Campania in Ovation. But soon came a letter from Tiberius, in which he observed that he was not so destitute of all claim to glory, that after subduing the fiercest tribes, after celebrating or declining so many Triumphs in his youth, he should now, in his old age, be coveting an empty distinction for undertaking a suburban promenade.

48. Shortly after this, Tiberius asked the Senate to bestow the honour of a public funeral on Sulpicius Quirinius. This Sulpicius had nothing to do with the patrician family of the Sulpicii; he came from the municipal town of Lanuvium. But he was an intrepid soldier; and in return for his zealous services he had been rewarded by Augustus with the Consulship. Later, he received the Triumphant insignia for storming the strongholds of the Homonadenses in Cilicia; he had been appointed guardian to Gaius Caesar when in charge of Armenian affairs, and had paid due court to Tiberius, then residing in Rhodes. All this the Emperor recounted in the Senate, praising Sulpicius for his devotion to himself, and throwing upon Marcus Lollius the blame for the perverse and unfriendly attitude of the young prince. Others, however, did not hold the memory of Quirinius in

---

1 Velleius asserts that, though content with three triumphs, Tiberius could without any doubt have claimed seven (li. 132, 1). But it is not easy to make out what the seven could have been.
2 See on chap. 22, 3.
3 One of the wild hill tribes, untouched by Greek civilisation, which inhabited the hill ranges on the borders of Pisidia and Cilicia. The existence of these tribes explains why Augustus established a number of colonies in that neighbourhood; elsewhere Rome made little attempt to Latinise her Eastern empire, content to preserve and protect the existing Hellenic civilisation. See Rushforth, p. 23. For the probable date of these successes see Furn. 's note.
4 Tiberius never forgave those who had treated him with coldness or incivility when living in retirement at Rhodes. See i. 4, 4; ii. 42, 2.
so much favour, because of his persecution of Lepida, related above, as well as for the meanness which he displayed, and the inordinate influence which he exercised, in his old age.

At the close of this year, an informer attacked Clutorius Priscus, a Roman knight, to whom Tiberius had given a sum of money for a poem of some distinction upon the death of Germanicus. This man was now accused of having written a poem during the illness of Drusus, in the hope that, if Drusus died, its publication would bring him a still larger recompense. This poem he had been vain enough to read aloud at the house of Publius Petronius, in the presence of Vitellia, the mother-in-law of Petronius, and several ladies of high rank. When the case came on, all of them except Vitellia were intimidated into giving evidence against Clutorius: she affirmed that she had heard nothing. But the inculpating evidence was believed rather than hers, and upon the motion of Haterius Agrippa, Consul elect, Clutorius was condemned to death. Against this proposal Manius Lepidus spoke as follows:—

If, Conspect Fathers, he said, we were to regard only the shameful utterance with which Clutorius has defiled his own mind, and the ears of his audience, neither the prison nor the halter—nay, not even the tortures applied to slaves—would be punishment enough for him. But though scandalous and outrageous conduct may have no limit, some limit has ever been set to measures of punishment and redress, both by the clemency of the Emperor, and by the precedents of your own and former times; and

---

1 This expectation recalls the famous instance of Octavia’s munificence to Virgil on his reciting the lines about Marcellus, Aen. vi. 869-886. See n. on i. 3, 1. Cp. Juv. vii. 1: *Et spes et ratio studiorum in Caesare tantum.*

2 Tacitus evidently regards this as an admirable (and rare) instance of female discretion.
if a distinction may be drawn between crime and folly—
between evil deeds and evil words—there is perhaps room
for a sentence by which this man’s offence shall not go
unpunished, and yet no cause be left for us to regret either
our leniency or our severity. I have many a time heard
our Prince complain when men have come in the way of
his clemency by taking their own lives. Clutorius still
lives; his life will be no danger to the State; his death
will teach no lesson. Insensate as his productions are,
they are of no importance, and will not survive: what of
serious import can be feared from one who betrays his
own shame, and looks not to men, but to a parcel of
women, for applause? Nevertheless, let him leave the
city, and be interdicted from fire and water, with loss of
all his property. In proposing which sentence, I hold
him guilty under the law of treason.¹

51. 1 A single Consular, Rubellius Blandus,² supported
this proposal. The rest voted with Agrippa; and
Priscus was carried off to prison, and straightway put
to death. For this, Tiberius reproved the Senate in
his usual two-edged fashion, commending the dutiful
feeling which led them to punish severely any outrage
upon their Prince, however slight, but censuring
their undue haste in visiting words with punishment;
giving credit to Lepidus, yet finding no fault with
Agrippa. So it was resolved that, in future, decrees
of the Senate should not be reported to the Treasury
till the tenth day after they were passed; and that
the execution of condemned persons should be delayed
for a similar period. Yet even so the Senate were
not free to reconsider their judgments; nor did the
interval thus granted ever move Tiberius to mercy.

¹ See n. on chap. 29, 2. This speech
is an excellent example of the in-
dependence tempered by discretion
which is attributed to Lepidus in iv.
30, 4.
² See n. on chap. 23, 2.
A.D. 22. CONSULS C. SULPICIUS GALBA¹ AND D. HATERIUS AGrippa.

During this year there were no disturbances abroad; but there was a fear at home that severe measures would be taken to check extravagance, which had become excessive in every branch of expenditure. The prices paid for other objects of luxury, immense though they were, were kept secret, or not truly stated; but the sums lavished on gluttony had become subject of common talk, and people were afraid that the Emperor, himself a man of primitive frugality, might take severe notice of the matter. The question was raised by Gaius Bibulus; and the discussion was continued by the other Aediles, who complained that the sumptuary laws were being disregarded; that the prices paid for articles of diet were higher than the law allowed, and were rising every day; and that no ordinary remedies could check the mischief. On being thus consulted, the Senate passed the question on to the Emperor without any expression of opinion.

Now Tiberius had often pondered in his own mind whether it was possible to restrain extravagance, when it had gone so far; whether an attempt to check it might not do more harm than good;

¹ This C. Sulpicius Galba was elder brother of the future emperor. His suicide is mentioned vi. 40. 3.
² For the duties of the aediles, see n. on ii. 85, 2.
³ The Lex Iulia, passed by Augustus in B.C. 22, and described by Gell. ii. 24, 14, permitted only 300 sesterces (less than £2) to be spent in feasts on ordinary days; 300 on the Kalends, Ides, Nones, etc.; at marriages and funeral festivals, 1000. A subsequent edict by Augustus or Tiberius raised the sum to 2000 sesterces, or £16. Such absurd regulations in an age of great sensual luxury can only have defeated their own end. They give some justification to the famous epigram corruptissima re publica plurimae leges (chap. 97, 5). Their only effect seems to have been to put a vexatious weapon into the hands of malicious prosecutors.
⁴ The word uentuilia is here used for necessary articles of food, as in i. 70, 6; ii. 50, 5; and xv. 59, 2 (sub vetuilia ubi ubi uentuilia ab Utiia).
whether it would not be unbecoming to take in hand measures which he could not enforce, or enforce only at the expense of dishonour and disgrace to illustrious personages. In the end, he wrote a letter to the Senate to the following effect:

53. 1 In all other matters, Conscript Fathers, it were perhaps better that I should be interrogated in your presence, and tell you what I think the public interest demands. But in regard to this question, it is well that my eyes should be elsewhere; lest if you were to mark out those whose fears or faces betrayed a consciousness of shameful extravagance, I might perceive them myself, and as it were detect them. If, indeed, our excellent Aediles had taken counsel first with me, I might perhaps have advised them to take no notice of failings which have come to a head, and are overpowering us, rather than proclaim the fact that there are scandals with which we are unable to cope. They, however, have done their duty, as I should wish to see all magistrates do theirs; but for me, it is neither seemly to keep silence, nor yet easy to speak out, seeing that I do not hold the office either of Aedile, of Praetor, or of Consul. Some greater and grander utterance is expected from the Princeps;¹ and whereas everyone takes credit to himself for his own well-doing, the odium of all men’s sins falls upon me alone. And where am I to begin? Which form of extravagance am I to prohibit first, or cut down to the standard of olden times? Is it the vast dimensions of our country houses?² the number

¹ An open assertion on the part of Tiberius that the old magistrates had become mere subordinate officers, all under his control, and responsible to him, as he was responsible to the public for their failures or successes.

² For Roman extravagance in building and planting, see Hor. Od. ii. 15 and 18, etc.; also Mayor’s n. on Juv. xiv. 86–95, and Fried. iii. pp. 58–79. Tiberius himself, though praised for his economy in building, had no less than 12 villas embraced in his residence in Capri (iv. 67, 5); recalling the phrase of Sallust, villas in urbsium modum exaedificatas. The phenomenal villa of Hadrian near Tivoli with its appurtenances occupied a space of some 10 to 15 miles in circuit, and was more like a city than a villa.
and varied nationality of our slaves?\(^1\) the weight of our
gold and silver plate? our art-marvels, in bronze or
painting? the wearing of the same textures by men and
women alike?\(^2\) Or that specially feminine form of luxury
which transports our treasure to foreign and even hostile
lands for the purchase of precious stones?

I know that these things are denounced at dinner
tables and other gatherings, and that some restriction is
called for. But if a law were passed, and penalties pro-
claimed, these same gentlemen would cry out that everything
was being turned upside down; that all outstanding citizens
were being threatened with ruin, all citizens alike with
prosecution. But just as in the body there are ailments of
long standing, come to a head through time, which cannot
be arrested but by severe and violent remedies; so when
the mind has become corrupt and the breeder of corruption,
its distempered and fevered condition can only be assuaged
by remedies as potent as the passions which have inflamed
it. The many laws devised by our forefathers,\(^3\) and those
passed by the Divine Augustus, have but given immunity
to extravagance; the former have passed into oblivion:
the latter—what is more shameful still—have been contemp-
tuously disregarded. For if a man desires what has not
been forbidden, he may be afraid of prohibition; but if he
may with impunity do what has been prohibited, neither
fear nor shame can restrain him longer. Why, then, was
economy the rule of old? Because every one exercised
self-restraint; because we were citizens of a single city;
our very temptations were not the same so long as our

---

1 Pliny mentions a man who in B.C.
8 left 4116 slaves (H. N. xxxiii. 10,
135). Seneca (de Ben. vii. 10, 4) speaks
of 'slaves in one household being more
numerous than a fighting nation: private
mansions covering more ground than
mighty cities.'

2 See the similar discussion in chap.
2, 33, when a decree was passed for-
bidding the use of gold plate, and of
silken apparel for men.

3 Between the Lex Oppia, B.C. 215
(see n. on chap. 33, 4), and the Lex
Iulia, at least seven sumptuary laws
were passed, all equally futile. The
phrase tot quas divus Augustus tulit is
an obvious exaggeration: see n. on
chap. 52, 3.
rule was confined to Italy. Foreign conquest has taught us to squander what belongs to others; civil war to be wasteful even of our own.

And how paltry are the matters of which the Aediles warn us! How insignificant, if the whole field be taken into view! Not one of you recalls the fact that Italy cannot live without foreign aid; that the sustenance of the Roman people is day by day being tossed about at the caprice of wave and storm! For were it not that the provinces came to the help of masters, slaves, and lands, with their resources, would our pleasures-groves and country palaces support us? And yet, Conscript Fathers, this is the charge which the Princeps has to undertake; to neglect it would bring the State to ruin. For all else, we must seek a remedy within ourselves. We senators may be turned to better things by shame; the poor by necessity; the wealthy by satiety. Nevertheless, if any of the magistrates will proffer their services to grapple strenuously and strictly with this evil, I will not only commend them, but will acknowledge that they are relieving me of part of my burdens. But if they propose to denounce men’s failings, and then, having gained credit for that performance, to leave with me the animosities which they provoke: believe me, Conscript Fathers, I am no more anxious to rouse ill-will than they are. I am ready to face fierce resentments, unjust as they often are, incurred in the public service; but I decline, and rightly decline, to face such as are purposeless and fruitless, and present no prospect of usefulness either to you or to me.

55. 1 Upon hearing this letter, the Senate remitted the

1 Rome was as much dependent on foreign countries for her supplies of food as Great Britain is to-day. See the passage about Egypt in ii. 59, 4, ne fame urget Italicum quique eas provinciam ... insedisset, etc. The maintaining a supply of corn for the populace at Rome was a constant anxiety to the Emperors; Tiberius carefully attended to it, as Tacitus admits (iv. 6, 6). In the year A.D. 57 the stock of corn in the city was reduced to 25 days’ supply. See xii. 43, 5: Africum postius (i.e. quam Italiam) et Aegyptum exercemus, navibusque et casibus vita populi Romani permissae est.
matter to the Aediles; and by degrees, the excessive expenditure upon the pleasures of the table, which had been in vogue for a hundred years, from the end of the Actian war down to that which placed Galba upon the throne, fell out of fashion. We may here discuss the causes of this change.

In former times, noble or distinguished families that had wealth were often ruined by the passion for display; for in those days men, might still pay court to the populace, or to allied peoples and princes, and be courted in return. The greater a man's show of riches, the more splendid his house and equipments, the higher stood his name, the larger was the number of his clients. But after the proscriptions, when a great reputation became a fatal possession, people adopted a more prudent style of living. About the same period, many self-made men from municipal towns, from colonies, and even from the provinces, were admitted into the Senate; these brought with them the simple manners of their own homes: and though many of them, through good fortune or their own exertions, became rich in their old age, they still retained their former ideas.

But the great promoter of economy was Vespasian, who was himself a man of the olden type, both in his person and manner of life; thenceforth a

---

1 This is the solitary passage in which Tacitus acknowledges that Rome owed anything to that influx of provincials into the city which came in with the empire; he never even alludes to the fact that the best intellectual and literary circles of Rome in the first century were recruited mainly from the provinces. What a loss to history that his old Roman pride should lead him to ignore so completely this new and recuperative element in Roman life! It is the same with Juvenal; he can appreciate the simple virtues of Italian country life; but when he deals with the foreigner, we hear only of the Graeculus esurien, of households corrupted by incomers, of the Orontes pouring all its foul waters into the Tiber. Persons from Italian towns are said to have been admitted into the senate by Tiberius; Claudius and Vespasian did the same thing on a large scale, and from the provinces also. Suetonius says of Vespasian amplissimos ordines... purgavit supplevique, recensu senatu et equite, summos indiginitiones, et honestissimo quoque italorum ac provincialium alecto (Vesp. 9).
feeling of deference towards the Emperor, and the desire to follow his example, proved more powerful for good than all the penalties and terrors of the law.

6 And perhaps there is a kind of cycle in human affairs, whereby manners have their revolutions like the seasons; it may be, too, that all things were not so much better in the past, and that our own times also have produced many examples of virtuous and cultured lives which deserve the imitation of posterity. Long may such noble rivalry between our ancestors and ourselves continue!

56. 1 Having thus gained credit for moderation by checking the aggression of informers, Tiberius wrote a letter to the Senate requesting them to confer upon Drusus the Tribunitian Power.1 This phrase Augustus had invented2 to indicate the possession of supreme power; for, while avoiding the title of King or Dictator, he desired some designation which should place him on a pinnacle above every other authority.

3 In this power he associated with himself, first Marcus Agrippa, and after his death, Tiberius Nero: thus clearly indicating his successor.3 Confident in his

---

1 See notes on i. 2, 1 and 3. 3. Caesar assumed the powers and the inviolability of the tribunitian office without actually bearing the title (Dio, lxx. 20, 3; Appian, B.C. i. 106). Such an assumption was, in fact, inevitable; for the immense powers of the tribunate, in any hands but those of the sovereign, were incompatible with sovereignty.

2 The reference here is to the year B.C. 23, when the principate was finally established in the form in which it remained for over three centuries. The essence of the change then made, as we have seen, was that Augustus gave up the continuous holding of the consulship, which had been granted for ten years in B.C. 27, and received in its place the imperium proconsulare: any inferiority of that power as compared with the imperium consularis being at once made good to him by special decree of the senate (Dio, lxxi. 32, 5). To make up for the loss of civil dignity implied in the relinquishment of the consulship, and to prevent his government having too military an appearance, Augustus enhanced at the same time the importance of the Tribunicia Potestas in the manner here indicated. The name fitted itself exactly to his persistent policy, enabling him to exercise vast powers under a modest constitutional title. See n. on i. 2, 1.

3 As Furn. points out, Tacitus is thinking of later usage, not yet crystallised under Tiberius. Augustus admitted both Tiberius and Agrippa to the Tribunicia Potestas at a time when his own grandsons were still alive. The motive of Augustus is given more truly in the words quo pluribus munimentis insisteret, i. 3. 5.
own position, and having nothing to fear from Tiberius, he considered that this step would check treasonable hopes in other quarters. Following this example, Tiberius now advanced Drusus to the first place, though as long as Germanicus was alive, he left open the decision between the two. Beginning his letter with a prayer that the Gods might prosper his counsels for the public good, he went on to speak of the young man in moderate terms, without falsehood or exaggeration:—

His son was married, and had three children; he was of the same age as he himself had been when first called upon to fill the same place by the Divine Augustus. There was nothing premature in assuming as a colleague, in labours already familiar to him, one who had been tried for a period of eight years, during which he had quelled mutinies, concluded wars, won a Triumph, and twice filled the Consulship.

The Senate was prepared for the tenor of this message; and was all the more studied in its adulation. And yet they could devise nothing more novel than to vote temples, arches, and such like usual compliments; save that Silanus sought to add honour to the Caesars by belittling the Consulship, and proposed that the dates on all monuments, public or private, should be fixed by inscribing on them, not the names of the Consuls, but of those who held the Tribunitian Power. And Quintus

---

1 An essential characteristic of Augustus: if Tiberius had possessed a similar confidence in himself, he might never have become a tyrant.
2 In his thirty-fifth year, which would put the birth of Drusus in B.C. 13.
3 The eight years cover the time from the accession of Tiberius. Seditiounibus refers to the Pannonian mutiny (i. 24–30). The war in the Illyrian war, ending in the fall of Maroboduus and Cataulda (ii. 44 and 62). Drusus celebrated an ovation (not a triumph) in A.D. 19 (iii. 19, 4); his consulships were in A.D. 14 (i. 55, 1) and A.D. 21 (iii. 31, 1).
4 The proposal may have been premature; but as a matter of fact the emperors before long regularly dated the years of their reign from their tenure of the tribunitian power. The words Trib. Pot. with a numeral after them, to denote the year of tenure, occupy a prominent place on all imperial inscriptions.
Haterius\textsuperscript{1} covered himself with ridicule by moving that the resolutions passed that day should be put up in the Senate-house in letters of gold. He could reap nothing, at his age, but infamy from so loathsome a piece of sycophancy.

58. 1 About this time, the command of Junius Blaesus in Africa was extended; and Servius Maluginensis, who was Flamen Dialis, claimed to have the Province of Asia allotted to him. \textit{It was a common error, he maintained, to suppose that the Flamen of Jupiter could not leave Italy. His rights were the same as those of the Flamens of Mars and Quirinus; if provinces had been allotted to them, why should they be refused to the Flamen of Jupiter?}\textsuperscript{2} There was no law against it; there was nothing in the priestly books against it. The sacred duties of the office had often been performed by ordinary priests, when the Flamen was kept away by illness or public duty. The office itself had been in abeyance for seventy-five\textsuperscript{3} years after the suicide of Cornelius Merula; yet the religious services had never been intermitted. \textit{If a vacancy could remain so long unfilled without detriment to the rites, how much more easy for the occupant to absent himself for one year\textsuperscript{4} of Proconsular command? The rule by which in olden times the Chief Pontiff forbade the Flamen to assume the command of provinces, had been due to personal animosities; but now, by the grace of the Gods, they had a Chief Priest who was Chief of the State}

\textsuperscript{1} For Q. Haterius, see i. 13, 4; ii. 33, 1, and iv. 61, 1, where Tacitus comments on his brilliant but ephemeral rhetoric. He is to be distinguished from D. Haterius Agrippa, mentioned iii. 45, 4.

\textsuperscript{2} The old republican custom was that all three flamen had to remain in Rome to attend to their respective \textit{sacra}. But in chap. 66, 2 we find C. Silanus, who was flamen Martialis, in command of Asia.

\textsuperscript{3} The MS. says seventy-two years; but Cornelius Messala committed suicide B.C. 87, on the return of Marius to Rome, and the post was not filled up by Augustus till B.C. 71.

\textsuperscript{4} Thus the term of office in the senatorial provinces was limited to one year; in the imperatorial provinces, as we have seen, Tiberius kept his legati in office indefinitely, if once approved (i. 80, 2).
also, inaccessible to jealousy, ill-will, and all personal considerations.

This view being opposed on various grounds by the Augur Lentulus and others, it was agreed in the end to await the opinion of the Pontifex Maximus. Postponing, however, for a time, an examination into the rights of the Flamen, Tiberius modified some of the honours bestowed on Drusus in connection with the Tribunitian Power. He objected specially to the resolution as to the golden letters, as unprecedented and un-Roman.

A letter was also read from Drusus; but though couched in modest terms, it was regarded as an act of insolence: What? had things come to this, that a mere stripling, on receiving so great an honour, was not to present himself before the Gods of the City, or appear in the Senate, or even assume the auspices on his native soil? It was a case of war, was it? or of detention in distant lands? when he was, in fact, dallying by the shores and lakes of Campania! Was this the way in which the future ruler of the human race was being trained? were these the first lessons that he was drawing from his father’s counsels? An aged Emperor might, perhaps, shrink from the gaze of his fellow citizens; he might plead fatigue, old age, and a life spent in labour; but in the case of Drusus, what impediment could there be but arrogance?

Yet while Tiberius was thus strengthening for himself the powers of the Principate, he still left to

1 His full name was Cn. Cornelius Lentulus. Seneca describes him as a rich and avaricious dullard; so slow of speech that, miserly as he was, he parted with his words even less readily than with his money (de Ben. ii. 27).
2 Drusus was on the whole a favourite (chap. 37, 2): but Roman society did not spare its criticisms.
3 The force of sed here is that, although the granting of the Trib. Pot. to Drusus was a strengthening of imperial authority, leading Drusus to an act of arrogance, Tiberius nevertheless still entrusted the senate with important affairs.
the Senate some shadow of its ancient rights, referring petitions from the provinces for their consideration. Thus an abuse was becoming rampant in the cities of Greece from the unchecked license of setting up sanctuaries. These sanctuaries were filled with slaves of the lowest class; they extended protection to debtors flying from their creditors, and to persons suspected of capital crimes; and the populace, screening the offences of men under cover of doing service to the Gods, broke out in riots which the authorities were powerless to repress. Accordingly these cities were ordered to send envoys to Rome to make good their claims. Some of them which had assumed the right without authority, relinquished it of their own accord; others relied on traditions, or on services rendered to the Roman people. And a fine sight it was that day to see the Senate inquiring into privileges granted by our forefathers, or into treaties with our allies, or edicts issued by kings who had reigned before the days of Roman rule—nay, even into the worship of the Gods themselves—free, as in the days of old, to cancel or confirm.\footnote{Tacitus cannot contain his pride and satisfaction at the idea of the Senate exercising its high imperial functions as of old.}

First came the people of Ephesus. They affirmed that Diana and Apollo had been born, not in Delos, according to the popular belief, but beside their own river Cenchreus, in the Ortygian grove. It was there that Latona, being big with child, had given birth to those two Divinities, leaning upon an olive-tree which was still standing; the grove had been held sacred ever since by divine command, and Apollo himself had found shelter there, after slaying the Cyclops, from the wrath of Jupiter. At a later period,
Father Liber, when victorious over the Amazons, had spared those who placed themselves as suppliants upon the altar; Hercules had added to the sanctity of the shrine when conquering Lydia; its privileges had been respected under Persian rule, by the Macedonians, and lastly by ourselves.

Next came the people of Magnesia. They relied upon the dispositions made by Lucius Scipio and Lucius Sulla. The former, after defeating Antiochus, the latter, after his victory over Mithradates, had rewarded the loyalty and valour of the Magnesians by granting an inviolable right of asylum to the temple of Diana Leucophryna. Then the people of Aphrodisias and Stratonicia produced two proclamations, one by the Dictator Cæsar, lauding their long devotion to his party; and one, more recent, by the Divine Augustus, in which they were commended for having withstood an invasion of the Parthians, without faltering in their allegiance to Rome. The worship maintained by the Aphrodisians was that of Venus, by the Stratonicians that of Jupiter and Diana of the Crossways.

A claim of still higher antiquity was advanced by the people of Hierocaesarea, on behalf of the

---

1 For the various legends about the Amazons, see Furn. and Smith, Biog. Dict. The foundation of Ephesus, as well as of other cities, was ascribed to them.
2 The usual form of the legend is that the Lydian lady Omphale had captivated Hercules.
3 An inscription has been found giving the boundaries of this asylum as recognised by Augustus, and fixing the date at B.C. 5. See Furn.
4 The town indicated is Magnesia ad Maeandrum, now Manissa, in the SW. of Lydia; to be distinguished from the Magnesia ad Sitylum (or a Sipylo, ii. 47, 4) in the NW. It was at the foot of the hill Sipylus (a spur of Mt. Tmolus) that the Scipios, in B.C. 170, gained their great victory over Antiochus the Great, which opened up the East to the Roman arms.
5 The epithet is said to be derived from an older town, Leucophryna, on the site of Magnesia. Remains of the temple still exist.
6 Aphrodisias was on the borders of Caria and Phrygia. Stratonicia, in Caria, was called after the wife of Antiochus Soter (262 to 262 B.C.).
7 Alluding to the time when the Parthians, under Pacorus and the renegade Q. Labienus, overran the whole province of Asia, B.C. 40. See n. on ii. 1.
8 Hierocaesarea was in Lydia, between Sardis and Smyrna.
Temple of the Persian Diana, dedicated in the reign of Cyrus. They quoted Perpenna, Isauricus, and other Roman generals as having recognised the sanctity not of the temple only, but of the ground for two miles round it. Then followed the Cyprians, claiming for three shrines, the oldest of which was in honour of the Paphian Venus, founded by Aërias; next, one built by his son Amathus to the Amathusan Venus; and lastly, one in honour of Jupiter of Salamis, founded by Teucer when he fled from the wrath of his father Telamón.

63. 1 Embassies were heard from other cities also. Wearied by their number, and finding that there was a contest between rival interests, the Senate remitted it to the Consuls to examine into the rights of each case, to search out any instances of fraud, and to report to them upon the whole subject. In addition to the claims above mentioned, the Consuls reported that they had discovered a right of asylum appertaining to the temple of Aesculapius at Pergamum; the origin of the others they held to be lost in antiquity.

4 Thus the people of Smyrna quoted an oracle of Apollo, bidding them found a temple to Venus Stratonicis; the Tenians, an utterance by the same God, ordering them to dedicate a temple and a statue and of other cities.

1 The Artemis worshipped at Ephesus, Magnesia, and Hieroclesara was the same goddess: Pausanias calls her Amaetis (iii. 16, 8). She was called Persica because of her supposed origin.
2 M. Perpenna or Perperna, cos. B.C. 130, victor and captor of Aristonicus of Pergamum.
3 Probably P. Servilius Isauricus, procos. of Asia B.C. 46.
4 The Venus of Cyprus was probably Astarte.
5 The city of Pergamum, which was situated on the Caicus, in Teuthrania, is described by Pliny as oppidum longe clarissimum Asiae. It was the capital of an independent kingdom of great splendour, carved originally out of the Thracian kingdom of Lysimachus, from B.C. 280 to B.C. 133; in which year the last king, Attalus III., bequeathed it to the Romans. It thenceforth became the capital of the Roman province of Asia.
6 The antiquity of this temple shows that the name can have no connection with the Stratonicia mentioned in the n. to chap. 62, 2. The goddess is supposed to be the Aphrodite Neoptolemos of the Greeks, the Venus Victrix of the Romans.
7 Tenos, one of the Cyclades, now Tino.
to Neptune. The Sardians\textsuperscript{1} referred to more recent 5
times, naming Alexander the Great as the founder of
their asylum, while the Milesians\textsuperscript{3} relied on King
Darius: in these two cases the worship was that of 6
Diana and Apollo respectively. And the Cretans
demanded the right for a statue of the Divine
Augustus.

The Senate issued decrees in terms full of respect, 7
but imposing certain restrictions. Brazen tablets were
to be set up inside the temples as a record of the
rights granted, but such religious privileges were not
to be turned into an excuse for rivalries with other
cities.\textsuperscript{8}

About this time the severe illness of Julia Augusta 64. 1
compelled the Emperor to return hurriedly to Rome;
for if mother and son were no longer in complete
accord, their hatred was at least well concealed. For
not long before, when dedicating a statue to the 2
Divine Augustus near the theatre of Marcellus,\textsuperscript{4} Livia
had inscribed on it the name of Tiberius beneath her
own. Tiberius, it was believed, had taken offence at
this, regarding it as a slight upon his Imperial
Majesty, though he had disguised and suppressed
his resentment. On the occasion of this illness the 3
Senate voted a public supplication, with an exhibi-
tion of Great Games to be held by the Pontiffs, the
Augurs, and the three Sacred Colleges—the \textit{Quindecimviri sacris faciundis},\textsuperscript{5} the \textit{Septemviri Epulones}, and the

\textsuperscript{1} Sardis, the ancient capital of the
Lydian kings and Persian Satraps.
\textsuperscript{3} Miletus, in Caria, at the mouth of
the Maeander, was the most southerly
city of the Ionian confederation. Within
its territory lay the temple of Apollo
at Branchidae, the sculptures of which
are among the most valued treasures of
the British Museum.
\textsuperscript{4} \textit{i.e.} they were not to attempt to
extend the rights of asylum beyond their
original limits, in rivalry with other
cities.
\textsuperscript{5} This theatre was dedicated by
Augustus B.C. \textit{XI}, between the Capitol
and the Tiber. Its picturesque ruins,
partly turned to modern uses, still exist,
close to the Portico of Octavia.
\textsuperscript{6} The \textit{Quindecimviri sacris faciundis},
whose chief charge was that of the
Sodales Augustales.\textsuperscript{1} Lucius Apronius proposed that
the Fetials should be added to the list of presiding
corporations; but this was opposed by Tiberius, who
explained from ancient precedents the privileges of
the several priestly bodies:—The Fetials, he said, had
never enjoyed such a distinction as was proposed; the only
reason for including the Augustan Brotherhood was that
their sacred office was attached to the family on whose
behalf the vows were to be paid.

65. 1 It is no part of my purpose to set forth every
motion that was made in the Senate, but only such as
were either very honourable or specially disgraceful
in their character. For I deem it to be the chief
function of history to rescue merit from oblivion, and
to hold up before evil words and evil deeds the terror
of the reprobation of posterity.\textsuperscript{2} And in those days, so
deep, so foul, was the taint of flattery, that not only
men of leading in the state—men who could only
maintain their illustrious position by subserviency\textsuperscript{3}
—but also the whole body of Consulars, many of
praetorian rank, and even many ordinary\textsuperscript{4} senators,
would rise in the Senate and outbid one other in
making fulsome and extravagant proposals. Tradition
tells how Tiberius, every time that he left
the Senate-house, would exclaim in Greek, O men

\textsuperscript{1} The institution of this priesthood is
recorded i. 54, 1.
\textsuperscript{2} A noble, but somewhat dangerous
principle, even in worthy hands. It
tends to make history a chronicle of the
opinions and prejudices of the historian.
Tacitus is, in fact, as much, if not more,
a moralist than a historian; and it is
mainly his brilliance in that character
which has won for him the admiration
of posterity.

\textsuperscript{3} i.e. there might be some excuse for
flattery on the part of leading statesmen,
who had positions to lose; there was
none in the case of ordinary senators.
Not a very exalted sentiment.
\textsuperscript{4} Originally denoting senators who
voted without speaking, the phrase
pedarii came to denote ordinary senators
who had held no office higher than that
of quaestor, or perhaps aedile. The
present passage shows that they had
liberty to speak if they desired. Perhaps
the difference was that they were not
called upon for their opinion, as were
consuls and senators of higher rank.
meet for slavery! For even he, enemy of public free-
don as he was, felt disgust at such abject and all-
enduring servility.

And from servility they passed by degrees to persecution. Gaius Silanus, Proconsul of Asia, had been accused by the provincials of extortion. Mamercus Scaurus, a Consular, Junius Otho, a Praetor, and Bruttedius Niger, an Aedile, all set upon him at once, charging him with having outraged the Divinity of Augustus, and insulted the Majesty of Tiberius. Mamercus quoted precedents from antiquity: how Lucius Cotta had been accused by Scipio Africanus, Servius Galba by Cato the Censor, and Publius Rutilius by Marcus Scaurus; as if Scipio or Cato ever attacked offences such as these! or that famous Scaurus either, the great-grandfather of this same Mamercus who was now dishonouring his ancestors, and all his house besides, by these degrading services. Junius Otho had long been a schoolmaster; raised to the Senate by the patronage of Sejanus, his unblushing effronteries added a still deeper stain

---

1 Silanus had been procos. of Asia in A.D. 20 and 21.
2 These were all famous trials. The prosecution of Cotta was between B.C. 132 and 129; but Cicero tells us that the high position of the accuser actually told in favour of the accused (pro Mur. 28, 28). Servius Sulpicius Galba, a great orator, was accused by Cato the elder, B.C. 149, for gross cruelty in Spain; his eloquence and appeals ad misericordiam secured him an acquittal (Cic. Brut. 23, 89). P. Rutilius Rufus and M. Aemilius Scaurus were opposing candidates for the consulship in B.C. 116: each accused the other of bribery (Brut. 30, 113).
3 As a matter of fact, the accusations brought by Scipio and Cato were exactly similar to those brought against Silanus now; except that in his case charges of majestas were added. Tacitus ignores all but the latter; though he has to confess (chap. 67, 2) that Silanus was guilty both of cruelty and bribery.
4 Tacitus here names Scaurus, the chosen champion of the Optimates, as a name above all reproach; but Sallust describes him as factious, audus potentiæ honoris divisiarum, ceterum vita sua callide occultans (Jug. 15, 3).
5 The crime of Mamercus consists in his prosecuting Silanus. Nothing else discreditable is recorded of him in the Annals (see i. 15, 4; iii. 31, 5); and when himself accused, he met his fate ut dignum veteribus Aemilibs (vi. 29, 7). Tacitus describes him in that passage as insignis nobilitate et orandis causis, vita probrus; the last words may have no further meaning than infami opera in the present passage.
6 Reading propelluebat with the MS.
to the meanness of his origin. Bruttledius was a man of high and varied culture; had he followed a straight path, he would have attained to the very highest eminence. But a spirit of impatience goaded him on to outstrip first his equals, then his superiors, and at last his own ambition also: a spirit which has been the ruin of many a worthy man who, despising the safe and sure way, has hurried to be great before his time.

67. The host of accusers was now reinforced by Gellius Publicola and Marcus Paconius; the former had been the Quaestor, the latter the Legate, of Silan. That Silan had been guilty of cruelty and venality was not questioned; but he had to face a combination of circumstances which would have been formidable even to an innocent man. Besides a host of senators, he had against him the most eloquent orators of Asia, selected for that very reason; and though himself inexperienced in speaking, he had to conduct his own defence unaided—a task trying to the most practised orators. Then Tiberius never ceased brow-beating him with voice and look, putting to him a multitude of questions, which he was not allowed either to repel or to evade: he had sometimes even to make admissions, lest Tiberius should have asked a question to no purpose.

Even his slaves were bought by the agent of the Treasury that they might be examined under torture; and to prevent his friends from helping him in his

1 Though treated here so contemptuously, this Otho is spoken of with respect by Seneca both as a speaker and as an author (Contr. ii. 1, 33).
2 Bruttledius also was an orator and a writer (Sen. Suas. vi. 21). See Juv. x. 83 and Mayor's n.
3 It was considered particularly disgraceful for a quaestor to accuse his governor, as he stood in confidential relations towards him. See n. on i. 74, 1.
4 As said above, Tacitus treats the main charge lightly, and regards the whole trial as one for majestas. Tiberius' method of personal cross-examination, as here described, must have been highly disconcerting.
5 See n. on ii. 30, 3.
peril, charges of treason were trumped up against them also, so as to secure and compel their silence. He therefore craved an adjournment for a few days; and abandoning his defence, ventured to write to the Emperor, in a tone of mingled entreaty and expostulation.

Anxious to justify by some precedent the punishment which he was preparing for Silanus, Tiberius ordered to be read aloud a letter written by the Divine Augustus in the case of Volesus Messalla, who had been Proconsul of the same province, as well as the sentence passed on him by the Senate. He then asked Lucius Piso for his opinion. After a long preamble upon the Emperor’s clemency, Piso proposed that Silanus should be interdicted from fire and water, and relegated to the island of Gyarus. The others concurred; but Gnaeus Lentulus suggested that the property which had come to Silanus through his mother—she belonged to the family of the Atii—should be set apart from the rest, and allowed to pass to his son. To this Tiberius assented.

Cornelius Dolabella carried his flattery to a point further still. After denouncing Silanus, he proposed that no person of notoriously evil life and reputation, of which the Emperor should be sole judge, should be eligible for the command of a province. The law, he remarked, punished offences after they were committed; but how much more merciful would it be to the offender

---

1 The comparison with Messalla Volesus is peculiarly odious. Volesus was proconsul of Asia in B.C. 12 or 11. Seneca tells how, after beheading 300 men in one day, he walked gloatingly among the corpses, exclaiming in Greek, O rerum regiam! (De ira, ii. 5. 5).
2 Gyarum or Gyaros, one of the lesser Cyclades, between Andros and Keos, now Giura (Juv. i. 73).
3 No satisfactory interpretation of this passage has been offered. I read Atia here, with much doubt, after Halm, instead of the MS. Atia. Atia was the name of the mother of Augustus; if this Atia were of the same family, it might be a reason for treating her property with consideration. Some think Atia might mean of a different character from her son.
4 It was this Dolabella who proposed the absurda adulatio in chap. 47, 4.
—how much better for the allies—to provide against their being committed! But this was opposed by Tiberius:

He had been aware of the reports current about Silanus; but decisions should not be based on rumour. There were many men who in the command of provinces had disappointed the hopes, or the fears, which had been formed in regard to them. Some were stimulated to higher things by having great things to do; others were paralysed by it. The Princeps could not embrace everything within his own knowledge; and it was not expedient that he should be led by the interested views of others. The law was appointed to deal with accomplished facts, because the future was uncertain; hence our forefathers had laid it down that when misdeeds had gone before, punishment should follow after. Let them not upset arrangements wisely devised and approved by experience. Princes had burdens enough as it was; enough of power also. Every increase of prerogative was a weakening of the law; the Imperial authority should not be invoked so long as recourse to the laws was open.

Popular sentiments like these were all the more acceptable that they were seldom heard from Tiberius. And knowing well, as he did, how to be merciful when not moved by personal resentment, he added that Gyarus was a desert and uninhabited island; out of consideration for the Junian family, and for one who had been a member of their own order, let them permit Silanus to retire to Cythus instead.

A request to that effect, he added, had been preferred by

---

1 These excellent constitutional sentiments seem scarcely appropriate in the mouth of Tiberius. Tacitus appears to be unable to resist the temptation of ventilating his own ideas.

2 Cythus, now Thermia: a larger island, near Gyaros.

3 Tiberius shows a similar leniency in ii. 50, 4; iii. 18, 1; and in iv. 31, 1, where Tacitus admits that he was gnarum meliorum, et quae fama clementiam sequeretur.
Torquata, the sister of Silanus, a Vestal of truly primitive purity. The proposal was assented to without discussion.

A hearing was then given to the people of Cyrene, who charged Caesius Cordus with extortion. Ancharius Priscus was prosecutor, and Cordus was found guilty. Next, Lucius Ennius, a Roman knight, was accused of high treason because he had used a statue of the Emperor as ordinary silver. Tiberius forbade the prosecution; but Ateius Capito, by way of shewing his independence, protested openly. The right to decide on such a case, he argued, ought not to be taken out of the hands of the Senate; an offence so serious should not be allowed to go unpunished. Forbearing as the Emperor might be in regard to his own private wrongs, he should not be indulgent to an offence committed against the State. But Tiberius saw through the real meaning of such language, and persisted in his veto. The infamy of Capito was all the more notable, that being himself a jurist, skilled in all law human and divine, he had brought disgrace upon his own personal accomplishments as well as on his high position in the State.

A religious difficulty now presented itself: in what temple was to be placed the offering for the recovery of Augusta which the Knights of Rome had vowed to Fortuna Equestris? There were many temples of Fortuna in Rome; but none with that particular

---

1 This prosecution has been already mentioned under the previous year (chap. 38, 7). It would appear that a whole year had been spent in getting up the case.

2 This passage makes it clear that by the exercise of his right of tribunitian veto the præfectus could extend pardon to accused persons. See the case of Appuleia, ii. 50, 4.

3 As in duty bound, Tacitus has the greatest veneration for juridical science, in spite of his wholesale theoretical denunciation of Roman laws and law in general (chaps. 26-27). Noble birth, coupled with eminence as a jurist, constitute in his eyes the highest title to fame, and add an additional discredit to any departure from virtue; yet in many passages he mentions a man’s high birth as a set-off against moral delinquencies.
designation. 1 It was discovered, however, that there was one with that title at Antium; 2 and as it was held that all divine services, temples, and images of Gods in Italian towns were under the jurisdiction and headship of Rome, the offering was set up in that city.

Religious questions having thus been mooted, Tiberius produced his decision in the case of the Flamen Dialis, postponed some time before. The decision was adverse to the claims of Servius Maluginensis, the Emperor quoting a priestly ordinance to the effect that if at any time the Flamen should fall sick, the Pontifex Maximus might give him leave of absence for a period exceeding two nights, provided always it was not on days of public sacrifice, or oftener than twice in any one year. These regulations, laid down in the Principate of Augustus, clearly showed that absence for a whole year, with the command of a Province, could not be granted. The precedent also of the Pontifex Maximus Lucius Metellus was adduced, who had refused leave of absence to the Flamen Aulus Postumius. 3 The government of Asia was therefore assigned to the Consular who came next after Maluginensis.

72. 1 About this same time Lepidus 4 asked permission of the Senate to repair and beautify at his own expense the Basilica of Paulus, 5 the monument of the Aemilian

---

1 Tacitus speaks as if such a title had never existed; but a temple under that name had been dedicated at Rome, B.C. 173, by Q. Fulvius Flaccus (Liv. xl. 40, 10). It was still in existence in B.C. 92, and apparently in the time of Vitruvius also, B.C. 16 (Vit. iii. 3, 2). It must have been destroyed subsequently.

2 Antium was the great seat of the worship of Fortune: O Diva gratum quae regis Antium (Hor. Od. i. 35, 1).

3 The occurrence was in B.C. 242; but Aulus Postumius was Flamen Martialis, not Flamen Dialis.

4 Doubtless Marcus Lepidus; see chap. 32, 2.

5 The Basilica Pauli was a splendid building on the E. side of the Forum, built or rather founded by L. Aemilius Paulus, cos. B.C. 50, grandfather of the Marcus Lepidus of this chapter. It was dedicated B.C. 34, and had already been restored after a fire by Augustus,
house. For public munificence was still the fashion; and Augustus had offered no objection when Taurus, Philippus and Balbus used the spoils they had won in war, or their own superabundant means, to beautify the city, and so commend themselves to posterity. Following that example, though possessed of but slender means, Lepidus now restored the great memorial of his family. And when the theatre of Pompeius was accidentally burned down, the Emperor undertook to rebuild it himself, preserving, however, the name of Pompeius; for though the Pompeian family was not extinct, there was no member of it wealthy enough to carry out the work. He took occasion at the same time to commend Sejanus, to whose vigilance and exertions, he affirmed, it was due that the loss from this great fire had been confined to a single building. So the Senate voted him a statue to be set up in the theatre; and when not long afterwards the Emperor bestowed triumphal ornaments on his uncle Junius Blaesus, Proconsul of Africa, he

---

254 ANNALS OF TACITUS. [A.D. 22.

This is an under-statement: Suetonius says of Augustus "principis viros saepe hortatus est ut pro facultate quisque monumentis vel novis vel refactis et excultis urbsm adornarent" (Oct. 29).

Statilius Taurus (see vi. 11, 5) built in the Campus Martius the first amphitheatre of stone, B.C. 30; L. Marcilius Philippus (cos. suf. B.C. 38) built or restored an aedes Herculis Musarum (Ov. Fast. vi. 807); and L. Cornelius Balbus a theatre in the Campus Martius near the river, B.C. 19.

Both the father and grandfather of Lepidus had been proscribed by the triumvirs; hence the loss of the family fortunes.

The theatre of Pompey, built in B.C. 55 to the W. of the Circus Flaminius in the Campus Martius, was the first theatre in Rome built of stone. A few fragments of the theatre have been discovered in the cellars of the Palazzo Pio. Attached to the theatre was the Porticus Pompeii, built to shelter the spectators in bad weather; and the celebrated Curia Pompeii, in which the senate met, and which was the scene of Caesar's assassination. The restoration of this theatre, and the building of the temple to Augustus, are mentioned by Tacitus as the only two public works executed by Tiberius (vi. 45. 3).

Only the stage was destroyed, the rest being of stone.

When this statue was set up, Cremutius Cordus remarked that "Now indeed the theatre was destroyed," Nunc vero theatrum perire (Sen. Cons. ad Marciam, 22, 4). The cultivated society of Rome knew how to temper despotism by epigram, and we cannot marvel if they occasionally suffered for it. See iv. 34, 1.

For the career of Junius Blaesus, see Nipp. on i. 16.
declared that he did this out of compliment to the nephew. Nevertheless the services of Blaesus had well earned the distinction.

73. 1 For though Tacfarinas had often been repulsed, he had always recruited his forces from the interior; and he at last reached such a pitch of insolence as to send envoys to Tiberius, demanding a settlement for himself and his army, and threatening an interminable war as the alternative. Never, they say, was Tiberius more incensed: what an insult to himself and to the Roman people that a freebooter and deserter should conduct himself as a belligerent! Even Spartacus, when he had destroyed consular armies, and was spreading fire through Italy with impunity, had never been granted a surrender on conditions; though the wars with Sertorius and Mithradates were at that time shaking the State to its foundations. How much less should a robber like Tacfarinas, at the moment of Rome's highest splendour, be bought off by a treaty of peace and a grant of territory! He therefore instructed Blaesus to induce the followers of Tacfarinas to lay down their arms by promises of pardon, and to use every possible means to secure the person of their leader. The hope of pardon brought in many; and before long, Tacfarinas was encountered by tactics similar to his own.

74. 1 For having a force inferior in point of numbers, but better fitted for plundering, his system was to send out several parties at a time, to avoid
engagements, and seek opportunity for ambuscades. To meet these tactics, Blaesus organised three columns, advancing on three different lines. The Legate, Cornelius Scipio, was in command at a point where a plundering party was to attack the people of Leptis, having the Garamantes behind them as a refuge; on the other side, a separate force, under the younger Blaesus, was to save the townships of Cirta from being raided with impunity. Midway between the two was the General himself, at the head of a picked body of troops. Establishing forts and block-houses in suitable spots, he hemmed in the enemy, and was ready to meet them everywhere: whatever the direction in which they turned, they found part of the Roman forces, in front, in flank, and not unfrequently in rear also. By these tactics many were slain or taken prisoners.

Then Blaesus divided his three columns into a number of smaller bodies, putting each under the command of a centurion of tried valour; and instead of withdrawing his troops when the summer season was over, as had been the custom heretofore, or laying them up in the winter quarters of the old province, he set up a chain of forts along the frontier of the disturbed country, garrisoning them with light-armed troops familiar with the desert. He thus drove Tacfarinas before him from one village to another, till at last he captured his brother. Thereupon he retired: too soon, however, for the interests

1 Cornelius Scipio was legatus of the 9th legion (Hispana), which had marched from Pannonia to reinforce Africa (chap. 9, 1). He was cos. A.D. 24 or 29.

2 The town of Leptis Minor, between Thapsus and Hadrumentum.

3 Supposed to have occupied the modern Fezzan, further to the E.

4 Cirta, now Constantine, capital of the French province of Algiers, about fifty miles from the sea. The province of Africa at this time comprised the whole of the modern Tunis, and a great part of Tripoli and Algeria. Mauretania, to the W., was at this time independent, but was constituted a separate province in A.D. 40.
of the allies, since enough of the enemy were left to renew the war.

Tiberius, nevertheless, regarding the campaign as ended, granted to Blaesus the honour of being saluted as 'Imperator'\(^1\) by his troops, in accordance with the old custom whereby that title was conferred by acclamation upon a successful general in the joy and enthusiasm of victory. The appellation might be borne by several persons at one time, no one of them enjoying any precedence over the others; it had been granted on several occasions by Augustus: and now, for the last time, it was bestowed on Blaesus by Tiberius.

75. 1 Two men of note died in this year—Asinius Saloninus\(^2\) and Capito Ateius. The former was distinguished as the grandson of Marcus Agrippa and Asinius Pollio, as the brother of Drusus, and as the intended husband of one of the Emperor's grand-daughters.\(^3\) Of Capito,\(^4\) I have already spoken. Though his grandfather was only one of Sulla's centurions, and his father of no more than praetorian rank,\(^5\) he attained to a leading position in the State in consequence of his acquirements as a jurist. Augustus had advanced him to the Consulship before the normal age, that the holding of that dignity might give him precedence over Labeo Antistius, a distinguished lawyer like himself. For those two ornaments of the law were both of them products of that generation.\(^6\)

---

\(^1\) See n. on i. 9, 2. With the exception of this case, no instance is recorded after B.C. 27 of the title being granted to any but members of the imperial family.
\(^2\) Son of Asinius Gallus (i. 12, 6) and Vipsania, the first wife of Tiberius. He was thus half-brother to Drusus.
\(^3\) I.e. of one of the daughters of Germanicus.
\(^4\) See chap. 70, 2; also i. 76, 3: 79, 1.
\(^5\) His humble birth is mentioned as a set-off against his high qualifications as a lawyer.
\(^6\) Both were great lawyers, founders of two schools of jurisprudence, which under the name of Sabinius and Procullus opposed each other all through the imperial epoch; the former
Labeo was the more famous of the two, because of his uncompromising independence; while Capito's deferential demeanour secured for him the favour of our rulers. The former, never rising above the Praetorship, gained in reputation from the slight; the latter, having attained the Consulship, excited envy and the hatred which attends it.

In this year—the sixty-fourth after the battle of Philippi—Junia, the niece of Cato, the wife of Gaius Cassius, the sister of Marcus Brutus, breathed her last. Her will was the subject of much popular talk; for though she died wealthy, and made honourable mention of nearly all the nobility, she never named the Emperor. Tiberius took this in good part; nor did he forbid the delivery of a funeral oration from the Rostra, or the performance of other funeral ceremonies in her honour. The images of twenty illustrious families were borne before her; those of the Manlii, the Quinctii, and other names as noble: but conspicuous above them all were those of Cassius and Brutus, because they were nowhere to be seen.

holding more to tradition, the latter more to scientific development (Dig. l. 2, 2, 47).

1 An instance of his flattery in the guise of independence is given in chap. 70, 2.

2 The mother of this Junia (also called Tertia or Tertulla) was Servilla, half-sister of Cato of Utica, and mother of M. Brutus, the assassin of Caesar, by her first marriage. She was mother of Junia by her second marriage, with D. Junius Silanus, cos. B.C. 62, of whom we hear so much in Cicero’s speech pro Murena.

8 The word familia is here used for gens, as in li. 52, 8.

4 A Manlius had been adopted into the family of the Junii Silani in the second century B.C. Strict ancestry was not demanded in such cases; thus we hear that the images of the Julii followed in the funeral of the elder Drusus (chap. 5, 2), though he could claim no relationship with that house.
BOOK IV.

A.D. 23. CONSULS C. ASINIUS POLLIO AND
C. ANTISTIUS VETUS.

I. 1 And now for more than eight years Tiberius had ruled over a tranquil State and a prosperous household—for he counted the death of Germanicus as part of his prosperity—when Fortune suddenly began to work confusion, and Tiberius took to cruel courses, or lent himself to the cruelties of others. This change had its cause and origin in Aelius Sejanus,1 Commander of the Praetorian Cohorts, of whose overweening influence I have already spoken; I will now set forth the character and extraction of the man, and relate the daring scheme by which he sought to seize the sovereignty.

2 Born at Vulsinii,2 son of a Roman knight3 called Seius Strabo,4 Sejanus had attached himself in early

1 Sejanus has already been mentioned by Tacitus in four passages. He accompanied Drusus as an adviser in his mission to the mutined army in Pannonia (i. 24, 3), being then magna apud Tiberium auctoritate. In i. 69, 7 we find him poisoning the mind of Tiberius against Agrippina, perit ipse Tiberi odium in longum iacens. In iii. 20, 5 a reported marriage of a son of Claudius to a daughter of Sejanus disturbs the mind of Rome; and in iii. 35, 2 the influence of Sejanus secures the governorship of Africa to his uncle Junius Blaeus.
2 Hence Juvenal calls him "a Tuscan" (x. 74).
3 Velleius calls Sejanus princeps equestris ordinis (ii. 127, 3), and ascribes to him consular brothers, cousins, and uncles. One of his brothers, Seius Tubero, was a legatus in the German campaign (ii. 20, 1), and cos. suf. A.D. 18. Thus Sejanus was by no means the upstart that Tacitus would make him out to be; his position was not unlike that of Maecenas, very different from that of the freedmen favourites of later emperors.
4 Seius Strabo, as commander of the Praetorian Guards, took the oath of allegiance to Tiberius next after the consuls (i. 7, 3). The termination of the name Sejanus shows that he had been adopted from the gens Aelius into the gens Seia—perhaps by Aelius Gallus, prefect of Egypt B.C. 24. The son of Sejanus apparently bore the same name Aelius (v. 8, 1).
youth to Gaius Caesar, the grandson of Augustus; rumour had it that he had sold his person to the wealthy voluptuary Apicius. In course of time, he acquired an ascendancy over Tiberius so complete, that he brought that monarch, impenetrable as he was to all the world beside, to be open and unguarded to him alone: not so much through any cunning of his own—for in that quality he was himself outmatched—as from the Divine wrath against the Roman Commonwealth, on which he brought disaster alike in his triumph and in his fall. Daring in spirit, incapable of fatigue, as ready to incriminate others as to screen himself, as obsequious as he was insolent, beneath an exterior of studied modesty he concealed a boundless ambition, to which he would minister sometimes by extravagance and debauch, more often by energy and vigilance—qualities that are no less baneful when simulated to pave the way to power.

Sejanus enhanced the importance of the Praetorian Command, which had been of no great account before his time, by concentrating the cohorts, scattered hitherto throughout the city, into a single camp; they would thus receive their orders as one body, while the sight of their own strength and numbers would give confidence to the soldiers, and over-awe the rest of the citizens.1 His professed reasons were, that the men were apt to get out of hand when not kept together; they would act with more effect

---

1 In accordance with his usual tactful policy, Augustus had kept the military basis of his rule as much out of sight as possible, quartering most of the praetorian cohorts outside Rome in neighbouring towns. The momentous step taken by Tiberius in quartering the guards within the city is thus characterized by Gibbon, vol. i. p. 169: 'But after fifty years of peace and servitude, Tiberius ventured on a decisive measure, which for ever rivetted the fetters of his country. Under the fair pretences of relieving Italy from the heavy burden of military quarters, and of introducing a stricter discipline among the guards, he assembled them at Rome, in a permanent camp, which was fortified with skilful care, and placed on a commanding situation.'
in an emergency if they acted together; and stricter discipline could be maintained in a camp at some distance from the temptations of the city. No sooner was the camp finished, than Sejanus began gradually to insinuate himself into the good graces of the soldiers, mixing with them, and addressing them by name. He chose his own Tribunes and centurions. ¹

He intrigued also for influence with the Senate, obtaining distinctions and provincial commands for his own creatures; ² while Tiberius looked so indulgently on his proceedings that he would often commend him as his partner in toil, not only in private talk, but also in the Senate, and before the people, and permitted his statues to be honoured in the theatres, in the public squares, and at the head quarters of the legions.

But there were obstacles in the way of his ambition. There was no lack of heirs in the Imperial family; there was a young son, ³ and grown-up grandsons. To use violence against so many all at once, was hazardous; were subtler methods employed, there must needs be intervals between one crime and another. In the end, he chose the more occult way, and determined to begin with Drusus, with whom he had a special reason for being incensed at that moment. For in the course of an altercation between the two, Drusus, who was hot-tempered, ⁴ and could

¹ Apparently these appointments had hitherto been made by the emperor himself.
² i.e. he sought to establish his influence in the senate by making it felt that he was the channel to promotion. The servile court paid to him by senators is finely described below (chap. 74, 6 and 7). See the case of Blaesus (iii. 35. 3).
³ Drusus, son of Tiberius, who had twin sons of his own. Of the sons of Germanicus, Nero and Drusus were now seventeen and ten years old respectively; Gaius, the future emperor, was in his eleventh year.
⁴ Other passages describing Drusus are as follows: Promptum ad asperiora ingenium Druso erat (i. 99, 4); Drusus praebuit (cedendis gladiatoriis) quamquam vili sanguine nimis gaudens (i. 76, 5); incallidus aliqvi et facilis inventa (iii. 8, 4). A taste for building and conviviality is attributed to him.
brook no equal, had lifted his hand against Sejanus. Sejanus had resisted: whereupon Drusus struck him in the face.

After weighing every plan, the best seemed to be to have recourse to Livia,¹ the wife of Drusus and sister of Germanicus, who although ungainly in early life had grown up to be a very beautiful woman. Professing an ardent passion for her person, Sejanus won her over to be his mistress; and having thus succeeded in the first guilty step—for the woman who has lost her honour can refuse nothing—he incited her to the murder of her husband, holding out the prospect of marriage with himself, and of sharing with him the Imperial power. And so this lady—the niece² of Augustus, the daughter-in-law of Tiberius, who had borne children to Drusus himself—was ready to besmirch herself, her ancestors, and her descendants, for the sake of a provincial paramour, and to exchange an honourable and assured present for a shameful and uncertain future.

The pair took into their confidence Eudemus, the friend and physician of Livia, who under cover of his profession assisted often at their private interviews; and then, lest his mistress should mistrust him, Sejanus divorced his wife Apicata, who had borne three children to him. But the very greatness of the enterprise bred doubts and delays, and at times conflicting counsels also.

Meanwhile, at the beginning of the year, Drusus, one of the children of Germanicus, assumed the manly

---

¹ Suetonius and Dio call her *Livilla.*
² Great-niece; this Livia’s mother, Antonia, was daughter of Octavia, the sister of Augustus.
gown; and the Senate repeated for him the honours which they had voted to his brother Nero. The Emperor added some words of his own, commending his son warmly for the fatherly kindness he had shewn to his brother’s children. For though it be hard to find love in high places, Drusus was reputed to be kindly, or at least not ill-disposed, to the young men.

Tiberius now revived the project, so often and so insincerely professed, of making an expedition into the provinces; giving as his reasons the large number of time-expired soldiers, and the necessity of filling their places by levies. Volunteers, he declared, were not forthcoming; nor were such as offered themselves men of the same stamp, or so well behaved, as formerly, being for the most part men without means, and with no settled place of abode. He then rapidly ran over the number of the legions, and the Provinces which they guarded; an example which I think it well to follow, so as to show what were the Roman forces in arms at that time; what kings were allied to us; and how much narrower the limits of the Empire then were than they are now.¹

5. 1 Italy was guarded by two fleets, one on either sea; the one stationed at Misenum, the other at Ravenna.² The near coast of Gaul was defended by war-ships captured at the battle of Actium, and sent by Augustus, fully manned, to Forum Julii.³ But the

¹ In the time of Trajan, when Tacitus wrote, the empire extended to the head of the Persian gulf (ii. 61, 2), and included the vast province of Dacia, north of the Danube.
² On this chapter, which is the locus classicus on the distribution of the military and naval forces of Rome during the early empire, see Furn., Introd. vii. pp. 103, foll. The chapter affords a remarkable instance of the care with which Tacitus varies his expressions. It contains a mere catalogue of the provinces, and of the armies by which they were occupied; yet in detailing these similar facts he so varies his language as never to use the same form of expression twice over.
³ The modern Fréjus.
main strength of the Empire was on the Rhine, where lay an army of eight legions, a common bulwark against Gaul and Germany. The two Provinces of Spain, but recently subdued, were held by three legions. Mauretania had been given to King Juba by the Roman people; the rest of Africa was garrisoned by two legions, and Egypt by a like number. From that point onwards, the vast sweep of country from the borders of Syria to the River Euphrates was kept down by four legions; while the Iberian, Albanian and other Princes on the frontier were protected against foreign aggression by our name. Thrace was under Rhometalaces and the sons of Cotys. The banks of the Danube were occupied by four legions, two stationed in Pannonia, two in Moesia; a like number were in

---

1 As we have already seen, there were two so-called provinces of Germany, the Upper and the Lower, including territory on each side of the Rhine. Each consisted largely of German tribes moved to the left bank of the river. Each was held by an army of four legions. The headquarters of Lower Germany were at Colonnia Agrippinensis (Cologne): of Upper Germany at Moguntiacum (Mayence). The boundary between them was the river Nava (Naye); or perhaps the Moselle. The boundary between the Upper Rhine and Upper Danube was marked by a limes, built at a later period, from the Main near Oldenburg to Ratisbon on the Danube. For the course of this limes, see the elaborate reports in the Limes-Blatt, and the Berichten des Reichs-Limes Commission, now being published at Trèves (German Trier).

2 Spain was divided into three provinces: Baetica, or Further Spain (senatorial), with Corduba for capital; Lusitania (imperial) to the West, including most of Portugal, with the seat of government at Emerita (Merida); and Tarraconensia or Higher Spain (imperial), with Tarragona as its capital. In reference to the final reduction of the Cantabrians by Agrippa, B.C. 19 (Hor. Od. iii. 8, 21), Livy speaks of Spain as prima provinciarum initia, postremo omnium perdomia (xxviii. 12). Yet Southern Spain had been organised on a Latin model long before Gaul. See Mommsen, 'Roman Provinces,' Vol. i. p. 86.

4 This was a son of the king Juba defeated by Caesar at Thapsus B.C. 46. He had been restored to Numidia after B.C. 31, and was transferred by Augustus to Mauretania, with part of Numidia added, in B.C. 25.

5 These two legions were stationed at Alexandria. Under Augustus there had been three legions in Africa (Strabo, xvii. 1, 12).

6 The three territories of Colchis, Iberia, and Albania formed a belt extending from the Euxine Sea to the Caspian, between the main chain of the Caucasus to the N. and Armenia to the S., a district corresponding more or less to modern Georgia and Daghestan.

7 Pannonia was reduced to a province after the victories of Tiberius, A.D. 7–9. It was bounded on the E. and N. by the Danube, on the S. by the Save, on the W. by Noricum and the Mons Cetius. It thus included all the eastern states of Austria and almost the whole of Hungary. The occupying force was probably stationed, not on the Danube, but on the Drave—near the scene of the national rising A.D. 6–9. In A.D. 50 the Governor of Pannonia is specially ordered to place his legion and auxiliary forces on the Danube (xii. 29, 2), as if it were a new thing.

8 Moesia extended from Pannonia
Delmatia,\textsuperscript{1} whence they could not only act in support of the latter army, but were also within easy reach of Italy, in case of a sudden call for help from that quarter. Yet the City had a garrison of its own, consisting of three Urban Cohorts and the ten Cohorts of Praetorian Guards; a force recruited mainly from Etruria and Umbria, or from old Latium and the original Roman Colonies.\textsuperscript{2} At suitable points throughout the Provinces were stationed the allied fleets, as well as the auxiliary horse and foot, making up a total strength little inferior to our own;\textsuperscript{3} but of these no certain details can be given, as they moved from place to place according to the necessities of the moment, and were now increased, now reduced, in number.

6. It may be convenient that I should here review the other parts of the administration, and explain on what methods it was conducted up to that time; since it eastwards to the Black Sea, having the Danube for its northern, Mt. Haemus for its southern, boundary. It corresponded to modern Servia and Bulgaria. Delmatia (or Dalmatia) corresponded pretty nearly to the modern Dalmatia, Bosnia, Herzegovina, and Montenegro.\textsuperscript{4} Though not a frontier province, Delmatia had been garrisoned by two legions since the general rising of Illyricum (of which Delmatia was the southern province) in A.D. 69; these were the 7th and the 11th. According to Josephus, the garrison had been reduced to one legion in A.D. 66; under Vespasian it was withdrawn altogether. The capital of Delmatia was Salona.

\textsuperscript{1} This restriction as to recruiting was not long maintained. An inscription of the year A.D. 46 mentions natives of Tridentum as serving in the force (Rushforth, p. 103); and even provincials were admitted from the time of the reign of Domitian. The nine Praetorian Cohorts and the three Urban Cohorts were so far treated as one force that they were numbered consecutively, the Praetorian Cohorts being numbered from 1 to 9, the Urban from 10 to 12. The number of Praetorian Cohorts was raised by Vitellius to 16 in A.D. 69; and we hear of a vast as early as the reign of Nero (Rushforth, p. 94). It was Augustus who first put the Praetorians on a separate footing, separately recruited. Under the Triumvirate they had been chosen from the legions.\textsuperscript{2} The list here given makes up a total of twenty-five legions. Augustus at one time had as many as twenty-six legions under arms; but three were destroyed with Varus, and only two (the 21st and 23rd) were raised in their place. Reckoning the whole legion with its complement of allied forces at ten thousand men, this would make a standing force of two hundred and fifty thousand men. Furn. calculates that we may add one hundred thousand more for the home troops, the naval and other detached forces, bringing out three hundred and fifty thousand men as the ‘total naval and military force of the civilised world’ under the early empire (Intro. p. 109). We are accustomed to think of Rome as a great military power; but these numbers are insignificant in comparison with modern armaments.
was in this year that the change for the worse in the government of Tiberius set in. First, then, all public business, and the most important private business also, was transacted in the Senate. Its leaders had liberty of debate, and the Emperor himself checked any lapses into sycophancy. In bestowing public offices, he paid regard to a man's birth, his distinction in war, or his eminence in civil pursuits, making it plain that no better person could have been appointed. The Consuls, the Praetors, enjoyed the dignity of their offices; the authority of the lesser magistrates was sustained; and the laws, except in cases of High Treason, were well administered. The public taxes, both in corn and money, as well as the rest of the public revenue, were managed by companies of Roman knights: his own affairs Tiberius entrusted to persons of the most approved character, some of them known to him only by reputation; once appointed, they would be kept on in office indefinitely, most of them continuing in the same employments till old age. The populace, no doubt, suffered from the high price of food, but for this the Emperor was not to blame; he did everything that money and

---

1. The frumenta here mentioned were the supplies of grain exacted from the provinces for the support of the army and state officials. This was sometimes exacted as a tax, sometimes paid for by the State. The pecuniae vectigales included all ordinary sources of revenue as distinct from the tributum (see n. on § 7), such as tithe-rent for public lands (decumae), products of mines, forests, etc., customs, transit dues, bridge tolls (portoria), etc.

2. These were the 'companies' of Roman knights, each under a manager or director called mancelps, who farmed certain of the taxes and other sources of Roman revenue in the provinces. The price to be paid was fixed by auction; according to Festus, p. 151, the mancelps was so called because he held up his hand in making a bid. See Rushforth, p. 109.

3. The words res suas seem to refer not to the imperial fiscus, of which the emperor was practically the trustee for imperial purposes, not the owner; but to private property, analogous to crown lands, belonging to the emperor for his own private use. Cp. chap. 15, 3, non se ius nisi in servitio et pecunias familarius dedisset. The agent who looked after such private estate was called procurator patrimonii.

4. This refers to the officer in each province called procurator fisci, who managed the public revenues of the emperor. In imperatorial provinces he was a very important officer; in smaller provinces he had almost the powers of a governor. Pontius Pilate was procurator of Judaea.
forethought could do to provide against bad seasons and stormy seas. He took care that the provincials should not be disturbed by new imposts, and that the avarice and cruelty of magistrates should not add to the burden of the old ones.\footnote{1} Corporal punishment and confiscations were unknown. The Emperor's own estates in Italy were few, his slaves modest in demeanour, his retinue of freed-men small;\footnote{2} if he had disputes with private citizens, they were decided in the Courts of Law.\footnote{8}

7. 1

Such was the government of Tiberius, not tempered indeed with any graciousness—for his manner was always rough, and often terrifying—but such it continued to be till all was changed by the death of Drusus.\footnote{4} For in the early days of his ascendancy, and

\footnote{1} Under the empire, the system of farming out the public revenues to companies of equites (the capitalist class), which lent itself so readily to extortion under the republic, was much modified, and subjected to central supervision. The grossest abuses had arisen in the collection of the decumae, or tithes of the produce of the land: a form of taxation which the Romans had found existing, and continued, in Sicily, Sardinia, and Asia (Greenidge, p. 320). This system was abolished by Caesar in Asia, and probably elsewhere, in B.C. 48. Under the empire the main portion of the revenue was drawn from direct taxes, either a land-tax (tributum soli) or a personal tax (tributum capita). These direct taxes were collected by the quaestor in senatorial provinces, in imperial provinces by the procurator. The indirect taxes (vectigalia) were still leased to companies of knights: hence these are called societates vectigalium (xiii. 50, 3).

\footnote{2} Under Tiberius and the early emperors, the members of the imperial household, even the imperial procurators, whose duties were so important, were mainly freedmen; the emperors, no doubt, found that it was necessary for them to select for their own personal service men outside the class whose ambitions lay in a public career. The freedman Licinius was procurator of Gaul under Augustus, and amassed great wealth; Pallas (the brother of Felix, procurator of Judæa) and Narcissus, who made immense fortunes, were both freedmen of Claudius, in whose reign the power of the freedmen reached its height. Tacitus says of the influence of Pallas, velut arbitrium regni agerat (Ann. xiii. 14, 1). But this system was gradually changed for one under which a sort of civil service was instituted, the higher ranks of which were filled by equites. Juvenal pours forth all his wrath upon these upstart freedmen (Sat. i. 109; xiv. 91, 329).

\footnote{8} A fairer picture of just paternal government could scarcely be drawn than that given in this chapter. That Tiberius knew so well what good government meant adds to the bitterness of the indictment against him; he was sinning against the light. See chap. 31, 2: Neque enim suertia pecudatur. Dio liv. 7, and 13 gives a similar picture of the good period of the reign of Tiberius.

\footnote{4} The turning-point in the reign of Tiberius was undoubtedly, as here stated, the death of Drusus, the circumstances of which were such as to embitter beyond remedy a naturally proud and distrustful nature like that of Tiberius. Tacitus hardly does justice to the terrible revulsion of feeling which must have been caused in that solitary
so long as Drusus was alive,\(^1\) Sejanus wished to gain a character for good counsels; he had to fear also the vengeance of one who made no secret of his hatred, and was for ever complaining that the Emperor should be calling in another to assist in the government when he had a son of his own:—

How long, he asked, would it be before Sejanus were styled a colleague? The path of ambition was perilous at the outset; once entered upon, parties and instruments were never wanting. A camp had been built at the prefect's bidding; the troops had been given into his hand; his statue was to be seen in the monument of Gnaeus Pompeius. He and the Drusi would soon be having grandsons in common:\(^2\) they would then have to appeal to his moderation, and entreat him not to ask for more. Drusus would often talk thus, and before many listeners; and all his secrets were betrayed through his corrupted wife.

Perceiving that no time was to be lost, Sejanus selected a slow-working poison which should produce the symptoms of an ordinary illness. It was administered to Drusus by the hand of the eunuch Spado, as came out eight years afterwards. During all the duration of the illness, and even in the interval between the death and the burial, Tiberius appeared in the Senate as usual; whether because he was not alarmed, or that he desired to make show of his strength of mind. When the Consuls, in sign of mourning, took their seats upon the ordinary benches, it removed a watchful enemy out of the path of Sejanus, and enabled him to prosecute his further schemes undisturbed. See above on chap. 6, 1. It must be confessed, however, that there is no evidence that Tiberius treated his son with any confidence (see Dio lvii. 13, 1 and 2).

\(^1\) All that Tacitus seems to see in the death of Drusus, as affecting the life and government of Tiberius, is that

\(^2\) Referring to the project of marriage mentioned iii. 29, 5, where see n.
he bade them not forget their office and their rank; and when the assembly burst into tears, he mastered his emotion, and delivered a set speech to restore their fortitude.

He was well aware, he said, that he might be censured for presenting himself to the gaze of the Senate in the first moments of his affliction. Most men, in times of grief, could scarcely endure the consoling words of kinsmen, or look upon the light of day. Such men were not to be condemned for weakness; but for his own part, he had sought solace of a robuster sort by throwing himself into public affairs.

After that, he referred, in feeling terms, to the great age of Augusta, to the youth of his grandsons, and to his own declining years; and then asked that the children of Germanicus—his one comfort in his present trouble—should be brought in. The Consuls went out, encouraged the lads with kind words, and placed them before Tiberius. Taking them by the hand, he thus addressed the Senate:

When these youths lost their father, I committed them to their uncle's charge; and I implored him, although he had off-spring of his own, to rear and cherish them as his own blood, and to fashion them for himself and for posterity.

And now that Drusus has been taken away, I turn my prayers to you, Conscript Fathers; and I beseech you, before our country and our country's Gods, to take under your charge and guidance these great-grandchildren of Augustus, sprung from ancestors so illustrious, and to fulfil towards them my part as well as yours. To you, Nero and Drusus, these Senators will take the place of fathers. Born as you have been born, your good and your ill alike are matters which concern the State.

1 According to Dio, she was now eighty years old; eighty-six at her death (lviii. 2, 1).
This speech moved the audience to tears; words 9 of kindly import followed: and if Tiberius had only stopped there, he would have filled the minds of his hearers with feelings of pity and exaltation. But when he reverted to the idle and oft-ridiculed idea of restoring the Republic, and of asking the Consuls or some one else to undertake the government, he lost all credit even for his true and honourable feelings. The honours voted in memory of Germanicus were repeated in the case of Drusus, with such additions as flattery loves to make as time goes on. The funeral was notable for the splendid array 3 of busts: the show including Aeneas, the progenitor of the Julian House, and all the kings of Alba; Romulus, the founder of the city; the Sabine nobility, with Attus Clausus,1 and the other images of the Claudii, all following in one long procession.

In narrating the death of Drusus, I have followed the most numerous and most trustworthy authorities; but I must not omit to mention a rumour which obtained much currency at the time, and which has not yet died out. The story is that Sejanus, after corrupting Livia, acquired influence by foul means over the eunuch Spado—a lad endeared to his master Drusus by his youth and beauty, and one of his principal attendants. The confederates had agreed upon a time and place for administering the poison, when Sejanus had the hardihood to change his tactics. Conveying a covered hint to Tiberius that Drusus designed to poison him, he warned him to avoid the first cup that should be offered to him when dining in his son’s house. The old man fell into the trap. On 3

---

1 The tradition was that the Claudii were descended from the Sabine noble Attus Clausus, who migrated to Rome from Regillum in B.C. 504 (Liv. ii. 16). See xi. 24, 1.
entering the dining-room, he took the proffered cup, and handed it on to Drusus. Drusus, in all innocence, and with youthful eagerness, drank it off, and thus confirmed his father's suspicions; as if, in very fear and shame, he were inflicting upon himself the death which he had plotted for his father.

II. 1 This story was commonly bruited about; but apart from the fact that it has no good authority to support it, it can be refuted without difficulty. For what man with the most ordinary knowledge of the world—much less one experienced in great affairs like Tiberius—would offer a deadly potion to his own son, with his own hand, without giving him a hearing, or leaving any opening for retreat and reconsideration? Would he not rather have applied torture to the attendant who administered the poison? have enquired who had prompted him to the deed? and in fine, have exhibited towards his only son—a son never before found guilty of misconduct—that vacillation and procrastination which were natural to him even in his intercourse with strangers? The truth is that Sejanus was thought capable of devising any villainy; and such was the extravagant affection of Tiberius for him, and the hatred of every one towards them both, that any tale against them, however fabulous or monstrous it might be, found ready credence: for Rumour is ever charged with horrors when dealing with the deaths of princes.

4 Moreover, the whole history of the plot was disclosed by Apicata, the wife of Sejanus, and confirmed by Eudemus and Lygdu under torture. No historian, however hostile to Tiberius, has ever laid this crime at his door, although every other charge against him has been raked up and made the most
of;¹ and my sole object in recording and refuting the story is that I may reject, once for all, in an instance so notable, all lying hearsay rumours; and implore the reader into whose hands this work may fall not to accept incredible tales, however eagerly caught up and widely spread, in preference to sober truth untainted with the marvellous.²

When Tiberius delivered his son’s funeral laudation from the rostra, the Senate and the people assumed the demeanour, and used the language, of grief; but it was in semblance rather than from the heart, for they secretly rejoiced at the reviving prospects of the family of Germanicus. But these beginnings of popular favour, together with the ill-disguised exultation of their mother Agrippina,³ only hastened

¹ The reasoning of this chapter presents Tacitus at his best. Nowhere does he show more brilliantly his power of analysing human motive, and of seizing with convincing clearness the essential elements of a situation. The epigram atrociore semper fama erga dominantium exitus flashes a light over all history. It is applicable to many other horrors insinuated by Tacitus himself; notably to the death of Germanicus; and it is as true of the lives as it is of the deaths of princes. It is finely illustrated by Macaulay, in his account of the popular rumours current as to the death of Charles II.: ‘At that time the common people throughout Europe, and nowhere more than in England, were in the habit of attributing the deaths of princes, especially when the prince was popular and the death unexpected, to the foulest and darkest kind of assassination... We cannot, therefore, wonder that wild stories without number were repeated and believed by the common people. His Majesty’s tongue had swelled to the size of a neat’s tongue. A cake of deleterious powder had been found in his brain. There were blue spots on his breast. There were black spots on his shoulder. Something had been put into his snuff-box. Something had been put into his broth. Something had been put into his favourite dish of eggs and amber-grease. The Duchess of Portsmouth had poisoned him in a cup of chocolate. The Queen had poisoned him in a jar of dried pears. Such tales ought to be preserved; for they furnish us with a measure of the intelligence and virtue of the generation which eagerly devoured them’ (Vol. I., chap. iv., p. 442).

² In this passage Tacitus shows a true sense of the responsibility resting on an historian. He recognizes it as his supreme duty to get at the truth, to sift his evidence carefully, and to discard mere popular rumour. How far Tacitus himself obeyed these canons—whether he always selected and followed the best authorities—will ever remain a subject of dispute. He seldom names his authorities; ancient writers rarely thought it necessary to do so. His frequent comments and innuendoes—often palpably unjust—have led many to disbelieve in the accuracy of his narrative as a whole. But they may fairly lead to an opposite conclusion. The care with which, as a rule, he separates a fact from his own or the public comments on the fact, tends to shew that if the colouring is his own, the facts—and they often tell against himself—have been carefully inquired into and truly stated. I am unable to agree with Mr. Tarver’s sweeping condemnation of the manner in which Tacitus selected and used his authorities.

³ It must be confessed that the friends of Germanicus and his family, as well
on their ruin. For when Sejanus saw that the murder of Drusus brought no punishment on the murderers, and excited no grief among the people, he grew bold in crime: having succeeded in his first move, he turned over in his mind how he might get rid of the sons of Germanicus, whose succession was now assured. To administer poison to all three was impossible; so staunch was the loyalty of their guardians, so impregnable the virtue of their mother.

He therefore denounced the insolent bearing of Agrippina, and worked upon the long-standing hatred of Augusta, and on Livia's new and guilty knowledge, urging them to insinuate into the mind of the Emperor the idea that she was presuming on the number of her children, and that, relying on popular support, she was aiming at the sovereignty. These suspicions he instilled through the medium of skilled slanderers, especially one chosen emissary, Julius Postumus by name, who was well fitted for the purpose as he had become intimate with Augusta through an intrigue which he carried on with Mutilia Prisca. Mutilia stood high in Livia's favour; and by playing on the old lady's naturally jealous temperament, she succeeded in effecting a complete estrangement between her and her grand-daughter-in-law. Even Agrippina's intimate friends were tampered with, and encouraged to urge on her swelling ambition by reasonable talk.

Meanwhile Tiberius, finding consolation in employment, remained engrossed in public affairs. He attended in the Law Courts, and heard petitions from Agrippina herself, did everything that it was possible to do on every possible occasion to arouse the suspicions of a jealous nature like that of Tiberius. 1 i.e. Augusta had always hated Agrippina and her family; whilst Livia's consciousness of her recent guilt made it impossible for her to shrink from any suggestion that might be made for realising the fruits of her crime.
allied states. He caused the Senate to pass a decree granting exemption from tribute for three years to the cities of Cibyra in Asia, and Aegium in Achaia, which had been thrown into ruins by an earthquake. Then Vibius Serenus, Pro-consul of Further Spain, was convicted of Public Violence, and in consequence of his savage temper was condemned to be deported to the island of Amorgos. Carsidius Sacerdos and Gaius Gracchus were accused of having supplied our enemy Tacfarinas with corn; but they were both acquitted. The latter, in his early childhood, had accompanied his father into exile in the island of Cercina. Brought up there among foreigners and persons of no education, he had afterwards gained a living by petty trading in Sicily and Africa; but for all that, he could not escape the perils of high rank. All innocent as he was, had not his cause been espoused by Aelius Lamia and Lucius Apronius, both former Governors of Africa, his illustrious and ill-starred name, coupled with his father’s misfortunes, would have brought him to ruin.

In the course of this year embassies were received from two Greek States, Samos and Cos, asking that ancient rights of sanctuary should be confirmed; the former for the temple of Juno, the latter for that of Aesculapius. The Samians based their claim upon a decree of the Amphyctionic Council, which was the supreme Court of the Greeks at the time when, having planted their colonies in Asia, they had command of

---

1 Cibyra was a town in the south-west corner of Phrygia (Hor. Epp. i. 6, 33; Cic. Verr. ii. 4, 13, 30).
2 Aegium was the chief city of Achaia, in the Corinthian gulf.
3 See n. on chap. 5, 2.
4 For Sempronius Gracchus, see i. 53, 4.
5 Cercina was a small island (or rather two islands) in the Lesser Syrtis, off the N. coast of Africa.
6 Hor. addresses this Lamia in Od. i. 26 and iii. 17. He was cos. A.D. 3; the date of his tenure of Africa is uncertain. L. Apronius was under Germanicus in Germany (i. 56, 1, and was governor of Africa A.D. 20 (iii. 21, 1).
8 the seaboard of that country. The Coans had equal antiquity on their side; and they could point to a special service rendered by the locality. For when Mithradates had ordered a massacre of Roman citizens throughout the islands and towns of Asia, the Coans had opened to them the temple of Aesculapius.

4 After repeated and fruitless complaints from the Praetors, Tiberius at last took up the subject of the shameful conduct of stage-players. They had caused, he declared, much public disturbance and many private scandals; that most frivolous of popular entertainments, the Oscan drama, had become so outrageous, and its influence so formidable, that the Senate ought to use its authority to put it down. The actors were accordingly expelled from Italy.

15. 1 In the course of the same year, two new sorrows befell the Emperor: the death of one of the twin sons of Drusus, and that of his intimate friend Lucilius Longus. Lucilius had been his constant companion in all his fortunes, good and bad; he was the only senator who had accompanied him in his retirement to Rhodes. For this reason, though he was a man of no family, the Senate voted him a censorial funeral, and a statue to be set up at the public expense in the Forum of Augustus. For all kinds of business were still transacted in the Senate; so much so that they

---

1 This was in B.C. 88: no less than eighty thousand Romans are said to have been massacred on that occasion (Vell. ii. 18, 1). The massacre was the immediate cause of the first Mithradatic war; see n. on iii. 73, 3.
2 The reference is to the Fabulae Atellanae, a form of genteel comedy originally reserved for amateurs (Liv. vii. 3, 12), but now invaded by the pantomimi; see Furn. on l. 54, 3. Cicero alludes to these plays with great contempt, ad Fam. vii. 1: Non enim te puto Graecos aut Oscos ludos desiderare: praesertim cum Oscos ludos vel in senatu nostro spectare possis.
3 Stories related by Suetonius (Tib. 45, Cal. 27, Nero 39) show that these plays often contained foul jests, even against the emperor himself.
4 On the immodestia and discordia of actors see i. 54, 3: 77, 1.
5 The account given by Suet. Tib. 37 is Caece in theatro per discordiam admissa, capita factionum et histriones, propter quos dissidentatur, relegavit; nec ut revocaret unquam ullos populi precibus potuit evinciri.
6 Born in A.D. 19 (ii. 84, 1).
even tried Lucilius Capito, Procurator\(^1\) of Asia, on a charge advanced by the provincials. Tiberius asserted, in the most positive manner, that he had given Capito no authority except over his own slaves and revenues. If he had taken upon himself the authority of a Governor;\(^2\) and made use of the services of the soldiery, he had done so in violation of his own instructions; they should grant the allies a hearing.

The case was accordingly taken to trial, and Capito was condemned. On account of which sentence, as well as for the punishment inflicted upon Gaius Silanus the year before, the cities of Asia voted a temple to Tiberius, his mother, and the Senate; and when the request was granted, Nero returned thanks\(^8\) to the Senate and his grandfather on their behalf. His audience listened to him with delight; for having the memory of Germanicus still fresh in their hearts, they felt as if it was his form they saw, his voice they heard. The young man, too, had a modest bearing, and a person befitting his princely rank, which touched them all the more that they knew to what dangers he was exposed from the hatred of Sejanus.

Soon after this, Tiberius addressed the Senate upon the choice of a Flamen Dialis in room of Servius Maluginensis deceased, suggesting an amendment of the law. The old custom, he explained, was that three patricians, born of parents united by the ceremony of Confarreatio,\(^4\) should be named, and one selected

\(^1\) See n. on chap. 6, 5. The emperor might be expected specially to screen his own procurator.
\(^2\) In a senatorial province like Asia the procurators were only entitled to prosecute the emperor's claims in the regular courts. Later they became independent: Cp. Juv. iv. 53-55.
\(^8\) Nero must have been chosen by the Asians as their patronus for the occasion.
\(^4\) Confarreatio was a religious form of marriage, peculiar to the patricians, taking its name from the offering of a wheaten cake (panis farreus) to Jupiter before certain witnesses, which was an essential part of the ceremony. See Dict. Ant. s.v. Matrimonium.
for the office; but as that form of marriage had fallen into disuse, or was only practised by a few, a sufficient number of persons thus qualified was no longer to be found. There were several reasons for this; the principal one being an indifference to the rite on the part of both men and women, added to a desire to shirk the cumbersome ceremonies by which it was accompanied. A further objection was the fact that when a person assumed the Flamenship, both he and his wife passed out of the paternal authority, the wife falling under that of her husband. This, he thought, should be remedied, either by law or by a decree of Senate; just as Augustus had modified some of the grim usages of antiquity to meet the requirements of modern times. After a discussion on the religious question, it was resolved to make no change in regard to the office itself; but a law was passed that the Flamen’s wife should be under her husband’s authority in regard to his sacred duties, but that in all other matters she should have the same rights as other women. The son of Maluginensis was then appointed to fill his father’s place. And to add to the dignity of priestly offices, and so induce persons to undertake such duties more readily, the Senate voted a sum of two million sestertces to the Vestal Cornelia, who had

1 There was a further drawback: a marriage by confarreatio could only be dissolved by the equally complicated form diffarreatio; the marriage of a Flamen could not be dissolved at all. Roman divorce was very free at this time, and any hindrance to it was regarded as a grievance.

2 The father objected because he lost the patria potestas over his daughter; the daughter objected because she came under the patria potestas of her husband. Originally, by Roman law, a woman was never sui iuris; she passed out of the power of her father into that of her husband. But modern fashion had introduced laxity in these respects, and by means of legal fictions women had obtained practical independence, both as to property and otherwise.

3 It thus appears that legislation by the comitia did still occasionally take place. So in xi. 13, 2. But it must have been a pure formality.

4 On a previous occasion (ii. 86, 2) Tiberius gave a million sestertces as a consolation to that one of the two candidates suggested for the office who was not selected.
been chosen to take the place of Scantia; and ordained that Augusta, when she went to the theatre, should take her seat among the Vestal Virgins.

A.D. 24. CONSULS SERVIUS CORNELIUS CETHEGUS AND L. VISELLIUS VARRO.

At the beginning of this year, when the Pontiffs, and other priests after them, offered up prayers for the health of the Emperor, they included the names of Nero and of Drusus along with his, not so much out of affection for the young men, but rather by way of flattery. But in evil times, too much flattery may be as perilous as too little; and Tiberius, who was at no time too well disposed to the family of Germanicus, was incensed beyond endurance that, at his age, the two young lads should be put on an equality with himself. He therefore sent for the Pontiffs, and enquired:—Was this compliment due to the cajoleries or the threats of Agrippina? They denied the imputation; but they were reprimanded nevertheless, though not very severely, for they were for the most part relatives of his own, or men of high distinction. And in the Senate he uttered a warning that no one should in future excite ambitious ideas in the impressionable minds of the young men by conferring distinctions on them before their time. For Sejanus was for ever dropping insinuations like these into his ear:—The State was divided into two factions, as if in civil war; there were some who styled themselves the party of Agrippina; if this were allowed

1 This is the first occasion on which Tiberius shows any overt sign of jealousy towards Agrippina and her family. It was the natural result of the death of Drusus. She could now claim, or be represented as claiming, the succession for her children as their inherited right; and she could always boast, as against the Claudian line, that she and her children were descended from Augustus himself. How indiscreetly Agrippina obtruded this point appears in chaps. 52, 4, and 53, 1.
to go on, their numbers would increase: there was but one mode of curbing the rising spirit of disaffection—to put one or two of its most active promoters out of the way.

18. 1 With this object, he attacked Gaius Silius and Titius Sabinus. The fatal offence of both was that they had been friends of Germanicus; but there were further reasons against Silius. He had been in command of great armies for seven years; he had gained Triumphal honours in Germany; he had been a conqueror in the war with Sacrovir. The greater his fall, the greater the terror which it would spread abroad. Many thought that Silius had aggravated his offence by his own intemperate conduct. He had boasted over-much of the loyalty of his own troops when other armies broke out in mutiny:—If the spirit of mutiny had spread to his own legions—so he had declared—it would have been all over with the government of Tiberius. Such pretensions Tiberius deemed destructive of his own position; such services too great to be requited. For benefactions are welcome, so long as it seems possible to repay them; when they go far beyond that limit, hatred takes the place of gratitude.

19. 1 Sosia Galla, the wife of Silius, was odious to the Emperor because of her attachment to Agrippina. It was determined to impeach both Silius and Sabinus, but to postpone the prosecution of Sabinus for

---

1 C. Silius was cos. A.D. 13. We find him in i. 31, in command of the army of Upper Germany as legatus pro praetore, A.D. 14, and he remained in the same post until he conquered Sacrovir, A.D. 21 (iii. 45-6). He received the triumphal insignia for his German services in A.D. 15 (i. 72, 1). Furn. thinks he may have been related to Silius Italicus, the poet.

2 This pungent and too truthful epigram is illustrated by Furn. from Seneca (Ep. 19, 11): Quidam quo plus debent, magis oderunt; leve aed alienum debilem facit, grave inimicum. Cp. Shakespeare, 'For loan oft loses both himself and friend,' Ham., Act i. Sc. 3.

3 How Titius Sabinus was entrapped and put to death is told with much detail in chaps. 68 to 70.
a season. The Consul Varro was set on\(^1\) to prosecute, who on the pretence of having some quarrel of his father's to avenge, was ready to sacrifice his own honour to abet the animosities of Sejanus. The 2 accused craved a short delay, until his accuser should vacate his office; but Tiberius refused the request. *It was customary*, he said, *for magistrates to prosecute private persons: there must be no curtailment of a Consul's rights, seeing that it depended on his vigilance that the State took no harm.*\(^3\) It was a speciality this of 3 Tiberius, to make use of ancient formulae\(^8\) as a cloak for new-fangled villanies. And so, with all due solemnity, the Senate was convened; just as if Silius were being dealt with by law, or as if Varro were truly Consul, or Rome a Commonwealth at all. Silius himself said nothing; or in such defence as he attempted he made it plain whose anger was bearing him down. He was charged with having connived at 4 the movement of Sacrovir, and with sullying his victory by rapacity. The conduct of his wife Sosia was also brought up against him. The charge of extortion, 5 certainly, was brought home to them both; but the whole trial was conducted as one for treason,\(^4\) and Silius anticipated the inevitable condemnation by a voluntary death.

Yet\(^6\) his property was severely dealt with. Not that 20. 1

---

1 As if he were a hound let loose upon his quarry.
2 Tiberius is here quoting the words of the old *decretum ultimum* or *supremum*, by which (as in the case of Cicero against Catiline) the senate conferred dictatorial power upon the consuls in the formula *ne quid detrimenti res publica caperet*.
3 The use of this ancient constitutional formula, so resented by Tacitus, was indeed a mockery in the mouth of Tiberius. The great departments of administration had one by one been handed over to the emperor, and the responsibility of the consuls had become purely nominal.
4 Here again, as in the case of C. Silius (iii. 67, 2), Tacitus admits that the accused was guilty of the main charge, but insists on regarding the whole trial as one for *maiestas*.
5 i.e. in spite of his suicide. In cases of *maiestas* we are informed in vi. 39, 2 that confiscation was usually avoided by suicide, except so far as the informers had to be rewarded. See chap. 30, 3–4, and n,
any restitution was made to the tribute-payers; indeed none was asked for: but the sums which had come as gifts from Augustus\(^1\) were abstracted, and an account was asked of every item due to the Imperial Treasury. Never before had Tiberius exhibited any solicitude for money not his own. On the motion of Asinius Gallus, Sosia was sentenced to exile; he had also proposed that one half of the property should be confiscated, the other half being left for the children.

But this Manius Lepidus had opposed, moving that all should go to the children except the fourth part allowed by law to the accusers. This Lepidus, I find, bore himself with dignity and wisdom also throughout all those evil days; for on many occasions he tempered the severities proposed by flatterers. And yet he was not wanting in discretion; for he enjoyed, without a break, the esteem and favour of Tiberius. Hence I am compelled\(^8\) to doubt whether the favour of Princes towards some men, and their dislike of others, depend, like all other things, upon Fate, and on the lot assigned to us at our birth; or whether our own prudence also may not go for something, so as to make it possible to steer a course that shall be safe without scheming, midway between abrupt defiance on the one hand and degrading complaisance on the other.

After that Messalinus Cotta, a man of a very different character from Lepidus, though no less nobly born, proposed a decree that magistrates should be punished for offences committed in the Provinces by their wives, however innocent and ignorant of them

---

\(^1\) Augustus had probably made some special grants of money to Silanus, such as he made to Hortatius, and as Tiberius himself made to others (ii. 37, 7 and 2).

\(^8\) Tacitus gives up his favourite fatalistic doctrine very charingly and grudgingly. See vi. 22, 5-6.
they might be, just as if they had been committed by themselves.¹

Next came the case of Calpurnius Piso. I have already recorded² how this high-spirited nobleman had proclaimed in the Senate that he would quit the city on account of the machinations of accusers; how he had defied Augusta, and dared to drag Urgulania before the courts, out of the very palace of the Emperor. All this Tiberius had borne patiently at the time; but in a mind like his that brooded over its wrongs, even if the first access of anger might die away, the memory remained behind.³ And so Piso was accused by Quintus Granius of having spoken disrespectfully of the Emperor’s Majesty in private; to which was added that he kept poison in his house, and that he wore a sword when attending in the Senate. This last point was passed over as too monstrous to be true. He was indicted on the remaining charges, piled up against him in great number; but his opportune death prevented the trial from going on.

Then Cassius Severus⁴ was dealt with. This Cassius was a pestilent person of mean origin, but a forcible forensic speaker; and in consequence of the bitter animosities which he provoked, he had been banished by the Senate, acting under oath,⁵ to the island of Crete. But as he pursued a similar course there, and brought down upon himself enmities both

¹ All strict administration—especially if it affected the nobility—is distasteful to Tacitus. He is outraged that a man of high birth like Cotta should propose to hold a provincial governor responsible for the misdoings of his wife.
² i.e. in ii. 34, 1-2, eight years before, had with difficulty soothed occasion.
³ For this trait in the character of Tiberius see i. 7, 11; iii. 64, 3; iv. 71, 5.
⁴ Cassius was a rhetorician of some note, of the new school (Dial. 19, 1). Quintilian says of him, plus bilis habet quam sanguinis (x. 1, 117); and Seneca, plus stomacho quam consilio dedit (Exc. Contr. iii. praefer.).
⁵ See nn. on i. 14, 6: 74, 5.
new and old, he was interdicted from fire and water, stripped of his property, and condemned to pass his old age on the rocks of Seriphus.  

22. 1  About this same time the Praetor Plautius Silvanus, for some unknown reason, threw his wife Apronia out of the window. Summoned before the Emperor by his father-in-law Lucius Apronius, he replied, with much confusion, that he had been fast asleep at the time; that he knew nothing of what had happened; and that his wife had made away with herself. Without delaying for one instant, Tiberius proceeded to the house, and examined the bed-chamber, where he saw with his own eyes the signs of a struggle and an ejectment. He reported the matter to the Senate, and a trial was appointed; whereupon Urgulania, the grandmother of Silvanus, sent Plautius a dagger. Urgulania being intimate with Augusta, the receipt of this dagger was taken as equivalent to a hint from the Emperor himself; and after a vain attempt to use the weapon himself, the accused caused his veins to be opened. Shortly after this, his first wife Numantina was accused of having driven him mad by means of potions and incantations; but she was acquitted.

23. 1  In this year, at last, the Romans saw the end of their long war with the Numidian Tacfarinas. All

---

1 One of the smaller Cyclades, now Seriph. It was a common place of banishment (Juv. x. 170).
2 The phrase dare iudices simply means 'to permit a case to go to trial.' It denotes the act of the praetor or other judge before whom a plaintiff lodged a claim. The judge was said dare actionem et iudices (i.e. to permit the case to go on and name the court); dicere ius (to indicate the law, or principle of law, under which it had to be tried); and lastly, addicere bona (to adjudge the property in dispute). Hence the three words do, dicco, addico summed up the whole judicial function (Ov. Fast. i. x. 47).
3 This story well illustrates the pain-taking anxiety to get at the truth, and to probe questions for himself, which was so long a characteristic of Tiberius (see i. 75, 2 and n.). Such attention to details was out of place in the governor of an empire; it doubtless contributed, as Merivale points out, to the ultimate break-down of Tiberius. Unequal to the task of entering into every detail of government himself, and losing all confidence in those near him, he gave up the task in despair.
former generals had relaxed their efforts as soon as they thought they had done enough to earn Triumphant honours; for though no less than three laurilled statues had been set up, Tacfarinas was still devastating the Province. He had been reinforced by a body of Moors, who under the negligent rule of Juba's young son Ptolemy had chosen war, rather than submit to be ordered about like slaves by the King's freedmen. The king of the Garamantes acted as receiver of plunder for Tacfarinas, and took part in his depredations; and though not taking the field in person, he supplied him with a light-armed force, to whose numbers distance lent exaggeration. From the Province itself, the needy and the restless flocked to his standard; and that all the more eagerly because the Emperor, after the successes of Blaesus, had recalled the 9th legion, as though the African war were over. The new Proconsul, Publius Dolabella, had not ventured to detain this legion; for he was more afraid of the Emperor's orders than of the chances of war.

Tacfarinas accordingly spread abroad the rumour that other nations were breaking in upon the Roman Empire; that the Romans were, in consequence, withdrawing gradually from the Province; and that such of them as were left might be cut off, if only a vigorous effort were made by all who preferred freedom to slavery. His forces thus augmented, he established a camp and laid siege to the town of Thubuscum. Dolabella meanwhile collected all his regular troops, and with his first advance raised the siege: partly through the terror of the Roman name, partly because
Numidians cannot stand up against a charge of infantry. He then set up block-houses in suitable positions, executed the Musulamian chiefs who were wavering in their allegiance, and having learned from his various expeditions against Tacfarinas that it was of no use to attempt to follow up so mobile an enemy with a single heavily-equipped force, he called out King Ptolemy and his people, organised four separate columns, each under the command of a Legate or a Tribune, and sent out Moorish plundering parties under picked leaders of their own. He himself directed the operations as a whole.

25. 1 Before long, news arrived that the Numidians had put up their huts and established themselves in a half-ruined fort called Auzea, which they had burned some time before, 1 the position of which, in the midst of vast forests, they thought secure. A light column of our horse and foot was at once hurried off, without knowing its destination. The Romans fell upon the barbarians at daybreak, with fierce cries and blowing of trumpets, before they were well awake, and when their horses were either hobbled or feeding far away. 2 The Roman infantry was in one compact body, their cavalry was posted at proper intervals, and all was ready for battle. The enemy, on the other hand, were taken unawares; they had neither arms, nor order, nor plan of battle; they were dragged off like sheep, 3 and butchered or taken prisoners. The infuriated soldiery, remembering all they had gone through, how often they had longed for battle, and how often they had been foiled, glutted their vengeance to the

---

1 It is not possible to make out with any approach to exactness the topography of these campaigns. We have seen that even in the case of Germany, a country which Tacitus had specially studied and described, his geographical indications are of the vaguest kind. Of the geography of Africa, we may be sure that he knew even less than an average Englishman knew of that of South Africa before the late war.
full. Word was passed round the maniples that every man was to make for Tacfarinas, whose face, after so many conflicts, was familiar to them all. And so, at last, after his guards had been struck down round him, and his son taken prisoner, seeing the Romans close in on him from every side, he rushed upon their blades, and by a dearly bought death escaped captivity. So ended the war.

Dolabella asked for Triumphant honours; but Tiberius refused, out of compliment to Sejanus, not wishing to dim the glory of his uncle Blaesus. But while this refusal added nothing to the distinction of Blaesus, it added much to that of Dolabella; seeing that the latter, with a smaller force, had slain the king and brought back notable captives, and had all the credit of bringing the war to an end. He was accompanied by an embassy from the Garamantes—a spectacle strange to Rome. Dismayed by the death of Tacfarinas, and conscious of their own innocence, that people had sent envoys to make submission to the Roman people. In recognition of King Ptolemy's loyal attitude throughout the war, an ancient custom was revived in his honour. A senator was despatched to present to him, as in olden times, an ivory staff and an embroidered toga, and to bestow on him the titles of King, Ally, and Friend.

During the same summer, the beginnings of a servile war were crushed by a happy chance. The movement originated with a certain Titus Curtius, once a soldier of the Praetorian Guard. Beginning in Brundisium and the towns round it with secret

---

1 He had only one legion, the 3rd; the 9th having been withdrawn (chap. 23, 2). Camillus also in his campaign had but one legion, supplemented by local levies (ii. 52, 5).

2 The garment worn in triumphs.

3 The phrase semina oppressae seems to contain a mixed metaphor.
meetings, after a time he openly issued proclamations, calling on the rustic and half-savage slaves of the remoter districts to strike for freedom. As if by special providence, three war-galleys, kept on that coast for the protection of traders, put into the port.

2 The Quaestor Cutius Lupus, who by old custom had charge of the hill districts, happened to be on the spot at the time; making a judicious disposition of his seamen, he crushed the rising at the outset. The Emperor sent off at once a strong force under the Tribune Staius, who seized Curtiusius and his most daring associates, and carried them off to Rome. The city was already in a panic; for the number of slaves was increasing beyond all measure, while that of the free-born population was dwindling day by day.

28. 1 The same year witnessed a most lamentable and monstrous prosecution: a son appeared before the Senate as accuser of his own father. Both bore the name of Vibius Serenus. Dragged back from exile, his person a mass of filth and rags, and loaded with chains, the father had to face the accusations of his son; while the youth, in elegant attire, and beaming with self-complacency, acted as informer and witness in one. He asserted that his father had plotted against the Emperor, and had sent persons to foment the war in Gaul; he also accused Caecilius Cornutus, a man of praetorian rank, of having supplied him

---

1 It would appear that from an early time there were four quaeestors with 'provinces' in different parts of Italy. One was stationed at Ostia, one in Cisalpine Gaul. Their duties were connected with the superintendence of foreign trade; each probably had a port or ports under his charge, and would for that purpose have the disposal of the local coast-guard force. Brundisium would be the natural station for one of these officers; who would seem, if calles be read here (Mommsen supports the conj. Cales), to have had the rough pasture-land of the interior under his charge also. If so, his duty would probably be that of collecting the rents due for state pastures. Suetonius speaks of a provincial post of no great importance known by the name of silvae callesque (Iul. 19).

2 C. Vibius Serenus was one of the accusers of Libo (ii, 30, 1); he had been condemned for vis publica, and banished to Amorgus ob atrocitatem morum (chap. 13, 2).
with funds for the purpose. Unable to endure the suspense, and believing that to be accused was to be condemned, Cornutus hastened to put an end to himself; whereas Serenus, undaunted, shook his chains in his son's face, and called on the Gods for vengeance: imploring them to take him back into exile, where he might live far from fashions like to these, and to send down punishment, sooner or later, upon his son. 

Cornutus, he protested, was innocent, and had been alarmed without reason. If the facts alleged were true, let them produce other names besides his; for he could never have plotted against the Emperor's life and government with one single confederate.

Thus challenged, the accuser named Gnaeus Lentulus and Seius Tubero to the great confusion of the Emperor; for here were two of the first men in the State, both intimate friends of his own—one in extreme old age, the other in feeble health—accused of planning an insurrection, and endangering the public peace. Both were at once acquitted; and when the father's slaves were put to the torture to give evidence against their master, the result was unfavourable to the prosecution. In a guilty frenzy, and alarmed by the murmurs of the crowd who threatened him with the Tullianum, the Tarpeian Rock, or the death of a parricide, the accuser fled from the city; but he was

---

1 The Latin is not quite logical or complete. It reads as if Serenus meant that his innocence would be proved by the production of accomplices: he meant, of course, the opposite. It was the lack of accomplices that would prove his innocence.
2 Cn. Cornelius Lentulus had accompanied Drusus in his mission to the mutinous army of Pannonia, when he narrowly escaped death at the hands of the soldiers (ante alias aetate et gloria belti, l. 27, 3). He had been consul in c. 18, and had gained victories over the Getae. His death and character are recorded in chap. 44, 1.
3 Seius Tubero was a legatus under Germanicus (ii. 20, 2), and was consul A.D. 18.
4 The famous Carcer or Tullianum, at the foot of the Capitol.
5 The Tarpeian Rock, on the W. face of the Capitol, from which state criminals (as Manlius) were hurled.
6 The ancient punishment of the parricide was to be beaten with rods to the effusion of blood, then to be tied up in a sack along with a dog, a cock, a
dragged back from Ravenna and compelled to carry on the prosecution, Tiberius making no secret of the hatred which he had long entertained against the exiled Serenus. For after the condemnation of Libo, Serenus had written a letter to Tiberius reproaching him with having left his own great services unrewarded, and containing some expressions too insolent to be safely addressed to ears so haughty, so ready to take offence. Tiberius brought all this up again, after an interval of eight years, adding divers charges relating to the intervening period, though he was now baulked by the obstinacy of the slaves under torture.

30. 1 It was proposed that Serenus should be punished after the ancient fashion; but on this Tiberius, anxious to conciliate public opinion, interposed his veto. Gallus Asinius moved that he should be confined in Gyarus or Donusa; but Tiberius objected to that also, on the ground that there was a lack of water in both islands, and that *if a man’s life were spared, he should at least be granted the means of living.* Serenus was accordingly taken back to Amorgus. And as Cornutus had died by his own hand, it was proposed that if a person accused of treason should commit suicide before the trial was over, the prosecutors should forfeit their rewards.

4 This motion was on the point of being carried, when Tiberius, with unusual openness, pronounced in favour of the informers; protesting, with much asperity, that such a rule would nullify all law and be a serious danger to the state:—*Better upset the laws, said he, than remove their guardians.* Thus was it that baits were

---

1 *i.e.* by scourging to death. See the sea (*Dig. xlvii. 9. 9; Juv. viii. 214*). ii. 32, 5.
dangled before informers—a tribe of miscreants called into being for the public ruin, whom neither pains nor penalties have ever been able to repress.

Amid this series of distressing events, some slight relief was afforded by the pardon of Gaius Cominius, a Roman knight, convicted of writing a scurrilous poem against the Emperor. This favour Tiberius granted on the intercession of a senator, brother of the accused. Men marvelled all the more that a prince capable of better things, who had knowledge of the esteem which waits on acts of clemency, should prefer a policy of severity. It was not from any want of perception that he went wrong; nor does it need a diviner to tell whether the applause which greets the acts of sovereigns be true or counterfeit. Nay, Tiberius himself, who on other occasions would employ set phrases, and appear to struggle with his words, spoke with ease and freedom whenever he spoke words of mercy.

Yet when Publius Suillius, once Quaestor under Germanicus, was convicted of receiving a judicial bribe, and it was proposed to banish him from Italy, Tiberius moved, with much warmth, that he should be deported to an island; declaring, on solemn oath, that he did so in the public interest. This sentence raised much indignation at the time; but it redounded to the Emperor’s credit in after days, when Suillius returned to Rome. For he became known to the next generation as a powerful and corrupt favourite of the Emperor Claudius, whose friendship he enjoyed long and profitably, but never used for good. A like

---

1 Tacitus quotes the case of Suillius, in contrast to that of C. Cominius, as if to shew how sometimes Tiberius seemed to revel in pronouncing harsh sentences. Yet he has to confess that Tiberius was right in his judgment of Suillius. In the third case (that of Catus Firmius) Tiberius punished the false traducer; but not severely enough to please Tacitus.
penalty was inflicted upon the senator Catus Firmius, for having brought a false charge of treason against his own sister. It was this Catus who, as above recorded, first entrapped Libo, and then brought him to ruin by turning informer. Bearing this service in mind, but alleging some other reason, Tiberius deprecated a sentence of banishment, though he offered no objection to his expulsion from the Senate.

32. I am well aware that much of what I have related, and still have to relate, may seem of little moment, and too trifling to be recorded. But none can compare my subject with that of those who wrote the early history of Rome. They had great wars to describe, the storming of cities, the rout and capture of kings; or if they turned to affairs at home, they could enlarge freely on the conflicts of Consuls with Tribunes, on land laws and corn laws, on struggles between patricians and plebeians. My theme is narrow and inglorious: a peace unbroken, or disturbed only by petty wars; a distressful course of events in Rome; a prince with no interest in the expansion of the Empire. It may serve some good purpose, nevertheless, to look closely into these things, at first sight so unimportant; since it is often from such beginnings that mighty movements take their rise.

33. For every country and city must be ruled either by the populace, or by the few, or by one man; a form of government selected and compounded out of

1 i.e. in ii. 27, 2.
2 Tacitus does not appeal here to a high conception of history. He takes the popular view that it reaches its highest interest in telling of wars and conquests: even the interest of such subjects as the conflict between the orders, and the battles over agrarian
3 What of interest is there to tell under a one-man rule?
these elements, may be commended more easily than brought into being; nor could it endure were it set up. And just as in former times, when the people held all power, men had to study the temper of the multitude, and learn how to control and guide it: or again, when the patricians were all-powerful, those who had learnt best to understand the mind of the Senate and of the aristocracy were deemed wise men, and cunning in the times: so now, when things are changed, and Rome is, in fact, under the rule of a single man, it may prove useful to enquire into and record such things as I have to tell. For but few have wisdom enough of their own to distinguish what is honourable from what is base, the expedient from the hurtful; most men have to learn these things from the experience of others. And yet such enquiries, however profitable they may be, afford but little entertainment. Descriptions of new countries: the varied incidents of battle: the deaths of famous leaders: these are topics which interest and refresh the reader's mind.

1 Here again Tacitus is disappointing. He propounds one of the most interesting problems of constitutional philosophy; decides it summarily in one way; and dismisses curtly, almost contemptuously, the idea of a mixed constitution. Yet that was a favourite idea with political philosophers from Plato to Cicero, as well as of practical historians like Polybius; and Tacitus might have pointed to the Roman constitution in its best days as a successful example of it. See Polybius, vi. 11, 6. He makes no attempt to discuss the question raised; but taking it for granted that there is always one dominant power in a State, and one only, his point is to shew that the centre of interest in history, as in politics, will be in the doings and purposes of that one power. Thus under the Republic, at different periods, interest centred round the patricians and the plebeians respectively; in his own time, all interest, all history, centre round one man (neque alia re Romana quam si unus imperio). With more than his usual perverseness, and blind to the great problems of government which Rome was working out in her vast empire, Tacitus pretends that her destinies are summed up in the person of the emperor, and that the history of the times is a mere record of state prosecutions. For the exaggerated importance given to these trials by Tacitus, see Freytag, 'Tiberius and Tacitus,' and Tarver's 'Tiberius the Tyrant,' passim.

2 The application is not very clearly brought out. The idea seems to be that it is the business of the historian to teach the principles of private morality and political expediency, at one and the same time, by selecting proper instances as examples or as warnings. The majority of mankind having no power to draw their own conclusions, the historian has so to marshal his facts that his readers may draw the proper conclusions from them (alterum eventis docet).
My task is to record a succession of cruel edicts, of prosecutions heaped on prosecutions; to tell of friends betrayed, of innocent men brought to ruin, of trials all ending in one way, with a uniformity as monotonous as it is revolting.

Then again, the writer of ancient history finds few to criticise him; it concerns no one if he praise too warmly the armies of Carthage or of Rome. But there are many living now whose ancestors suffered punishment, or incurred disgrace, under Tiberius; and even if the families concerned have died out, there are those who deem an attack upon vices akin to their own to be an attack upon themselves. Even glory and virtue have their enemies; for when placed too close to their opposites they wear an aspect of rebuke.1 But I must return from this digression.

A.D. 25. CONSULS COSSUS CORNELIUS LENTULUS AND M. ASINIUS AGrippa.3

34. 1 In this year Cremutius Cordus8 was impeached upon a novel charge, now heard of for the first time4—that he had commended Marcus Brutus in his History, and called Gaius Cassius ‘The last of the Romans.’6

2 The accusers, Satrius Secundus and Pinarius Natta, were both clients of Sejanus; which fact, as well as the evident displeasure with which Tiberius

---

1 How admirable is Tacitus when he leaves the field of great political movements, and sums up in a perfect phrase some painful human characteristic.
2 Cossus Cornelius Lentulus was a brother of Lentulus Gaetulicus; Asinius Agrippa was a son of Asinius Gallus and Vipsania.
3 Cremutius Cordus had a sharp tongue, which did not spare Sejanus. When the statue of Sejanus was put up in the restored theatre of Pompey (see iii. 72, 5), he exclaimed, ‘Now indeed is Pompey’s theatre destroyed!’ (Sen. Cons. ad Marc. xxii. 4).
4 Domitian encouraged prosecutions for similar offences (Agr. 2, 2).
5 The book was a history of his own times, probably embracing only the reign of Augustus. Quintilian praises the libertas of the book, even after excision of the noxious passages (x. 1, 104).
listened to the defence, proved fatal to the accused. Having made up his mind to die, Cremutius spoke as follows:—

My words, Conscript Fathers, are arraigned; so innocent am I of any evil deed. Yet these words were not uttered against the Emperor, or his father, the persons to whom the law of Majesty applies: my offence is that I have praised Brutus and Cassius, men whose deeds have been recorded by many, whom none have named without respect. Titus Livius, a writer pre-eminent for eloquence and candour, eulogised Gnaeus Pompeius so warmly that Augustus called him ‘a Pompeian’: but this caused no interruption in their friendship. He speaks of Scipio and Afranius, of this same Cassius, this Brutus, never as raiders and parricides—the names men give them now—but often as distinguished men. Asinius Pollio gives a noble account of them in his history; Messalla Corvinus used to call Cassius ‘his own Imperator’; and yet both lived on wealthy and honoured to the end. When Marcus Cicero wrote a book in which he lauded Cato to the skies, what else did the Dictator Caesar do but write a speech in answer, as though he were pleading before a judge? The letters of Antonius, the speeches of Brutus, contain the most bitter abuse of Augustus, as false as it is foul; men read the poems of Bibaculus and Catullus, which are full of insults.

---

1 Seneca says of Livy, ut est natura candidissimus omnium magnorum ingeniorum aestimatur (Suas. vi. 22).
2 Caecilius Metellus Pius Scipio, the father-in-law of Pompey, and consul along with him in B.C. 52. He slew himself after the battle of Thapsus, B.C. 49.
3 Consul B.C. 60, legate of Pompey in Spain, B.C. 49, killed after the battle of Thapsus.
4 This is the history of the Civil Wars alluded to by Hor. Od. ii. 1, as beginning from the consulship of Metellus, B.C. 60. Suidas says it contained 17 books.
5 He commanded under Brutus at Philippi. His history of the Civil Wars is quoted by Suet. Oct. 74.
6 M. Furius Bibaculus, of Cremona, whose turgid verses are ridiculed by Hor. Sat. i. 10, 36; ii. 5, 41.
7 I. e. in poems 29, 54, 57, 95. In regard to the gross language used by Catullus in these poems, which should be discounted as part of the ordinary fashion of the time, see the excellent remarks in H. A. J. Munro’s ‘Elucidations of Catullus.’
to the Caesars; yet the Divine Julius, the Divine Augustus, bore these things and passed them by. Whether in this more to praise their forbearance, or their wisdom, I know not: for the insult which goes unnoticed dies; to resent it, is to accord to it recognition.

35. 1 I say nothing of the Greeks, who tolerated not liberty only, but license, or at the most, paid back words with words; and men have always been free to speak uncensured of those whom Death has placed beyond the reach of hate or favour. Am I, forsooth, in arms, with Cassius and Brutus, upon the plains of Philippi, or inflaming the people to civil war by my harangues? Is the case not rather this: that just as these men are known to us by their statues—statues respected even by their conqueror—so in like manner, though dead for more than seventy years, they still hold their place upon the page of history? 4 For posterity awards to every man the honour that is his due; and if I be now condemned, men will remember not Cassius and Brutus only, but me also.

5 Cremutius then left the Senate-house, and put an end to himself by starvation. His books, by order of the Senate, were burned by the Aediles. And yet they were saved; hidden away for a time, they were again put forth. Hence one cannot but smile at the dulness of those who believe that the authority of to-day can extinguish men’s memories to-morrow. Nay rather, they who penalise genius do but extend its power: whether they be foreign tyrants, or imitators of foreign tyranny, they do but reap dishonour for themselves, and glory for their victims.

36. 1 So unbroken was the flow of prosecutions throughout this year, that on the day of the Latin Festival,

---

1 They were hidden away by his daughter Marcia, to whom Seneca addressed his well-known Consolatio ad Marciam. Caligula permitted these and other proscribed works to be circulated (Suet. Cal. 16).
when Drusus ascended the tribunal to take the auspices as Prefect\(^1\) of the city, Calpurnius Salvianus approached him with an accusation against Sextus Marius. For this he was publicly rebuked by Tiberius, and had to go into exile. Next, the people\(^2\) of Cyzicus were accused of neglecting the worship of the Divine Augustus;\(^3\) to which were added certain charges of violence towards Roman citizens. For this\(^3\) they lost the franchise, which they had earned during the Mithradatic siege, when the king was forced to retire by the gallantry of the citizens, no less than by the succour of Lucullus. On the other hand, Fonteius Capito,\(^4\) once Governor of Asia, was acquitted, on its being discovered that there was no foundation for the charges trumped up against him by Vibius Serenus.\(^4\) Yet Serenus came to no harm thereby: he was protected by the public execration. For the more aggressive accusers enjoyed a kind of inviolability; it was the insignificant and ignoble that were punished.

About this time an embassy arrived from Further Spain, craving permission from the Senate to set up a temple\(^5\) to Tiberius and his mother, as had been done in Asia. Now Tiberius had no weakness for distinctions of any sort; and thinking it well to take this opportunity of contradicting rumours which attributed to him vain-glorious leanings, he addressed the Senate in this fashion:—

\(^1\) An ancient but honorary office, held only during the absence of the consuls at the Feriae Latinae. It had nothing to do with the permanent office instituted by Augustus, vi. 11, where see n.

\(^2\) This shews that the worship of a deified emperor, usually a voluntary homage on the part of the city undertaking it, could not be intermitted with impunity.

\(^3\) C. Fonteius Capito was consul A.D. 12; he seems to have been appointed to Asia on the disqualification of the Flamen Maluginensis in A.D. 22 (iii. 71, 3).

\(^4\) No doubt the son; see chap. 28, 1.

\(^5\) This request from Spain was probably in gratitude for the condemnation of Vibius Serenus (the father) on a charge of vis publica during his Spanish command (chap. 13, 2); just as the Asian cities decreed a temple to Tiberius and Augusta (chap. 15, 4) in consequence of the condemnation of C. Silanus and Lucilius Capito for misgovernment.
3 I am aware, Conscript Fathers, that my consistency is challenged by some, in that lately I did not refuse a like request from the cities of Asia. I will explain, therefore, my acquiescence upon that occasion, and announce, at the same time, my purpose for the future.

4 The Divine Augustus did not forbid the erection of a temple to himself and to the Roman people at Pergamum. Observing, as I do, everything that he said or did as a law unto myself, I followed the example thus approved, and with all the greater readiness that veneration of the Senate was conjoined with worship of myself. To have accepted such an honour once, may be excused; but to permit my statue to be worshipped as divine in all the provinces, would be arrogant and vain-glorious. And the homage to Augustus will be gone, if it be made common by undiscriminating adulation.

38. 1 I call you to witness, Conscript Fathers, and I desire posterity to remember, that I am but a mortal, discharging the duties of a man: content if I may fill the highest place worthily. Enough, and more than enough, will men render to my memory, if they shall believe me worthy of my ancestors, thoughtful for your interests, unflinching in danger, undaunted by the enmities which I encounter in the public service. These shall be my temples in your hearts, my fairest and most enduring images. For

---

1 This temple to Augustus was built in B.C. 29: see chap. 55, 6, and i. 10, 5. It is figured on coins. Other temples were dedicated to him at Nicomedia and Ancyra. Suetonius and Dio both assert that Augustus would allow no temples to be set up to himself except in the provinces, and then only in conjunction with Rome. Yet inscriptions shew that even in Italy some forms of private worship of Augustus were permitted during his lifetime. The building of a temple to him in Tarraco in A.D. 15 (i. 78, 1) is spoken of as an exemplum, because it was dedicated to Augustus alone. For Pergamum, see chap. 55, 6, and iii. 63, 3.

2 Tacitus here suggests that the temple to Augustus at Pergamum was a solitary instance of the divine worship of that emperor; and that Tiberius never accepted it but in the case of the cities of Asia. But see, n. to i. 57, 2. The historian nowhere expresses disgust at such worship; in the present instance he seems rather to side with those who thought Tiberius guilty of pusillanimity in declining the proffered honour (chap. 38, 5 and 6).

3 The sober mind of Tiberius took a higher and juster view of the opinion of
stone-built monuments, if posterity turn her judgment into hate, are but dishonoured sepulchres. I pray therefore to our allies and fellow citizens, I pray the Gods themselves: these last, to grant me unto the end a tranquil spirit, alive to the rights of Gods and men; the former, that when I pass away, they may honour my life and name with praise and kindly recollection. 1

To this attitude he held fast thereafter, repudiating, even in conversation, any such worship of himself. Some put this down to modesty; some to want of self-confidence; others called it poverty of spirit. The noblest of mankind, these said, had ever the loftiest hopes; it was thus that Hercules and Liber among the Greeks, Quirinus among ourselves, had been ranked among the Gods. Augustus had done better in not putting the hope away. All else Princes had ready to their hand; but there was one end which they should pursue unalteringly: to leave a fair name behind them. For to despise Fame is to despise Virtue.

Meanwhile Sejanus, goaded on by a woman's passion—for Livia kept on clamouring for the promised marriage—indited a memorial to the Emperor; since it was the custom in those days to approach him by writing, even when he was present in the city. The letter ran as follows:—

posterity than did his critics, as recorded below in section 6. It was not those emperors who were most anxious to assume divine honours during their lifetime that were most honoured after their death. 1 If this speech, or anything like it, was indeed delivered by Tiberius, it must rank as one of the noblest and most dignified utterances ever made by a great sovereign; if its sentiments were his own, they would suffice to cover a multitude of sins. Though its perfect and balanced rhetoric has a savour of artificiality about it, the ideas it expresses are entirely in accordance with the character of Tiberius. Suetonius tells us: Ex plurimis maximisque honoribus prater paucos et minimos non receptit ... Tempia, flamines, sacerdotes decerni sibi prohibuit (Tib. 96). Tacitus does not insinuate that the speech was insincere; but he is anxious to shew that it made little or no impression, and to suggest that Tiberius, even in his virtues, was un-human. The allusion to Hercules, Liber, and Quirinus is borrowed almost literally from Horace (Odes iii. 3, 9-16), and doubtless represents the current feeling of the day, which sympatized with these divine claims as testifying to the greatness of the empire.
The indulgence of the Emperor's father Augustus, the many marks of favour which he had received from Tiberius himself, had accustomed him to address his hopes and prayers not sooner to the ears of the Gods themselves, than to those of the Princeps. He had never craved the glitter of distinctions; he had preferred to watch and toil, like any common soldier, for the Emperor's safety; and yet he had attained the highest honour of all—to be deemed worthy to be allied with Caesar. Hence his present hope. He had heard it said that Augustus, in marrying his daughter, had bethought him of a Roman knight;¹ in like manner, if a husband were now sought for Livia, might not account be taken of a friend who could reap nothing from the alliance save its glory? He had no wish to put off the burdens laid upon him: sufficient for him to be protected in his home against the bitter enmity of Agrippina, and that for his children's sake; for himself, to have lived under such a Prince was enough, and more than enough.

40. ¹ Tiberius, in his reply, commended the loyalty of Sejanus; and recounting briefly the favours he had himself conferred on him, asked for time, as though the question were still open. He then added:—

Others had but their own interests to consider; it was not so with an Emperor, who in matters of state must shape his course in view of public opinion. He would not, therefore, resort to the obvious answer that Livia could decide for herself whether she should marry again, now that Drusus was dead, or live on in his home; or that she had a mother and a grandmother² to advise her, counsellors nearer than himself. He would use greater frankness. First then, there was the hostility of Agrippina to be considered. The marriage of Livia would but add fresh fuel

¹ This is confirmed by Suet. Oct. 63: ² Antonia and Augusta. see chap. 40, 8.
to that hostility; it would, so to say, rend in two the family of the Caesars. Even as it was, the rivalry between the women could not be kept under; his own grandsons were torn asunder by it. What if the proposed marriage were to aggravate these dissensions?

For you are mistaken, Sejanus, he proceeded, if you think you could remain in your present station; or that Livia—once the wife of Gaius Caesar, and again of Drusus—will be minded to grow old as the consort of a Roman knight. And even were I to allow it, do you suppose that it would be tolerated by those who have seen her brother, her father, and our common ancestors, filling the highest offices of state? Your desire, doubtless, is to remain what you are; but these magistrates and nobles who break in upon you against your will, and seek counsel from you on every matter, complain, in no secret fashion, that you have long ago risen above the position of a knight, and far above any of my father's friends: and out of ill-will towards you, they cast reflections on me also. Augustus, you say, thought of giving his daughter to a Roman knight. But is it so very wonderful if, when he was distracted by divers cares, and foresaw to what a pinnacle that man would be lifted whom he should exalt by such an alliance, he talked of Gaius Proculeius¹ and others noted for their quiet lives, and for having taken no part in public affairs? But if we are to be moved by the doubts of Augustus, how much more weighty is the fact that he gave his daughter first to Marcus Agrippa,² and then to me?

¹ Proculeius is well known from Hor. Od. ii. 9, 5.

Vivit extenso Proculeius aev
Notus in fratres animi paterni.

One of his brothers was Varro Murena, who conspired against Augustus, B.C. 22; Terentia, wife of Maecenas, was his sister.

² According to Dio 54. 6, 5, Maecenas gave Augustus a sinister reason for determining his choice of a new husband for Julia. Agrippa, he declared, had reached such a pitch of power that he must either make him his son-in-law or put him to death. Whatever the truth about the relations between Augustus and Agrippa may
All this I say to you frankly, as your friend; but I will not oppose your purposes, or those of Livia. What projects I have turned over in my own mind; by what further ties I am preparing to bind you to myself, I will forbear for the present to disclose. This only will I permit myself to say, that there is no place too high for your merits, and your devotion to myself; and when the proper time shall come, whether in the Senate, or before the public, I shall not fail to speak.

41. 1 This letter alarmed Sejanus, suggesting, as it did, some graver peril than the failure of his marriage project; and in his reply he implored the Emperor to disregard the secret suspicions, the popular rumours and the ill-will, that were ever gathering against himself. Then as he was afraid either to close his doors to the daily stream of visitors, lest he should lose influence thereby, or to keep them open, lest he should afford a handle to accusers, he conceived the idea of inducing Tiberius to take up his abode in some pleasant spot at a distance from the city. This plan, he foresaw, would have many advantages. Access to the Emperor’s person would be in his own control; he would have command, to a large extent, of his correspondence, which had to be conveyed by soldiers; as the Emperor grew old and indolent in retirement, he would be more inclined to delegate the business of government. The feeling against himself would die down with the cessation of his crowded receptions; and some sacrifice of the empty signs of power would strengthen his hold upon the reality. He began therefore to deliver diatribes against town-life, with its business, its crowds, its hosts of persons seeking interviews, and to sing the praises of a life have been, it is certain that Tiberius found himself in an exactly similar position in relation to Sejanus.
of peace and solitude, free from weariness and offence, in which chief attention might be given to the most important affairs.

It so happened that just at the time when Tiberius was hesitating, a trial took place which convinced him that he would do well to avoid attending meetings of Senate, where remarks that had been made about him, as offensive as they were true, might be flung in his face.¹ For when Votienuis Montanus, a man of distinguished ability, was accused of vilifying the Emperor, one of the witnesses, a soldier called Aemilius, in his anxiety to prove his case, recounted every detail; sticking firmly to his assertions in spite of the murmurs of the audience. Tiberius was so disturbed to hear how he was abused behind his back, that he cried out he must vindicate his character at once, or at any rate during the course of the proceedings; and all the entreaties of his friends, added to the adulation of the whole assembly, scarce restored him to composure. Votienuis suffered the penalty for his treason. But this only seemed to make Tiberius the more determined to exercise that vindictiveness towards accused persons which was attributed to him; for he inflicted banishment on Aquilia, accused of adultery with Varius Ligur, although the Consul Designate, Lentulus Gaetulicus, had only convicted her under the Julian Law; and he caused the name of Apidius Merula to be struck off the roll of senators, because he had not sworn obedience to the acts of Augustus.

¹ This passage, if compared with the original (from ac forte to ingerebantur), affords a good instance of the changes both in order and construction which a translator is often compelled to make in rendering a Latin sentence into English. The order and the construction which come easily and naturally in the Latin periodic style would be outrageously clumsy and complicated in English.

² Thus reversing his action in ii. 50, 4, where he would not allow the harsher law to be enforced. Exile involved loss of citizenship; relegatio did not.

³ On the milder penalties of the Julian Law, see ii. 50, 2.

⁴ See n. on i. 72, 2.
43. 1 Audience was now given to embassies from the Lacedaemonians and the Messenians with regard to their claims to the temple of Diana of the Marshes.\(^\text{1}\) The Lacedaemonian contention, supported by historical records and ancient poems, was that the temple had been dedicated by their ancestors, and in their territory; that it had been forcibly taken from them by Philip of Macedon, in the course of war,\(^\text{2}\) but had afterwards been restored by a judgment of Julius Caesar and Marcus Antonius. The Messenians, on their side, pleaded the original division of the Peloponnesus among the descendants of Hercules, when the territory of Denthalia, in which the temple lay, had been assigned to them. This, they maintained, was proved by inscriptions still extant, both in stone and bronze; if the testimony of poets and historians were appealed to on the other side, there were more of such witnesses, with more trustworthy testimony, upon theirs;  

2 Philip's decision had been no arbitrary judgment, but one founded on the merits of the case; it had been confirmed by the King Antigonus,\(^\text{3}\) by the Roman Imperator Mummius,\(^\text{4}\) by the Milesians, to whom the matter was publicly submitted for arbitration;\(^\text{5}\) and lastly by

---

\(^{1}\) This famous temple took its name from the town of Limnae, situated on the right bank of the Nedon, to the W. of Mount Taygetus. The town marked the confines between Laconia and Messenia; sacrifices were offered there by both peoples in common; and the first Messenian War (B.C. 743 to 728) was caused by the murder at this place of the Spartan king Teleclus. The ager Dentheliates, named below, was on the left bank of the river Nedon, opposite to Limnae.  

\(^{2}\) In B.C. 237, after the battle of Chaeronea, Philip invaded the Peloponnesus. He received the submission of the Messenians and of almost all the other inhabitants except the Spartans, who sullenly held out. His natural policy therefore would be to enrich the Messenians at the expense of Sparta.  

\(^{3}\) Antigonus Doson, king of Macedon, B.C. 229 to 221. He supported the Achaeans in a war against Cleomenes, king of Sparta, defeated Cleomenes, and captured Sparta. He also would naturally take an anti-Spartan line about the temple.  

\(^{4}\) L. Mummius established the province of Achaia after the capture of Corinth, B.C. 146, and settled its affairs on a permanent basis.  

\(^{5}\) This reference to a public arbitration entrusted to the city of Miletus has been most happily confirmed by the discovery of an inscription on the base of the famous statue of Victory by Paeonius at Olympia, which records the whole transaction. The case was
Atidius Geminus,¹ the Roman governor of Achaia. Judgment was accordingly given in favour of the Messenians.

The people of Segesta petitioned for the restoration of the temple of Venus on Mount Eryx,² now fallen into ruins; repeating the well-known story of its origin. This pleased Tiberius, who gladly undertook the work on the ground of kinship.

Next came a petition from the people of Massilia in regard to the will of a certain exile, Vulciatus Moschus, who had been admitted to citizenship by the Massilians, and had left his property to that state as his own country. In support of this claim the case of Publius Rutilius was quoted, who after being sentenced to exile, had been admitted to citizenship by the Smyrnaeans. The precedent was admitted and the petition granted.

Two men of noble birth died in this year—Gnaeus Lentulus³ and Lucius Domitius.⁴ Besides having held


¹ Nothing is known of this officer or of his governorship.

² This was the famous Temple of Aphrodite on Mt. Eryx (Monte S. Gugliano), near Drepanum (Trapani), on the extreme W. point of Sicily. It was one of the many temples dedicated to the goddess on high promontories overlooking the sea (as at Ancona) which were connected with the legend of Aeneas and the tale of the Trojan origin of Rome. See Seely on Livy, i. p. 20. Virgil ascribes the foundation of the temple to Aeneas himself (Aen. v. 759); and the Segestans, in whose territory it stood, claimed a Trojan origin. Hence Tiberius deems himself consanguineus. Thucydides says the temple was rich in gold and silver plate; which the Segestans, however, had borrowed to deceive the Athenian envoys (vi. 46, 3). It was held in high honour by Roman governors; but is not mentioned by any historian after Tacitus. Substructions of the old temple can still be seen under the modern castle.

³ See n. on chap. 39, 1.

⁴ Three generations of the distinguished family of Domitii Ahenobarbi are here mentioned: (1) The grandfather, L. Domitius Ahenobarbus, consul B.C. 54, was a champion of the Optimates, and a bitter opponent of Caesar throughout his life. He fell at Pharsalus in command of the left wing. (2) His son Gnaeus was taken with his father at Corinium, B.C. 49, was pardoned by Caesar, joined the Liberators, and held the sea with a fleet in their interests. He made peace with Antony in B.C. 40, was consul in B.C. 32, and went over to Octavianus, in disgust, shortly before Actium. Suetionius describes him as omnibus gentibus sui praeclarus (Nero 3). (3) Lucius, son of No. 2, whose death is here recorded. He was betrothed to Antonia (daughter of Antony by Octavia) at the meeting between Antony and Octavianus at Tarentum, B.C. 36. Suetionius calls
the Consulship and gained Triumphant honours over the Gaetae, Lentulus was honourably known for having borne poverty with patience, and for having afterwards honestly acquired, and modestly enjoyed, a large fortune. Domitian was distinguished on various grounds. His father had kept command of the seas during the civil war, until he went over first to Antonius, and afterwards to Augustus. His grandfather had fallen for the senatorial cause on the field of Pharsalus. He himself had been chosen to be the husband of the younger Antonia, \(^1\) daughter of Octavia; after that, he had conducted an expedition across the Elbe; and having penetrated into Germany further than any of those before him, \(^8\) had gained for that success the honours of a Triumph.

Another death was that of Lucius Antonius, a man of illustrious birth, but unfortunate in his career. His father, Iulus Antonius, \(^9\) had suffered death for adultery with Julia; and though he was a mere lad at the time, and great-nephew to Augustus, that Emperor sent him into retirement at Massilia, where he was to conceal, under the name of study, the fact of exile. All honour, however, was paid to his remains; and his ashes, by decree of the Senate, were laid in the sepulchre of the Octavii.

45. \(^1\) In this same year an atrocious crime was committed in Further \(^4\) Spain, by a rustic belonging to the tribe

\(^1\) Tacitus seems to make a mistake in calling her \textit{minor}, both here and in xii. 64. 4. Suetonius correctly calls her \textit{Antonia maior}, making \textit{Antonia minor} the wife of Drusus (Cal. 1, Nero, 5).

\(^2\) Dio mentions this exploit, lv. ro, 2. Domitian was in command on the Danube at the time, and set up an altar to Augustus on the Upper Elbe.

\(^3\) Son of Mark Antony by Fulvia. He was married to Marcella (daughter of Octavia), who had previously been married to Agrippa, and was divorced by him B.c. 21, to enable him to marry Julia.

\(^4\) \textit{i.e.} Tarraconensis. See n. on chap. 5, 2.
of the Termestini. Lucius Piso, the Praetor of the Province, was travelling in time of peace, and without thought of danger, when he was suddenly attacked on the road, and killed by a single blow. The assassin, being well mounted, made off; on reaching the hills, he turned his horse loose, and taking to some precipitous impracticable country, eluded his pursuers. But it was not for long; for the horse being caught and taken round the adjoining villages, the discovery of the owner followed. On being put to the torture to reveal his associates, the man cried out in his native tongue that it was idle to interrogate him:—*his comrades might stand by and look on: no amount of pain would wring the truth from him*. Next day, as he was being dragged back to be tortured a second time, he broke loose from his guards, and dashed his head with such violence against a rock that he was killed on the spot. The general belief was that Piso had been the victim of a plot laid by the Termestini, as he had been exacting repayment of certain moneys embezzled from the public treasury with a strictness intolerable to barbarians.

---

1 This Piso was the elder of the two young Pisos to whom, along with their father, Horace addressed the Ars Poetica; and therefore son of the *praefectus urbis* spoken of so handsomely by Tacitus (vi. 10, 3). The authority for this identification is the Scholiast Porphyrius, who, on line 24 of the A. P. (*pater et iuvenes patre digni*) has this note: *L. Piso custos, id est praefectus urbis, nam et ipse Piso poeta fuit et studiorum liberar-"lum antistes*. The elder of the two sons is thus addressed by Hor. A. P. 366:

---

Immediately after the death of Piso, a very distinguished and ancient family, the Licinius, was adopted by M. Licinius Crassus, cos. B.C. 14.

---

2 This seems to refer not to Piso's own exactions, but to his interfering to prevent illegal appropriations of local funds by the local authorities. Germanicus interfered in a similar way in Bithynia (ii. 54, 2).
Triumphal ornaments were voted in this year to Poppaeus Sabinus for crushing some Thracian tribes who, inhabiting a hill-country, were specially wild and intractable. The cause of the rising, besides their own turbulent temper, was that they could not endure the system of conscription, under which their best men were drafted into our armies. Even to their own kings they only rendered such obedience as they chose; and if they did furnish them with contingents, they would appoint their own officers, and fight only against their neighbours. A report had gained ground that they were to be scattered, mixed up with men of other nationalities, and sent off to distant countries. Before taking up arms, they sent envoys to give assurances of their friendliness and loyalty:—In these they would stand firm, they said, if no new burdens were laid upon them; but if they were to be enslaved as a conquered people, they had their swords, and their brave young hearts determined to be free or die. With this they pointed to their strong-holds, perched on rocks, into which

1 This Cn. Cornelius Lentulus Gaeticus (see chap. 42, 3) and his elder brother Cossus Cornelius (chap. 34, 1), were both sons of Cn. Cornelius Lentulus, cos. B.C. 1, who gained the name Gaeticus for subsequent victories in Africa. Velleius notices that he passed on the title to his son, adultescens in omnium virtutum exempla geniti (ii. 116, 2); and Juvenal picks out the father, along with D. Silanus (Ann. iii. 24, 1) as examples of men of noble birth whom he was proud to salute for their virtues (viii. 26).

2 C. Calvisius Sabinus, accused, and apparently acquitted, of maestias, A.D. 26 (vi. 9, 5), was legatus of Pannonia under Caligula; was again accused, and committed suicide.

3 Poppaeus Sabinus was grandfather of the celebrated Poppaea, wife of Nero. He was cos. A.D. 9; was appointed to the great imperatorial province of Moesia by Augustus, probably in A.D. 11; and was continued in that post by Tiberius, with the addition of Achaia and Macedonia. Tacitus quotes him as an example of Tiberius' preference for competent mediocrities: he kept Poppaeus in command of great provinces for 24 years quod par negotiis neque supra erat (vi. 39, 3). On the difficulties in the way of supposing that Poppaeus was in command of Moesia for so long as 24 years, see Furn.'s note on the above passage.

4 See n. on iii. 42, 1.
they had gathered their parents and their wives; and threatened a harassing, arduous and sanguinary war.

To this message Sabinus, waiting to collect his 47. 1 forces, returned a gentle answer; but no sooner was he joined by Pomponius Labeo with a legion from Moesia, and by King Rhoemetalces with his native auxiliaries, who had remained true to Rome, than he marched with these and his own troops against the enemy, who had taken up a position in a narrow mountain pass. Some of their number venturing to show themselves openly on the hill-side, Sabinus attacked them in force, and dislodged them without difficulty; but as their place of retreat was close at hand, he could inflict but little loss upon them. He then established a fortified camp upon the 2 spot, and occupied strongly a long even ridge running right up to an adjacent fort, which was defended by a strong body of the enemy, part of them fully armed, part irregulars. In the front of their lines could be seen 3 some bolder than the rest, singing and dancing after the manner of their tribe. Against these Sabinus sent a picked body of bowmen, who wounded many of the enemy without loss to themselves, so long as they 4 kept at a distance; but advancing too close, they were routed by a sudden sally from the fort, and had to fall back upon a Sigambrian cohort, placed so as to be ready in case of need, which met the barbarians with cries and clashing of arms as savage as their own.

The camp was then moved close up to the enemy, 48. 1 the former works being left in charge of the Thracians whom I have mentioned as fighting on our side.

---

1 See n. on ii. 26, 3. As in other mixed empires, it would be part of Roman policy to garrison one country with troops raised in another. Cp. the present practice of Austria; also of Italy, where the southern provinces are mostly garrisoned by troops from the north.

2 i.e. the camp mentioned chap. 47, 3.

3 i.e. in chap. 47, 1.
These were permitted to ravage, burn, and plunder, provided only that their ravaging was done during the day, and that they kept careful watch over the camp by night. This order at first they obeyed; but before long, giving themselves up to enjoyment, and enriched by plunder, they took to revelling and feasting, neglected to guard their outposts, and stretched themselves on the ground overcome by sleep and wine.

Discovering their carelessness, the enemy got ready two detachments, one of which was to attack the plundering party, while the other was to assail the camp; not indeed with any expectation of capturing it, but in the hope that the shouting and the din of arms, and care for their own safety, might so take up every man's attention, that none would hear the noise of the other engagement. To add to the terror of the attack, it was to be made by night. The assault on the Roman lines was repelled with ease; but the Thracian auxiliaries, some of whom were lying along the ramparts, while many were wandering about outside, were terrified by the suddenness of the onset, and were cut down without mercy: the enemy taunting them with being renegades and deserters, who had taken up arms for their own and their country's enslavement.

Next day Sabinus drew up his army in the open, hoping that the success of the night attack might tempt the barbarians to accept battle. But when they declined to come down from the fort and the adjacent heights, he began a regular siege, establishing fortified posts in suitable positions, and connecting these by a ditch and palisade embracing a circuit of four miles. Drawing his lines gradually closer and closer in, so as to cut off the enemy's supplies of water and

Siege of Thracian fort.
forage, he built up also a high mound, from which stones, spears, and firebrands might be hurled against the enemy, now within easy reach. What distressed the garrison most was want of water; the whole multitude of fighting men and non-combatants had but one spring left. The horses and cattle, according to barbarian fashion,¹ had been shut up along with them, and were dying for want of fodder; alongside lay the bodies of those who had died of their wounds, or for want of water; all was foul with stench, rottenness, and contagion.

To crown their misfortunes, dissension broke out in their ranks. One party was for surrender; another proposed that they should die by each other's hands; others again that they should make a dash for it, and sell their lives dearly. This last proposal was opposed, not only by the common sort, but also by an aged chief of the name of Dinis, who had learned from long experience the power and the generosity of Rome. *In their present plight,* he said, *there was no help for it but to lay down their arms.* He set the example himself by surrendering with his wife and children to the conquerors; all who were of feeble age or sex, or who preferred life to honour, did the same.

The younger men were divided between the counsels of Tarsa and Turesis. Both were resolved not to survive their liberty; but Tarsa wished to make short work of it, and crying out that they should be done with hope and fear alike, showed the way by plunging a sword into his own breast. Many followed his example. Turesis, with his followers, ⁵

¹ Professor Lanciani shows how in early Italian towns, such as Antemnae, and the first settlement on the Palatine, space was included inside the walls for the cattle, which were driven in from their pastures at night. Each family was provided with an agellus and a sheepfold ("Ruins and Excavations," pp. 112, 113).
waited for the fall of night. Aware of his designs, the Roman General strengthened his pickets. The night came on black and stormy: raising wild cries at one moment, keeping absolute silence at another, the enemy threw the besiegers into perplexity. Sabinus went round warning his men not to allow confused noises, or a craftily preserved silence,¹ to afford opportunity for a surprise:—*Every man was to stand unflinchingly to his post, and abstain from aimless discharge of missiles.*

51. 1 By this time the barbarians were trooping down the slope. They assailed the entrenchments with such stones as they could lift, with stakes burnt at the tip, and with trunks of trees. Some filled up the fosse with faggots, hurdles, and dead bodies; others, bringing up gangways and ladders which they had ready, laid them against the breastwork, clutched hold of it, tore it down, and engaged in a hand-to-hand fight with the defenders. Our men drove the enemy off with missiles, shoved them back with their shields, and hurled down upon them ponderous siege javelins, or showers of heavy stones. The one side were spurred on by victory already won, or by shame at the thought of yielding; the other drew fresh courage from the extremity of their peril, and the cries of wives and mothers standing by. The darkness which emboldened the one party was a terror to the other; blows fell at random, wounds came none knew whence, none could tell friend from foe: and such was the confusion wrought by an echo which carried what seemed to be the sound of voices from behind, that the Romans abandoned one part of their defences, believing that they had been forced. But only a very

¹ The words *simulacionem quietis* are untranslateable, because the idea is strained and false. The *silence* could not be *simulated,* though the attacking force might keep silence to conceal its numbers or its presence.
few of the enemy found their way in, after all. The boldest were all killed or wounded; the remainder were driven back at daybreak into their hill-fort, and compelled at last to surrender. The inhabitants of the neighbouring districts submitted voluntarily; but the severe and early winter which set in upon Mount Haemus made it impossible to reduce the remainder either by assault or siege.

Meantime at Rome, in the disturbed condition of the Imperial house, the way was prepared for the future ruin of Agrippina by the prosecution of her cousin Claudia Pulchra. Her accuser was Domitius Afer, who had been Praetor not long before, a man held in little esteem, and ready to commit any kind of crime in his hurry for distinction. The charge was that of adultery with Furnius, and of having attempted the Emperor's life by poison and incantations. Always hot-headed, Agrippina was infuriated by the peril of her kinswoman, and went straight to Tiberius. She found him in the act of sacrificing to his father; and making this the text for her reproaches, she proceeded in this wise:—

It was not of a piece, she said, to be slaughtering victims to the Divine Augustus, and to be at the same time persecuting his descendants. That divine spirit had not passed into dumb images; she was his true image, born of his divine blood; and yet she now found herself menaced, and had to take to herself the garb of a suppliant. It was idle to make a pretext of Pulchra; Pulchra's one and only crime was that she had attached herself, poor fool! to Agrippina, forgetting how Sosia had been struck down for a like offence.

1 This relationship is not clearly made out; but Claudia Pulchra is supposed to have been daughter of Marcella major, daughter of Octavia.  
2 See chap. 19, 1.
These words had the rare effect of drawing a
retort from that close-locked breast. Interrupting
her with a Greek quotation, Tiberius reminded her
that it was no grievance that she did not reign.¹ Pulchra
and Furnius were condemned. The ability displayed
by Afer in this persecution, followed by the remark of
Tiberius that Afer was a born orator, placed him in
the front rank of public speakers; and from that time
forward he enjoyed a high reputation as an advocate,
whether in accusation or defence. For his character,
he was less esteemed; and in extreme old age, he lost
much of his eloquence also. For though his powers
failed him, he was unable to resign himself to
silence.²

53. 1 But Agrippina abated nothing of her resentment.
When Tiberius came to see her, on the occasion of
some illness,³ she received him with an outburst of
tears, and for a time said nothing; then beginning in
a tone of mixed entreaty and reproach, she implored
him to take pity on her lonely state, and find a husband
for her. She was still young and active, she said, and
an honest woman could find no comfort save in marriage.
There were plenty of men in Rome who would deem it an
honour to take to their homes the wife and children of
Germanicus. Tiberius saw all the significance of such
a demand; but not wishing to evince either resentment

¹ Suetonius tells this same story, Tib.
53. The words he puts into the
emperor's mouth are Si non dominaris,
filiola, iniuriam te accipere est enim.
² Whatever use Domitius Afer may
have made of his talents, he was re-
garded as one of the first orators of his
time. Quintilian says of him, Eorum
(sc. oratorum) quos viserim, Domitius
Afer et Julius Africanus longe prae-
siantissimi: verborum arte ille et toto
genere dicendi praeferendus, et quem in
numero veterum habere non timeas (Inst.
x. i, r78). Like Tacitus, Quint. also
attributes to him the foible of the Arch-
bishop of Toledo: vidi — summum
oratorem Domitium Afrum valde senem
quodidem illud ex ea quam meruerat
auctoritate perdendum; the man who
had been once without dispute princeps
fori, came to be laughed at and blushed
for: people said of him malle eum
deficere quam desinere (Inst. xii. 11, 3).
³ The phrase here used—morbo cor-
poris implicata—is one of the few dis-
inctly pedantic phrases used by Tacitus.
It merely means that she was unwell;
or perhaps confined to the house. Cp.
leto veneno illigaret (vi. 3a, 3).
or apprehension, he left her without an answer, in spite of her importunity. This anecdote, which is not related by the historians, I have found in the memoirs of Agrippina the younger, the mother of Nero, who left behind her a record of her own life and of the fortunes of her family.

Taking advantage of Agrippina's distress, and her unsuspecting nature, Sejanus now dealt her a more deadly blow, by sending emissaries to warn her, as if in friendship, to beware of poison; and to avoid eating in her father-in-law's house. Incapable of dissimulation, she put on a face of stone as she reclined next to the Emperor at table: saying nothing, and tasting nothing. Tiberius at last noticed it; perhaps his attention was directed to it. To bring the matter to a point, he commended some apples which happened to be on the table; and with his own hand offered them to his daughter-in-law. This confirmed her suspicions; she passed on the apples untaught to the attendants. Tiberius said nothing before the company; but turning to his mother, he remarked that no one could wonder if he were to take strong measures against one who insinuated that he was a

1 This reference is of great importance. It is one of the two sources of information specifically named by Tacitus in Ann. i.-vi. : the other being C. Plinius, historian of the German wars (l. 69, 3). It would be impossible to imagine a more prejudiced and poisoned source of information than the memoirs of such a woman as Nero's mother, compiled for publication (suorum posteris). They would probably contain every piece of foul court scandal, exaggerated and twisted to suit the temporary purposes of perhaps the most ambitious and conscienceless woman of the early imperial times. See Furn. Introd. p. 10, foll. Plin. quotes these same memoirs (H. N. vii. 8, 6). Mr. Tarver, in 'Tiberius the Tyrant,' makes too much of this reference.

He founds upon it the theory that diaries like that of Agrippina, compiled by malignant enemies of Tiberius, were the main authorities used by Tacitus for Annals i.-vi. A different view may be taken. The pointed and exceptional reference to Agrippina's memoirs may be regarded as a proof that Tacitus did not as a rule use evidence of that kind. The incident strikes him as natural and probable, and he therefore mentions it; but as it is not recorded by the annalists whom he usually follows, he gives us his authority, that we may take the story for what it is worth.

8 Suetonius tells the same story, adding that Tiberius never invited Agrippina to his table again.
4 poisoner. Hence a rumour got afloat that her death was resolved upon; but that Tiberius, not venturing to do the deed openly, was casting about for some secret mode of accomplishing it.

55. Meanwhile, to divert public talk, Tiberius attended regularly in the Senate, and listened for several days to deputations from Asia disputing in which city the temple vowed to him should be built. The contest lay between eleven cities of various degrees of importance, all equally anxious for the distinction. The claims were all of a similar kind, based on the antiquity of the cities, or on the services which they had rendered to the Roman people during the wars with Perseus,1 Aristonicus2 and other kings. The towns of Hypaeapa,3 Tralles, Laodiceia, and Magnesia,4 were at once passed over as too insignificant; even the people of Ilium,5 though they could point to Troy as the mother-city of Rome, had nothing to show beyond their illustrious antiquity. Some attention was given to the Halicarnassians,6 because they asserted that their city had not

---

1 Perses or Perseus, the last king of Macedon, B.C. 178 to 168, was finally defeated by Pydna in the latter year by L. Aemilius Paulus. He ended his days in captivity at Alba.
2 Aristonicus, brother of Attalus III. of Pergamum who left his kingdom to the Romans B.C. 133, was a natural son of Eumenes II.; Aristonicus disputed the gift, but after some successes he was defeated and taken prisoner by M. Perperna, B.C. 130, and put to death in Rome in the year following.
3 Hypaeapa was in Lydia, on the S. slope of Mt. Tmolus, near the N. bank of the Cayster. Tralles was in Lydia also, on a plateau at the foot of Mt. Messogis, on the Endon, a tributary of the Maeander. Laodicea ad Lycum was one of six Greek cities of the same name in Asia—four of them founded by Seleucus I. (Nicator) and called after his mother Laodice. It stood on the river Lycus, a tributary of the Maeander, on the borders of Lydia, Caria, and Phrygia. It was founded by Antiochus II. (Theos). Though often destroyed by earthquakes, its situation on the main trade route from Smyrna and Ephesus to the East made it an important commercial centre.
4 Magnesia ad Meandrum is probably meant, not M. ad Sipylum: see ii. 47, 4, and iii. 69, r.
5 The Ilium here mentioned was the Greek Novum Ilium, an Aetolian foundation at Hisarlik, the last of the several cities built (according to Dr. Schliemann and modern archaeologists) upon the site of ancient Troy. Almost destroyed by Fimbria, B.C. 85, it had been restored by Sulla, and was made a free city, exempt from taxes.
6 In the SW. of Caria, opposite to the island Cos; famed as the birthplace of Herodotus and Dionysius the historian, and for its magnificent tomb to King Mausolus—whence the word mausoleum. Some fragments of the sculptures are in the British Museum. The city had been destroyed by Alexander.
been shaken by an earthquake for 1200\(^1\) years, and that the foundations of the temple would be laid on the live rock. The people of Pergamum,\(^6\) it was thought, were favoured enough already in having the temple of Augustus in their city; though that was the very ground on which they based their claim. The Ephesians\(^8\) and Milesians\(^4\) were held to be sufficiently occupied with the worship of Diana and Apollo respectively.

In the end, the discussion lay between the cities of Sardis\(^5\) and Smyrna. The Sardians quoted an Etruscan document\(^6\) as a proof of kinship: their story being that Tyrrenhus and Lydus, the sons of Atys, had divided the nation into two, because of its great numbers; that Lydus had remained with one part in his father's country, while Tyrrenhus had been sent forth to found a new settlement with the other.\(^7\) The two nations, one in Asia, the other in Italy, had been

---

\(^1\) i.e. since the supposed date of its foundation by the Dorians. The city originally was one of the Dorian Hexapolis.

\(^2\) See n. on iii. 63, 3.

\(^3\) Ephesus, on the S. of the Cayster, was chief of the original twelve cities founded by the Ionian migration. Under the Romans it became the main seat of government of the province of Asia, and its most important city, though Pergamum was nominally the capital. All are familiar with the worship of 'Diana of the Ephesians.'

\(^4\) Miletus in Caria, on the Maeander, the most southerly of the twelve Ionian cities; it was famous as the birthplace of the early philosophers Thales, Anaximander and Anaximenes.

\(^5\) Sardis, or Sardes, the famous capital of the Lydian monarchy which ended with Croesus, was on the Pactolus, to the N. of Mt. Tmolus. Herodotus relates how it was at last taken by surprise by Cyrus.

\(^6\) This account of the origin of that mysterious people the Etruscans, first found in Herod. i. 94, repeated here, and referred to by other ancient historians (Dion. Hal. i. 27; Strab. v. a. 2), has given rise to much speculation. The remains of Etruscan art suggest for them an Oriental origin; but their language has never been satisfactorily deciphered, and the problem still awaits solution. Some facts—especially the existence of an Etruscan dominion in the valley of the Po—point to the governing clan Rasena having come down from Rhaetia in the N.; on which view it has been conjectured that the conquering Rasena may have found a Graeco-Oriental population more civilised than themselves in occupation of Middle Italy, amongst whom they settled as conquerors, adopting their language and religion. The mythical dynasty of the Atydaces ended, according to tradition, about B.C. 1221. In any case, it is recognised that the remains of Etruscan art point to an Eastern origin: see Deecke's edition of C. Karl Olfiied Müller's *Die Etrusker*, vol. i. p. 73.

\(^7\) i.e. no doubt the old league of the twelve cities of Etruria before they were conquered by Rome.
called after these two leaders; and the Lydians had still further extended their power by sending out settlers to that part of Greece which soon afterwards took its name from Pelops.\textsuperscript{1} They referred also to charters given them by our generals, to treaties made with us during the Macedonian war, and dwelt upon the richness of their rivers,\textsuperscript{2} the mildness of their climate, and the fertility of the land around their city.

56. 1 On the other side, the Smyrnæan\textsuperscript{3} envoys, after recounting the antiquity of their origin—whether their founder were Tantalus son of Jupiter, or Theseus, also of divine origin, or one of the Amazons—passed on to the point on which they placed most reliance, the services which they had rendered to the Roman people by furnishing them with naval help, not only for wars abroad,\textsuperscript{4} but in Italy also.\textsuperscript{5} They had been the first also to erect a temple to the Roman people, in the Consulship of Marcus Porcius,\textsuperscript{6} at a time when the power of Rome, though no doubt already great, had not yet reached its height; when Carthage was yet standing, and there were still powerful kings in Asia. They produced also the testimony of Lucius Sulla, to the effect that when his army was in the greatest distress from cold and want of clothing,\textsuperscript{7} no

\textsuperscript{1} The Sardians thus claimed Pelops as a Lydian, as does Pindar, OI. i. 37. Others make him a Phrygian.
\textsuperscript{2} \textit{i.e.} the Pactolus and the Hermus, which two rivers unite thirty stadia N. of the city.
\textsuperscript{3} Smyrna occupied the most favoured site in Asia Minor; halfway up the W. coast, in the centre of the Greek cities, at the mouth of the rich valley of the Hermus, and with a spacious and safe harbour under its walls. Sole survivor of the Greek cities on that coast, it remains to-day, as it was in ancient times, the great emporium for the trade between East and West, while Ephesus, its ancient rival, has fallen into total decay.
\textsuperscript{4} Livy specially mentions the services of Smyrna in the war with Antiochus, B.C. 191–188, xxxvii. 16, 1; xxxviii. 39, 11.
\textsuperscript{5} \textit{i.e.} in the social war, B.C. 91, 90. Among the preparations made by Rome to resist the Italians was the collecting of a fleet from cities in Greece and Asia Minor. A decree of the senate of B.C. 78 is still extant bestowing rewards on sea-captains from Asia Minor for services in this war (Momm., vol. iii. p. 507).
\textsuperscript{6} M. Porcius Cato the Censor, Cos. B.C. 195.
\textsuperscript{7} \textit{i.e.} in the first Mithradatic War: probably in B.C. 84, when Sulla, having driven Mithradates out of Greece, was crossing over into Asia, and when the
sooner had this fact been made known at a public meeting in Smyrna, than all present stripped the clothes off their backs, and sent them to our legions.

So when the question was put to the vote, the Senate gave the preference to the Smyrneans. Vibius Marsus moved that a supernumerary Legate should be attached to Manius Lepidus, the Governor of the province, to take charge of the work; and as Lepidus, out of modesty, declined to make the choice himself, an ex-Praetor of the name of Valerius Naso was chosen by lot, and sent out.

And now, at last, Tiberius carried out the project so long entertained, so continually deferred, of retiring into Campania. He made a pretext of dedicating a temple to Jupiter at Capua, and another to Augustus at Nola; but, in reality, he had made up his mind to live away from Rome. Now although following the authority of most writers, I have asserted that his retirement was brought about by the machinations of Sejanus, yet seeing that he continued to live in equal seclusion for six years after Sejanus was put to death, I am more inclined to believe that the idea was his own: his object being to find some place in which he might carry on his cruelties and debaucheries unobserved. Some thought that he had become ashamed of works to Lepidus. In earlier times that office was purely military, the praefectus being commander of the section of engineers attached to the legion.

1 The proconsuls of Asia and Africa were entitled to have three legates each (Dio, liii. 14, 7).
2 See n. on iii. 32, 2.
3 i.e. the province of Asia, which it will be remembered included only the countries on the W. seaboard of what we call Asia Minor.
4 The temple is figured on one of the coins of Smyrna, with Tiberius inside, and the inscription Θεάτου Τιβέριος on the obverse.
5 Valerius Naso would be sent out as praefectus fabrum, or 'master of

Tiberius retires into Campania.

Probable motives for this step.

The idea was his own.
of his personal appearance in his old age. For his figure, though tall, was stooping and ungainly; he was bald on the top of his head; his face was covered with blotches, and usually patched with medicaments. He had led a similar life at Rhodes, avoiding company, and keeping his pleasures out of sight. Others said that he had been driven away by his mother’s imperious temper: he could neither shake her off, nor endure to share his power with her, though that power had come to him as her gift. For when Augustus had thought of bestowing the Empire on Germanicus, who was his own grandson, and universally beloved, he was won over by his wife’s entreaties to adopt Tiberius himself, and make Tiberius adopt Germanicus. Augusta was for ever casting this in his teeth, and demanding of him repayment.

58. 1 He set out with a meagre train of attendants. There was one senator of consular rank among them, Cocceius Nerva, well versed in the law; and besides

the day, unable either to lift the veil which screened Tiberius’ private life, or to penetrate into the causes of his retirement, revenged themselves by asserting as a fact their foulest imaginings. Suetonius revels in detailing the worst stories in regard to the life of Tiberius at Capri, but he makes no such charges in regard to his life at Rhodes; indeed, the account he gives of his mode of living there is inconsistent with their truth. Yet both here, and in i. 4, 4, Tacitus assumes that his life was equally evil in both places. If this were so, why do we hear nothing, from either historian, of similar foul living during the long intervening period in Rome? The fact, doubtless, is that the seclusion of Tiberius during his later years was un-Roman, hateful and unintelligible to the Roman mind; and his contemporaries put the worst possible construction upon it.

1 The well-known statue of Tiberius in the Vatican has every mark of personal beauty and dignity about it; and it would appear to have been a faithful likeness. Suetonius gives a similar account (Tib. 68). He tells us that Tiberius was tall, broad in the chest, and well-proportioned in all his limbs; he stooped in walking, and carried his neck stiffly; he was fair, with hair long behind—a family characteristic; and his face was handsome, subject however to occasional eruptions. But there is an unmistakeable look of evil temper upon the coin figured on the outside of this volume, as well as in the bust of Tiberius in the British Museum, No 5 among the portraits of Roman emperors.

2 So Suet. Tib. 50, matrem Liviam gravatus, velut partes sibi apnas potientiae vindiciam; and Dio lvi. 12: et haud tenuo abe nos et ino oai dòchín, allà kai tìsēthaxi aòtò bòlè. Both Furm. and Tarver suspect that the stories of the quarrels and jealousy between Livia and Tiberius may have been largely taken from the memoirs of Agrippina (see chap. 53, 3).

3 Grandfather of the emperor Nerva. He had been consul some years before, in 44 A.D., and from that time onwards was curator aquærum, a post of high
Sejanus, there was one knight of distinction, Curtius Atticus. The rest were men of letters, mostly Greeks, who were to entertain Tiberius with their conversation. Those learned in the stars reported that he had left Rome under a conjunction of the heavenly bodies which precluded his return: a prophecy which proved fatal to many who took up and spread abroad the inference that the Emperor's end was near at hand. For how could they foresee anything so incredible as that he should of his own free will absent himself from his country for eleven whole years? Time shewed how narrow is the dividing line between science and imposture: how obscure the veil which envelopes truth. That Tiberius would never return to Rome, was no random pronouncement; but the rest they knew not—that he would live on, till extreme old age, in country or seaside places close at hand, sometimes even sojourning under the very walls of the city.

About this time an accident happened to Tiberius which added strength to idle rumours, and gave him cause for increased confidence in the loyalty and staunchness of Sejanus. They were dining at a villa called Spelunca, situated between the sea at Amyclae and the hills of Fundi, inside a natural cave. All of a sudden, the mouth of the cave fell in; stones poured down and crushed some of the attendants; a general panic ensued, and the guests fled. Throwing himself into the interpretation of it. See vi. 22, 5 and 6.

1 Put to death on the accusation of Sejanus, as we learn vi. 10, 2.
2 Suetonius says of Tiberius *artes liberales utriusque generis* (i.e. both in Latin and Greek) *studioissime coluit* (Tib. 70); that he wrote Greek poems, and amused himself by putting reconclite mythological questions to the learned men about him.
3 Thus Tacitus believed in the prophecy; all that was wrong was the accident.
4 See Suet. Tib. 39: *multisque convivari et ministrorum elisis praeter spem evasit*. The fact that Suetonius mentions, in close connection with one another, the three circumstances, (1) the retreat into Campania; (2) the mistaken expectation that Tiberius' end was near; and (3) the accident recorded in this chap., just as Tacitus does, is an indication that both borrowed from a common source.
above the Emperor's person on his knees, hands, and face, Sejanus warded off the falling stones; and in this position he was found by the soldiers who came to the rescue. This incident increased his importance; however sinister the advice he gave, he was now listened to with confidence, as one who took no thought for himself. He affected also a judicial attitude towards the children of Germanicus, suborning persons to play the part of accusers, especially of Nero, who stood next in the succession. The youth was well enough behaved, yet he too often forgot the prudence which circumstances demanded; while his freedmen and clients, hurrying to get power into their hands, kept urging him to show a bold and confident front. That was what the people wanted, they would say, and what the army desired; Sejanus would not dare to move a hand against him, though he could now play alike upon the long-suffering of the old man, and the supineness of the young one.

60. In answer to remarks like these, though not meaning any harm, Nero would let fall petulant and thoughtless remarks, which were caught up by men set to watch him, and reported with exaggerations to Tiberius. The young man was given no opportunity of defence; and he was subjected to various disquieting mortifications. One man would avoid meeting him; another would return his salute, and then turn his back on him; others would begin a conversation with him, and then break it off, while any supporters of Sejanus who might be present would stand by and sneer. And Tiberius would look grimly on, or with a false smile upon his face: for whether the young man spoke or held his peace, his silence and his speech alike were construed into an offence. Night
itself brought him no security; for his waking, his sleeping, his very sighs, were reported by his wife\(^1\) to her mother Livia, and by her communicated to Sejanus. Sejanus even drew Drusus, the brother of Nero, into his plans; holding out to him hopes of the first place if his elder brother, already so much out of favour, were put out of the way. For Drusus had an ugly temper; it was not only a longing for power that incited him, and the hatred usual between brothers, but also jealousy at his mother's partiality for Nero. Yet even in encouraging Drusus, Sejanus plotted how to sow the seeds of his future ruin; for he knew how hot-tempered he was, how fit a subject for treacherous designs.

Two men of distinction died at the close of the 61. \(^1\) year, Asinius Agrippa\(^8\) and Quintus\(^8\) Haterius. The former came of an illustrious, rather than an ancient, family, of which his life was not unworthy; the latter belonged to a senatorial house, and had a high repute for eloquence during his life-time. His reputation, however, has not been sustained by the works which he left behind him. For his successes were due to natural impetuosity,\(^4\) rather than to careful study; and whereas other orators, by dint of thought and labour, have held their own with posterity, the sonorous and fluent eloquence of Haterius perished with him.

---

\(^1\) Julia, daughter of Drusus and Livia (iii. 29, 4). She married afterwards C. Rubellius Blandus (vi. 27, 1). Tacitus evidently means to insinuate that she acted as an accomplice to her mother.  
\(^8\) For Q. Haterius see i. 13, 4; ii. 33, 1; iii. 57, 3.  
\(^8\) Asinius Agrippa was cos. A.D. 25 (chap. 34, 1). He was one of the sons of Asinius Gallus and Vipsania.  
\(^4\) Seneca says his rapidity was such that Augustus used to say, *Haterius noster suflaminandus est* — 'should have the drag put on him' (Exc. Contr., B. 4, pref. § 7).
A.D. 27. CONSULS M. LICINIUS CRASSUS\(^1\) FRUGI AND L. CALPURNIUS PISO.

62. 1 In this year a sudden accident caused a loss of life equal to that of some great battle. The calamity began and ended in a moment. A certain Atilius, a freedman, had put up an amphitheatre at Fidena\(^2\) for the purpose of a gladiatorial exhibition; but he had neither made the foundations sure, nor firmly knitted together the wooden superstructure, being a man who had undertaken the business, not from abundance of means, or to win favour among his townsmen, but merely for sordid gain. Lovers of such shows, of both sexes and of every age, poured in: debarred from such pleasures under Tiberius,\(^3\) they flocked thither in all the greater numbers that the place was so near to Rome. Hence the magnitude of the disaster that followed. For when the huge fabric was densely packed, it suddenly collapsed, part falling inwards, part outwards, carrying headlong with it, or overwhelming, a vast number of persons who were absorbed in watching the games, or were standing around. Those killed outright at the first, bad as their case was, escaped further suffering; more pitiable was the lot of those who, with limbs torn off, were still alive, recognising wife or children by their faces, so

---

1 Nipp. supposes M. Licinius to have been the younger of the two Pisos addressed in the Ars Poetica (see n. on chap. 45, 1), adopted by a Licinius; L. Calpurnius to have been the son of the Cn. Piso who was compelled to change his praenomen (iii. 17, 8).
2 Fidena, more usually in the plural form Fidenae, was an ancient Sabine town five miles from Rome, on the Via Salaria, close to the fine hill on the left bank of the Tiber which forms such a landmark in the scenery near Rome, and on which the modern Castel Giubileo stands.
3 Tiberius hated games of all kinds (i. 54. 3: 76, 6); so did Cicero, who speaks of the necessity of having to attend such shows, for popularity's sake, as one of the greatest bores of life. See ad Fam. vii. 1, where he heartily congratulates his friend Marius on his good fortune in escaping from the weariness, the triviality, and the cruelty of the great games exhibited by Pompey, B.C. 55.
long as daylight lasted, by their cries and lamentations when night came on. The news brought many to the spot, to find brother, or neighbour, or parents, to lament. Even those whose friends and relatives had left their homes for other reasons, were in terror all the same; and so long as the victims remained unidentified, doubt doubled the alarm.

As soon as the removal of the débris began, people rushed upon the dead bodies, kissing and embracing them; and many a dispute took place over some unrecognisable face, if similarity of age or form suggested a mistaken identification. No less than fifty thousand people were either maimed or crushed to death in this disaster. The Senate passed a decree providing that in future no one should be allowed to exhibit gladiatorial games unless he were possessed of at least 400,000 sesterces, or to erect an amphitheatre except on ground of certified solidity. Atlius was sentenced to exile. Immediately after the accident, nobles threw open their houses, providing the injured with medical help and appliances. Plunged in mourning as it was, the appearance of the city during those days recalled the good old times of our forefathers, who after some great battle would give bountiful and kindly aid to the wounded.

Scarcely had this calamity passed out of mind, when the city was visited by a fire of extraordinary fury, which destroyed the whole Caelian quarter.

An absurd exaggeration, which warns us not to trust much in such cases to numbers as given by Roman historians. Suet. Tib. 40 puts the number at 50,000. That a temporary structure in a country village could have held 50,000 spectators, or even 50,000, is incredible. The Coliseum itself, formerly believed capable of holding 98,000, is now calculated to have had room for only half that number. The exaggeration of numbers in Livy’s early books is notorious. For similar exaggerations of numbers in mediaeval times, see Sir J. H. Ramsay’s ‘Anglo-Saxon and Mediaeval Empires,’ Pref. p. vi.

Rome was continually suffering from fires, and the great temples were being continually rebuilt in consequence. See Fried. i. p. 25, T. In vi. 45, 4, we hear of a fire destroying the whole Aventine; on which occasion the emperor showed a generosity as great as on the present occasion.
Men called it an ill-fated year; and the multitude, with their usual habit of finding some one to blame for every chance occurrence, pretended that the Emperor's design of living away from the city had been entered upon against the auspices—a feeling which Tiberius counteracted by distributing money among the sufferers, in proportion to each man's loss.

For this he was thanked in the Senate by its most distinguished members; he gained much popular good-will also by distributing his bounty without respect of persons, not waiting for petitions from relatives, but even inviting applications from persons unknown to himself.

It was further proposed that the Caelian hill should in future be called 'Mons Augustus,' because a statue of Tiberius in the house of a senator Junius had remained uninjured when everything around it was in flames. *The same thing, it was said, had happened to Claudia Quinta,* whose statue, dedicated by our fathers in the temple of the Mother of the Gods, had twice escaped the flames. *The Claudii must be a holy race, well-pleasing to the Gods; some special mark of sanctity should be attached to a spot in which they had shewn to the Emperor so signal a mark of favour.*

It may not be out of place to mention here that originally the Caelian hill was known by the name of Querquetulanus, because of the number of oak trees which flourished there; and that it was called Caelian after Caeles Vibenna, an Etruscan Prince, who, having

---

1 In the year B.C. 304, the vessel conveying the image of Cybele from Pessinus in Phrygia to Rome stuck fast on a shoal in the Tiber. The matron Claudia proved her purity by hauling it off by a rope (Liv. xxix. 14; Ov. Fast. iv. 305 foll.). Hence her statue was set up in the temple of the Mater Deum (Cybele).

2 The legend here followed agrees with that given in the speech of Claudius (Tab. Lug. i. 17), who makes Servius Tullius (or Mastarna) a follower of Caeles, or Caellus, who migrated to Rome, and called the hill after his old chief. According to another version, Caeles helped Romulus against Tatius (Varro. L.L. v. 46; Dion. Hal. ii. 36).
come to the aid of Rome, was allowed to settle on that hill by Tarquinius Priscus, or one of the other kings; for on that point historians are at issue. It is beyond doubt, however, that the strangers settled there in large numbers, occupying also the level ground adjacent to the Forum, whence the Vicus Tuscus took its name.

But while public calamities were thus alleviated by the kindness of the nobles and the munificence of the Emperor, the host of accusers, increasing in numbers and hardihood day by day, relentlessly pursued their way. Varus Quintilius, a man of wealth, and related to the Emperor, was laid hold of by Domitius Afer—the same who had procured the condemnation of Claudia Pulchra, the mother of Varus, not long before. None wondered that one who had been long in want, and had mis-spent his recently-gotten gains, should be girding himself for fresh infamies; but that Dolabella should have associated himself with the prosecution was deemed a marvel. For Dolabella came of a noble house, and was himself connected with Varus; so that he was compassing the ruin of his own caste, and of his own flesh and blood. The Senate, however, stayed proceedings till the Emperor’s return—sole mode of escape for the moment from impending calamities.

Tiberius, meanwhile, had dedicated the temples in Campania; but though he had issued an edict prohibiting any intrusion on his privacy, and had soldiers

---

Varro adds that the Etruscan settlers were brought down to the Vicus Tuscus, in the depression between the Palatine and the Capitol, because their position on the Caelian was too menacing.

1 This Varus Quintilius was a friend of the house of Germanicus. Seneca speaks of his being betrothed to one of the daughters of Germanicus (Cont. iii. 10). The relationship to Tiberius was probably through his mother (see chap. 52, 1). Tacitus mentions the fact in order to heighten the odium of the accusation.

2 See n. on iii. 47, 4. Other instances of Dolabella’s sycophancy are given in that passage, in iii. 69, 1; see also xi. 22, 3 and 10. His relationship to Varus is not known; probably it was through Claudia Pulchra (chap. 52, 1).

3 See chap. 57, 1.
posted to prevent gatherings of townsfolk, he took such an aversion\(^1\) to all towns, municipal or colonial, and indeed to all places on the mainland, that he buried himself in Capreae, an island separated from the promontory of Surrentum by a strait three miles in width. The solitude of the island, I believe, was its main attraction for him; it possesses no harbours, and few places of refuge even for small vessels; no one could land there unobserved by sentinels. Under shelter of a mountain which keeps off cold winds, the climate is mild in winter; in summer, its western exposure, with open sea all round, makes it a charming residence.\(^3\) In front lies what was the most beautiful of all bays, before the burning of Mount Vesuvius changed the aspect of the scene. Tradition has it that those parts were occupied by Greeks, Capreae being inhabited by the Teleboi. It was here that Tiberius now took up his abode, establishing himself in twelve spacious villas,\(^8\) each with a name of its own, and abandoning himself to a life of secret debauch and vicious leisure\(^4\) as entirely as he had hitherto devoted himself to public affairs. His temper\(^5\) was as suspicious as ever, ready to believe anything: a temper which Sejanus used to encourage even before

\(^1\) These words imply a morbid shrinking from public view which would account for the retirement to Capri without calling for the grosser insinuations made in chap. 57, 3.

\(^2\) Tacitus' description of the island is excellent. It lies E. and W.; it is cut in two by a depression in the middle, and rises into high bluffs at either end. The higher of the two is at the E. end, towards Sorrento; here are the so-called remains of the villa of Tiberius.

\(^3\) One was called \textit{Villa Loris} (Suet. 65). Tiberius had no taste for extravagant building (vi. 45, 2); and the meaning probably is that he united in some way and adapted to his use twelve previously existing villas.

\(^4\) After his wont, Tacitus assumes as a fact a charge which has been made more or less conjecturally before (chap. 57, 2 and i. 4, 4).

\(^5\) The use of \textit{sicurpe}, introduced at the beginning of this sentence, betrays animus on the part of Tacitus. What follows (\textit{suspicionem et credendi temeritas}) in no way justifies the preceding charges of \textit{occultiores luxus} and \textit{malum otium}. Nor can the word, as Furn., suggests, apply only to \textit{malum}: the exercise of a suspicious vindictive spirit would be inconsistent with \textit{otium} of any kind, good or bad. The known cruelty of Tiberius would seem to be enough to make Tacitus believe him guilty of all other vices.
he left Rome, and on which he now worked more sedulously than ever. He now made no secret of his designs against Agrippina and Nero; soldiers were put over them to keep a regular record of their correspondence, of their visitors, of everything, open or secret, that they did; persons were even set on to advise them to fly for refuge to the German armies, or to lay hold of the statue of Augustus in the Forum at the most crowded hour of the day, and call the people and Senate to their aid. Such counsels they treated with contempt; but they were charged with entertaining them none the less.

A.D. 28. CONSULS APP. JUNIUS SILANUS AND P. SILIUS NERVA.

This year had a bad beginning, Titius Sabinus, illustrious Roman knight, being dragged off to prison for his devotion to Germanicus. For he had omitted no mark of respect towards his widow and children, visiting them in their home, and attending upon them in public: the one still faithful of all their former following. Having thus earned the hatred of their enemies, no less than the respect of all honest men, he was set upon by four men of praetorian rank—Latinius Latiaris, Porcius Cato, Petitius Rufus, and Marcus Opsius. All four were ambitious of the Consulship;
there was no access to that office save through Sejanus: and the good-will of Sejanus was only to be
3 gained by crime. It was arranged among them that Latiar is, who had some slight acquaintance with
Sabinus, should prepare a trap for him; that the others should be present as witnesses; whereupon
4 a prosecution should be undertaken. Accordingly Latiaris, after letting fall some casual observations,
proceeded to commend Sabinus for his loyalty in not deserting the family in its misfortunes, as others had
done, after having been their friend in prosperity; speaking in high terms of Germanicus, with compas-
5 sion of Agrippina. And when Sabinus—for men’s hearts are soft in time of trouble—burst into tears
and joined in his lamentations, Latiaris launched out openly against Sejanus, denouncing his cruelty,
his arrogance and ambition, and not sparing Tiberius himself in his vituperation. Such conversations,
dealing as they did with forbidden topics, created the semblance of a close friendship between the two;
6 Sabinus would now seek out Latiar is; he became a constant visitor in his house, and confided to him all
his wrongs, as to a most trusty friend.
7
69. 1 The confederates named above then consulted how
2 this sort of talk could be brought within the hearing of
several persons. The place of meeting must have an
appearance of secrecy: if the listeners placed them-
selves behind doors, there would be the risk of their
being seen or heard, or of some chance suspicion
3 being aroused. Choosing therefore a hiding-place as

ex-praetor was burning to gain the con-
sulship; as in days of yore, the neces-
sary distinction could only be gained by
oratory; and the only field for oratory,
as well as the only avenue to imperial
favour, lay through conducting prose-
cutions in the law courts. The detest-
able story which follows shows how
devoid even the noblest Romans seem
to have been of the principle of personal
honour as we understand it. See the
case of Hortalus, ii. 37 and 38, and nn.
there.
dirty as the trick itself was detestable, they hid themselves between the roof and ceiling, and applied their ears to the chinks and crevices. This done, Latiaris finds Sabinus in the street; hurries him off to his house, and to his own room, as if he had some fresh news to tell; and there expatiates on the endless topic of wrongs past and present, piling on the agony with horrors yet to come. Sabinus takes up the tale, and at still greater length; for when once a grievance finds a vent, there is no keeping the torrent back.

The conspirators delayed no longer. They wrote a letter to Tiberius, telling the whole story of the stratagem, and recording their own infamy. Never was Rome so agitated, so terror-stricken. Men kept their counsel even from their nearest; they avoided meeting, or speaking to, their neighbours; they turned from the ear alike of acquaintance and of stranger: they looked round suspiciously on dumb and lifeless things, on the very roofs and walls of houses.

In his message of the 1st of January, after the customary good wishes for the opening year, Tiberius turned upon Sabinus. He accused him of tampering with some of his own freedmen, and of plotting against his life; and in no equivocal terms demanded his punishment. Sabinus was condemned forthwith, and hurried off to execution, muffled in a cloak, and shouting as loudly as a tight grip upon his throat would permit:—See how the New Year comes in! Behold the victims of Sejanus! Wherever his eye fell, or his words carried, men fled and left a solitude: the

---

1 The first of January was a day of joy and congratulation, when vows were offered up for the safety of the emperor and the State.

2 The account of Dio (lviii. 1, 3), compared with Pliny (H. N. vii. 40, 61), would suggest that the charge against Sabinus was more serious than appears from Tacitus; and that evidence was offered of a conspiracy, in which the name of Nero was mixed up. This may be an anticipation of the charge against Nero in A.D. 29 (v. 3, 2).
4 streets, the fora, were deserted. Some came back again to show themselves: afraid because they had appeared to be afraid.

5 What day would be free from executions, men asked, if in the hour of prayer and sacrifice—at the moment when men are wont to abstain even from words of ill omen—the halter and the hangman were to be brought upon the scene? It was not without intent that Tiberius had thus courted public odium; he had done it deliberately and of set purpose, to let people understand that nothing was to prevent newly elected magistrates from opening the doors of prisons as freely as those of shrines and altars.

6 A letter followed from the Emperor, thanking the Senate for having punished a public enemy. He added that he trembled for his life; that he apprehended plots among his enemies; and though he mentioned no name, none doubted that he referred to Nero and Agrippina.

71. 1 Had it not been my plan to record every incident in its own year, I should have liked to anticipate events, and to relate at once how Latinius¹ and Opsiús, and the other authors of this infamous plot, came to their end. Some of them perished after Gaius Caesar came to power; some even in the lifetime of Tiberius. For though Tiberius would not permit any one else to subvert the instruments of his crimes, he frequently grew tired of them himself; when new agents offered themselves for the work, and the old became burdensome, he would throw them over. But how these and other miscreants were punished, I shall relate in due time.

8 Then Asinius Gallus, though Agrippina was the aunt² of his own children, proposed that the Emperor

¹ The accusation of Latinius is recorded vi. 4. 1. When the others met their end is unknown. ² Agrippina was half-sister to Vipsania, the divorced wife of Tiberius, both being daughters of Agrippa by
should be asked to communicate his fears to the Senate, and allow them to be removed. Now there was no one of what Tiberius deemed his virtues which he prized so highly as his dissimulation; he took it very ill therefore that anything should be disclosed which he desired to keep concealed. Sejanus, however, smoothed him down; not from love of Asinius, but because he desired to wait upon the Emperor’s hesitations: well knowing that, though he was slow to resolve, yet, when once he broke out, the cruel deed would follow quickly on the angry word.\(^1\)

About this time Julia,\(^2\) the granddaughter of Augustus, died. On her conviction for adultery, she had been banished by Augustus to the island of Trimerum, off the coast of Apulia. There she had lived for twenty years in exile, supported by Augusta,\(^3\) who, after secretly bringing about the ruin of her step-children when in prosperity, made a display of her compassion to them in adversity.\(^4\)

\(^1\) i.e. the longer the resentment of Tiberius could be kept smouldering, the more rapid and terrible would be the outburst when it came.

\(^2\) This was the younger Julia, full sister of Agrippina. Daughter of the elder Julia and Agrippa, she was thus grand-daughter of Augustus. She was married to L. Aemilius Paulus, one of the two sons of Cornelia, so touchingly introduced by Propertius in his famous elegy on that noble matron (iv. 11, 63, 64); their son M. Aemilius Lepidus, as profligate as his mother, married Drusilla, daughter of Germanicus; Caligula, at one time designed him as his successor (Dio lxi. 22, 6), but afterwards put him to death. Julia herself was banished by Augustus to the island of Tremerus, off Apulia, in A.D. 9, on account of her scandalous conduct: some have supposed that it was to an intrigue with her that Ovid owed his banishment.

\(^3\) This is the first occasion on which Tacitus permits himself to say a kindly word of Livia. Hitherto he has insinuated her guiltiness in regard to every tragedy in the house of the Caesars, and stigmatised her as gravis in rem publicam mater, gravis domui Caesarum noverca (i. 10, 4). But now that the cruelty of Tiberius has to be painted in darker colours, she appears as humane to her disgraced grandchild; and in v. 3, 1 her death is described as removing the sole protection to the younger members of the family: *nam incolumi Augusta erat adhuc perfugium.*

\(^4\) A drop of poison let fall to save the historian’s consistency, and to rob Livia’s one virtue of its merit. There is no other evidence that she made a parade of her *misericordia erga affictos.* The facts might perhaps as truthfully be put thus: ‘She was accused of scheming for the ruin of her step-
72. 1 In the same year the Frisii, a people beyond the Rhine, took up arms; more in consequence of the rapacity of our magistrates than from impatience of our rule. Having regard to their poverty, Drusus had imposed on them a moderate tribute, requiring only a supply of ox-hides for the use of the army. No rule, however, had been laid down as to the size or quality of these hides until the governorship of Olennius, a centurion of the first rank; he prescribed buffalo-hides as the standard according to which the tribute was to be delivered. Such a demand would have been hard on any people, but was particularly hard upon the Germans; children during the days of their prosperity; but none told of her kindly compassion to them after their fall. This people occupied the low flat lands between the mouth of the Rhine and the Ems, surrounding the great Zuyder Zee; corresponding more or less to the modern Netherlands (Tac. Germ. 34). Though the frontier of the empire in this quarter was now being withdrawn gradually to its permanent limit—the left bank of the Rhine—with nothing but a few military outposts on the right bank, the Frisii still remained subject to Rome. Their descendants took part in the great invasion of England by the Saxons and the Angles in the 5th century.

8 Such imposts in kind were at this time only levied in outlying districts. Thus Cyrene paid a contribution in sulphur, the Sannii of Pontus in wax.

9 The Frisii, it would appear, to have been in a semi-independent position since the time of Drusus, B.C. 14 (Dio, liv. 32, 2); the only signs of subjection being that they had to submit to the military government of a praefectus under the governor of the adjoining province, and had to furnish the tribute of hides. Their territory was beyond the proper Roman frontier; and after their successful revolt in this year they remained independent until reduced by Corbulo in A.D. 47 (xl. 19, 2). Only one Roman inscription has been discovered in this part of Holland: see Rushforth, p. 109.

4 It thus appears that the governorship of a subordinate province was one of the appointments to which a centurio primi pilis might aspire: see Furn., Intro. pp. 105 and 108. To such a governor the epigram of Tacitus, i. 20, a would apply: eo immittor quia toleraverat.

5 Probably the aurochs, the wild ox of Germany, now extinct, Caesar speaks of this animal as being almost of the size of an elephant, and untameable. He says it afforded to the Germans of the Hercynian forest their principal means of displaying prowess in hunting (B.G. vi. 98). Some have identified it with the bison, and some with the buffalo. See Virg. Geo. ii. 374; iii. 532.

6 Improved as was the government of the provinces under the uniform system of administration introduced by Augustus, and especially in the provinces directly governed by the emperor, this chapter shows how cruel exactions the inhabitants might still be subject at the hands of governors, and still more of subordinate officers, when playing into the hands of the negotiatores and publicani. Compare the account of the rising in Gaul under Florus and Saceorvii, iii. 40–47. Still more analogous to the present case is the rising in Britain in A.D. 79. Tacitus tells how the natives were there ordered to carry the corn which they had to provide for the support of the legions to distant and inaccessible places, so as to raise artificially its price, or the sums to be paid in lieu of it, while all the time full granaries on the spot were closed to them (Agr. 19, 4 and 5).
for though their forests produce wild animals of a great size, their domestic cattle are small. So they had first to give up their oxen, next their lands, and lastly, the persons of their wives and children to be sold as slaves. Indignation and remonstrance followed; and when these proved of no avail, they sought relief in arms. They seized and gibbeted the soldiers engaged in collecting the tribute; Olennius himself only escaped their fury by taking refuge in a fort called Flevum, in which was stationed a considerable force of legionaries and allies, for the protection of the northern sea-board.

When this news reached Lucius Aprnius, the Pro-praetor of Lower Germany, he called up the veteran detachments from the Upper Province, with a picked body of auxiliary horse and foot, and, conveying both forces down the Rhine, threw them upon the Frisii. By this time the siege of Fort Flevum had been raised, and the rebels had retired to defend their own homes. Aprnius accordingly laid down causeways and bridges across the neighbouring estuaries, strong enough for the passage of a regular army. Meantime, having found a ford, he ordered the cavalry of the Canninefates, with all the German foot serving

---

1 Thus cruelly and disastrously did Rome still preserve in the provinces the old principle of law which first raised the plebeians against the patricians—that a debtor borrowed ultimately on the security of his person. Cp. St. Matt. xviii. 25: 'But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made.' This harsh law was abolished in Rome, according to Livy (viii. 28), by the Lex Poetelia, in B.C. 366: ut pecuniæ creditæ bona creditoris, non corpus omnisum esset. Hæ nesci soluti, cautumque in posterum ne reincidenter. Mommsen would fairly attribute to Caesar the credit of finally establishing this principle of law (Vol. v. p. 407), but does not give his authority. See n. on vi. 16.

2 The name also of a lake, now forming part of the Zuyder Zee, and of an island at the mouth of the lake (Mela, iii. 2, 8). The name is still preserved in the modern Vlieland and Fliestrom.

3 We have already heard of Aprnius as legatus of Germanicus (i. 56, 1), and as proconsul in Africa in A.D. 20, where he succeeded Camillus (ili. 21, 1). In i. 31, 2 we find A. Caecina Severus as legatus of Lower Germany, A.D. 14; in A.D. 23, Caecina had been succeeded by C. Viscellius Varro (ili. 41, 1); and Aprnius probably succeeded Caecina.

4 This people inhabited the 'insula'
in our ranks, to go round and take the enemy in the rear. By the time these arrived, the enemy, in regular formation, were driving back the allied horse, together with the legionary cavalry which had been sent up in support. First three light cohorts of infantry, then two more, and after an interval, the allied cavalry, were advanced to the attack: a sufficient force if it had come on all at once. But advancing, as it did, in detachments, it failed to rally the men who were giving way, and was itself borne back by the panic of the flying troops. Apronius now entrusted the rest of the auxiliaries to Cethegus Labeo, Legate of the 5th legion; but he too found himself in difficulties. His men wavered; and he had to send back a message asking for the whole strength of the legions. The men of the 5th sprang forward before the rest; after a stout fight they drove back the enemy, and rescued our cavalry and cohorts, both having suffered heavily.

The Roman General made no attempt to avenge his losses; he did not even bury his dead, though there were many Tribunes, Prefects, and centurions of high standing among the slain. Soon afterwards, deserters brought word that a body of nine hundred Romans, after keeping up the fight till next day, had been cut to pieces in a wood called Baduhenna; and that another body of four hundred, who had occupied the house of a man called Cruptorix, formerly a soldier in our pay, fearing treachery, had perished by each others' hands.

This campaign gave the Frisii a great name among the Germans. Tiberius made no mention of the commander of a legion, see i. 44, 3.

1 On legatus legionis as the title of
2 Apparently the name of a goddess.
3 Silence of Tiberius; indifference of the Senate.

formed between two mouths of the Rhine. We hear of their leader Gannascus serving in the auxiliary forces (xi. 18, 1).
disaster; not wishing to entrust any one with the prosecution of the war. As for the Senate, they cared nothing for loss of honour upon distant frontiers. Their thoughts were taken up by the reign of terror at home; and from that they sought relief in sycophancy. Thus, when assembled to consider some business of a different kind, they voted altars to Friendship and to Clemency, with statues to Tiberius and Sejanus on either side; entreating earnestly that they would deign to allow themselves to be waited on.

Yet neither of them came to Rome, or near it; they thought it enough to leave the island, and to show themselves on the adjacent coast of Campania. Thither flocked Senators, knights, and crowds of the commoner sort, all looking anxiously to Sejanus, who was difficult of access, and could only be reached by means of intrigue, or by taking part in his designs. His arrogance increased openly at the sight of this shameful and undisguised servility. In Rome, hurrying crowds are a common spectacle; no one knows, in so vast a city, on what errand each man is bent. But here, men of all ranks, without distinction, were to be seen day and night, lying out in the fields, or along the shore; courting the favour, or having to submit to the insolence, of door-keepers. At last, even that was denied them; and those to whom he had not deigned to throw a word or a glance, went back to Rome in terror: others returned triumphant. Ill-fated triumph! How tragic was to be the issue of that unhallowed friendship!1

until Corbulo brought the Frisii to terms in A.D. 47 (xi. 19, 2). Yet in A.D. 58 they again appear as independent (xiii. 54, 2). Mommsen suggests that there may have been a distinction between the Eastern and Western Frisii, corresponding to the

Maiores and Minores of Tacitus (Germ. 34, 1).

1 This passage has a truly tragic ring about it, and is a fine specimen of the pictorial power of Tacitus. Nowhere does he arrange more strikingly his lights and shades, nowhere does he
75. Tiberius had betrothed his grand-daughter Agrippina, the daughter of Germanicus, to Cnæus Domitius; and he now ordered the marriage to be celebrated in Rome. He had chosen Domitius not only for the antiquity of his family, but also because of his relationship to the Caesars; for as Octavia was his grandmother, he could claim Augustus as his great-uncle.

bring out so forcibly his favourite doctrine of the irony of Fate. The chapter forms the climax of what may be called the Epic of Sejanus: the story of the rise and crimes of the hated favourite, which are the main theme of Book IV. We here see the insolent upstart at the zenith of his power. The altar voted by the senate is to have the statues of Tiberius and Sejanus on either side; the plurals facerent and digressi sunt couple the emperor and his minister as partners in imperial authority, as conjoint dispensers of imperial favour. The self-abasement of Romans of every rank before the all-powerful Sejanus marks the apex of his fortunes; as the despairing or triumphant courtiers troop back to Rome, we see the grim spectre of Nemesis behind, and are prepared for the tragic catastrophe which was to be the crowning topic of Book V.

Agrippina was the youngest but two of the children of Germanicus. She was barely thirteen years of age at this time, having been born when her father was in his German command, on the 10th Nov., A.D. 15 (see Mommsen, Hermes XIII., pp. 245-265), at Oppidum Ulpiaum. That town was called Colonia Agrrippinensis in her honour; whence comes the modern name Cologne.

Cn. Domitius Ahenobarbus, who became by this marriage the father of the emperor Nero, born at Antium in A.D. 39, was the son of the Lucius Domitius whose death is mentioned in chap. 44, 1, and Antonia minor, the daughter of Antony and Octavia. For the career of the father and grandfather, see n. on 44, 1. Suetonius describes Cnæus himself as omni parte vitæ detestabilis; and ascribes to him infamous acts of cruelty, fraud, and debauchery (Nero 3). He was cos. A.D. 32 (vi. 1, 1), and died during Nero's infancy.

Note the rhetorical skill with which Tacitus brings the book to a close. Just as Horace, when he works up to an unusually high pitch of feeling, loves to end an Òde in a lower and gentler key (Od. i. 2, 37-42; and iii. 3, 69-72), so Tacitus closes Book IV., after the passion of chap. 74, with the record of a quiet and happy domestic event—though one pregnant with future results. Sometimes he finishes with an epigram; and at the end of the six books, which we may call his Epic on Tiberius, he pours the whole vials of his wrath into the concluding words. See the closing sentences of Books I., II., III. The rhetorical and epigrammatic phrases with which Tacitus so frequently closes a chapter or a topic are doubtless due to the practice of recitation. We cannot doubt that it was in the form of recitation to sympathetic audiences that the works of Tacitus were first given to the world.
BOOK V. A FRAGMENT.

A.D. 29. CONSULS C. FUIIUS GEMINUS AND L. RUBELLIUS GEMINUS.

In this year, the Consuls of which were both sur-

named Geminus, Julia Augusta died, in extreme old age.1 A member of the Claudian house by birth, of the Livian and the Julian by adoption, she was in the first rank of the nobility.2 Her first husband, the father of her children, was Tiberius Nero.3 Having fled the country at the time of the Perusian War, he returned to Rome when peace was concluded between Sextus Pompeius and the Triumvirs. Enamoured of Livia's beauty, Caesar Augustus forced her husband to give her up to him, with or without her consent; and that in such haste, that though she was with child at the

1 Dio gives her age as eighty-six (lvii. 2, 1); and, as Tiberius was born in B.C. 42, she cannot have been less. The true reading in Plin. H.N. (xiv. 6, 8, 60) is non dat lxxxvi., not lxxxii., as in the MSS.

2 By birth, Livia Drusilla belonged to the noble plebeian gens of the Livii. Her father, Livius Drusus Claudianus, was by birth, as his name implies, a member of the patrician gens Claudia, and was adopted into the Livian house, probably by the famous aristocratic democrat M. Livius Drusus (nec minor largior nomine senatus Drusus; Suet. Aug. 3, who was murdered by the senatorial party during his tribunate, B.C. 91. Claudianus had espoused the cause of Brutus and Cassius; and being proscribed by the triumvirs, committed suicide after the battle of Philippi. Bearing thus in her own right the

3 Tiberius Claudius Nero, the first husband of Livia and father of the emperor, served as quaestor to Caesar in the Alexandrine war; was praetor in B.C. 40 or 41; joined in the futile outbreak of L. Antony known as the Perusian War; escaped to Sextus Pompey in Sicily, and finally went over to Antony in Achaia. No sooner had he returned to Rome in B.C. 42, than he was forced by Augustus to divorce his wife, as here recorded. She had already borne him Tiberius, and soon afterwards gave birth to Drusus (Suet. Tib. 4).
time, he took her into his house without even waiting for her to be brought to bed. She bore no children afterwards; but the marriage of Germanicus with Agrippina connected her with the family of Augustus, so that his great-grandchildren were hers also. Strict in her private life after the fashion of former days, though more gracious in her manners than would have been approved by ladies of the old school, an imperious mother, and a complaisant wife, she was a match for her husband in finesse, for her son in dissimulation.

Her funeral was simple; her will remained long

---

1 The correctness of her own life, and her faculties towards the irregularities of her husband, are confirmed by the accounts of Dio (lviii. 2, 5) and Suet. (Aug. 71).

2 For the phrase mater impotent applied to Livia, cp. accedere matrem muliebri impotentia (i. 4, 5); traditur etiam... matris impotentia extrusum (iv. 57, 4); matrem Liviam gravatam, quasi partes sibi aequas vindicatam (Suet. Tib. 50).

3 Whether due to nature or to training, Livia’s talents as a diplomatist eminently fitted her to be the partner of Augustus, and the confidante of his policy. No woman ever steered through so many shoals so craftily. Though the trusted wife of Augustus, she had a Court around her honeycombed with jealousies through her whole life, and her feelings as a mother must have been sorely tried. First she sees her two sons, of ripe age and tried capacity, brought forward as props of the new sovereignty (i. 3, 1), yet exposed to the formidable rivalry of Marcellus and Agrippa. As the young Caesars grow to manhood, the claims and services of her surviving son Tiberius are forgotten or set aside; she has to see him flouted, and practically exiled in Rhodes. The road once more made clear by the death of the young princes, she has to smooth down the antipathy of Augustus, soften the resentment of her high-spirited son at the injurious treatment he has received, and lead him, sorely against the grain, to practise the arts of a courtier. Her triumph in securing the succession to her son brought her face to face with new difficulties; and if foiled in her main ambition, that of becoming the actual ruler of the empire, by his firmness or intractable temper, her mixed tenacity and pliancy succeeded at least in maintaining for her a place as the most powerful personage next to him. For a woman to play such a rôle as this was a new thing in Rome. The words comis ultra quam antiquis feminis probatum would seem to imply that she kept a kind of political salon in Rome, like that of Madame de Staël at Paris; and one not to be put down so peremptorily as hers was by Napoleon. The reserve which her position imposed on her laid her open, like Tiberius himself, to every suspicion; her grandson Caligula, to whom she had shown especial kindness, called her ‘a Ulysses in peticoats’—Ulixes sto-latus (Suet. Cal. 23).

4 It is characteristic of Tacitus that though he has not hesitated to record the rumours which attributed to Livia the deaths of Gaius and Lucius Caesar (i. 3, 3), the banishment of Agrippa Postumus (i. 3, 4), even the death of Augustus himself (i. 5, 1), and the intrigues of Piso and Plancina against Germanicus (ii. 43, 5), yet when he has to pourtray her character on his own authority, he can find nothing worse to say of her than that she was a marvel of finesse and masterfulness. And truth compels him to admit that her death deprived the family of Germanicus of their last surviving protector (chap. 3, 1).
unexecuted. Her funeral oration was pronounced from the Rostra by her great-grandson Gaius Caesar, the future Emperor.

Having failed to pay the last tribute to his mother, and interrupting none of his pleasures on her account, Tiberius wrote a letter of excuse, pleading important public affairs; and, as if out of modesty, he cut down the long list of distinctions which the Senate had voted to her memory, accepting only a few of them, and prohibiting any attribution of divine honours in accordance—so he asserted—with her own express desire. In one passage of this letter he denounced friendships with women; rebuking thereby indirectly the consul Fufius, who had owed his advancement to Augusta’s patronage. For Fufius had all the qualities which attract women; he had a sharp tongue too, and would deliver himself of stinging railleries against Tiberius, such as live long in the memory of the all-powerful.

And now set in a period of sheer and unrelenting tyranny. For so long as Augusta was alive, there was still a refuge open; Tiberius had an ingrained feeling of deference for his mother, nor did even Sejanus venture to come in the way of her authority. But now the two dashed headlong on, like horses freed from the rein. A letter was produced attacking

---

1 Caligula repaired this wrong. *Legata ex testamento Iuliae Augustae, quod Tiberius suppresserat, cum fide et sine calumnia representata persolvit* (Suet. Cal. 16).
2 Gaius was aged sixteen at this time.
3 Suetonius states that Tiberius had only once visited his mother during her last three years; and that after her death the funeral was unduly deferred in waiting for him.
4 Similarly after the death of Augustus he would allow no honours to be paid to her, *moderandos feminarum honores dictatis* (l. 14, 3).
5 She was ultimately deified by Claudius (Dio, lx, 5, 2), who set up her image in the temple of Augustus on the Pala-tine. Yet such titles as *Livia Augusti dea, mater patriae, genetrix orbis*, were given her on provincial coins or inscriptions during her lifetime.
6 Tiberius hated female influence, and smarted under it. Suetonius adds *omnes amicitias (sc. Liviae) et familiaritates in brevi tempore afflict* (Tib. 51).
7 The death of this Fufius seems to be referred to in vi. 10, 1 and Dio, livii. 4, 5; his wife *Nepaia* is perhaps the Mutilia Prisca of iv. 12, 6.
Agrippina and Nero in language of studied harshness; and as it was read shortly after the death of Augusta, it was popularly supposed to have come to hand previously, and to have been kept back by her. 

3 Tiberius did not upbraid his grandson for meditating an armed revolt, or seeking to upset the government, but for unnatural and indecent practices. Against Agrippina, he did not venture so far; he complained only of her insolent language and her refractory temper. The Senate listened in terror and in silence; till at last a few who had nothing to hope for through honourable means—and there are always some who turn public calamities into an occasion for winning favour for themselves—demanded that the question should be put. Cotta Messalinus was at hesitation of the Senate. 

5 once ready with a motion for condemnation, but other leading senators, and especially the magistrates, hesitated; for notwithstanding the bitterness of his attack, Tiberius had left his ultimate purpose in doubt.

4. 1 Now there was in the Senate a man of the name of Junius Rusticus, who had been appointed by the Emperor to keep the record of its proceedings, and was therefore supposed to be acquainted with his inmost sentiments. Moved either by some fate-sent impulse—for the man had never given any sign of

1 Similarly vi. 5, 1: Cotta Messalinus saevisissimae cuiusque sententiae auctor eoque inveteratae invidiae. See also iv. 20. 6.

2 We thus learn that in the time of Tiberius there was a regular record kept of senate proceedings, here called acta patrum, elsewhere acta or commentarii senatus, by an officer specially appointed by the emperor. How far these records were open to senators or to the public is not known. Tacitus quotes them as an authority in xv. 74. 3; and the minuteness of his accounts of doings in the senate suggests that he had official records before him. On the other hand, he is ignorant of (i. 81, 1), or quotes other authorities for (ii. 88, 1), certain facts which must have been included in such records. Suetonius tells us that Julius Caesar primus omnium instituit ut tam senatus quam populi diurna acta conferrent et publicarentur (Jul. 20); but that Augustus auctor fuit ne acta senatus publicarentur (Oct. 36).

3 It thus appears that the office was a confidential one. The records were sent to the emperor for his perusal (Suet. Tib. 73).

4 When in doubt for a cause, Tacitus recurs to the agency of Fate: fate potentiae raro sempiernae (iii. 30, 7);
independence before—or by a misguided cunning, which in vague alarm for the future overlooked the peril of the moment, this person thrust himself in among those who were hesitating, and advised the Consuls not to take up the question. The most important issues, he urged, turned on trifling causes; the day might yet come when the aged Emperor would repent the destruction of the offspring of Germanicus.

Meanwhile the populace surrounded the Senate-house, parading effigies of Agrippina and Nero; and amid expressions of loyalty towards Tiberius, cried that the letter must be a forgery: the Emperor could never have consented to the annihilation of his own family. Accordingly no harsh action was taken on that day. Copies also of pretended resolutions, purporting to have been proposed by Consuls against Sejanus, were handed about; the writers exercising their imagination all the more freely that they wrote anonymously. This inflamed the wrath of Sejanus, and gave him material for accusations:—The Senate, he said, had treated the complaints of the Princeps with contempt; the people were in revolt, reading and listening to seditious speeches, and fictitious decrees of Senate: what remained for them but to draw the sword, and choose for their leaders and Imperators those whose images they had followed as their standards?

And so Tiberius repeated his denunciations of his grandson and his daughter-in-law, rebuked the people in an edict, and having complained to the Senate that a manœuvre of one of their number should have

---

1. So when Octavia was in danger, the people Octaviae imagines gestant umeris (xiv. 61, 1). The supporters of Agrippina and her family showed, as usual, but little tact in their mode of befriending her cause.
exposed the Majesty of the Princeps to a public rebuff, demanded that the whole case should be left in his hands. The Senate hesitated no longer. They did not indeed vote a death sentence; that was not permitted to them: but they signified their acquiescence in extreme measures, and protested that nothing but the Emperor's express command was holding them back.  

1 The MS. breaks off abruptly in the middle of chap. 5, the rest of Book V. being unfortunately lost. The chapter which follows belongs to Book VI., the first few chapters of which are also missing. The loss of this portion of the Annals, from A.D. 29 to 31, containing the history of the final conspiracy and fall of Sejanus, is one of the most grievous in all Latin literature. We can imagine no subject more absolutely fitted to call out all the powers, and all the antipathies, of the historian. Although the chapters which follow, numbered 6 to 11, recording events in A.D. 31, no doubt belonged to Book VI., the usual numbering is retained in this edition in order to facilitate reference.

The loss of the principal portion of Book V., embracing the period from the middle of the year A.D. 29 to near the close of the year A.D. 31, has deprived us of a description by the master hand of Tacitus of one of the most dramatic scenes and thrilling situations in the history of the Empire; but the incidents of the sudden fall of the hated favourite, at the supreme moment of his fortunes, had so burnt themselves into the memories of the Roman people, that we may accept with more than usual confidence the traditional account of the mode in which that fall was brought about.

The narrative of Dio, in all its main features, tallies with the various references to the event that are to be found in Roman literature; and though prejudice and suspicion did their worst, as in the pages of Tacitus himself, to blacken the character and exaggerate the crimes of Sejanus, we cannot doubt that the story as told by Dio is substantially true. And if that story bears hardly on Sejanus, it carries with it an indictment infinitely more severe against the populace and the nobility of Rome.

The 5th chapter of the 5th Book breaks off amid omens of impending disaster to the family of Germanicus. Their last defence against the machinations of Sejanus has been removed by the death of Livia. Sejanus is at the height of his power; his influence in the counsels of Tiberius is as yet unbroken. He has been using all that influence, and all his knowledge of the old man’s character, to bring about the ruin of Agrippina and her children. Tiberius is in his secluded sea-girt fastness; accessible to none save through Sejanus. From that solitary rock issue the mandates by which the civilised world is ruled; and the hand through which they pass, the hand which carries them into effect, is the hand of Sejanus.

In refusing or evading the petition of Sejanus to be united with Livia, Tiberius had hinted an intention to raise him to some new pinnacle of greatness: "there was no position," he had assured him, "which
was too high for his merits, or for his devotion to himself.\(^1\)

Comforted by such assurances, confident in the supreme influence which he still exercised over the mind of Tiberius, Sejanus pushed on boldly towards the destruction of the one family which stood between himself and his highest hopes. Aided by the petulance and indiscretions of Agrippina, by the reckless counsels of her friends, and by the ungovernable temper which was a characteristic of every member of her family, he had succeeded in persuading Tiberius that the pretensions of Agrippina and her sons, backed by a devoted party among the nobility, and strong in the consciousness of popular favour, were a source of danger to himself and to the State. He had sown the seeds of disension within the family itself, trafficking with the younger brother against the elder, and with the wives of both against their husbands;\(^2\) ready to drop each in turn so soon as they should have served his purpose.

The death of Livia, as we have already seen, had given the opportunity for a forward move. That event was immediately succeeded by a severe despatch from Tiberius attacking Agrippina and her eldest son Nero by name; it was believed that the letter had been for some time in hand, and that it was only Livia’s influence that had kept it back.\(^3\) The Senate was staggered for the time, unable to bring itself to act; the populace outside the Senate-house clamoured that it must be against the Emperor’s will that his house was being threatened with destruction.\(^4\) But the proceedings of Agrippina’s friends added fresh fuel to the accusations of Sejanus; and a stern rebuke from the Emperor soon followed, repeating the charges against his daughter-in-law and grandson, and clearly shewing that extreme measures had been resolved upon against them.

At this point the narrative of Tacitus breaks off.

The Senate hesitated no longer. Agrippina and Nero were condemned; the latter was declared a public enemy.\(^5\) Both were hurried into banishment;\(^6\)

---

\(^1\) Ann. iv. 40, 12. \(^2\) Ann. iv. 60, 4, and Dio, lviii. 318. \(^3\) Ann. v. 3, 3. \(^4\) Ann. v. 5, 3. \(^5\) Suet. Tib. 54.
the son to the Island of Pontia, the mother to that of Pandateria, where she was treated with the utmost barbarity by her gaolers. Nero was put to death, or suffered to die, in prison, at some date prior to the fall of Sejanus; how miserably Agrippina came to her end, how cruelly her memory was insulted by Tiberius, will be recorded in Ann. vi. 25.

The younger brother Drusus, fed by Sejanus with hopes of the succession, was spared for the present; but his turn was soon to come. Not long after the arrest of his mother and his brother, he married Aemilia Lepida, a woman pronounced 'intestabilis' by Tacitus; and it is asserted by Dio that Sejanus lost no time in exercising upon her also his unrivalled powers of corruption, estranging her from her husband, and dazzling her with the same ambitious hopes with which he had lured Livilla, and secured her co-operation in his designs. Through Lepida's instrumentality, he succeeded once more in poisoning the mind of Tiberius against his nearest of kin. Drusus was dismissed from Capri, and ordered back to Rome. An accuser was found in Cassius Severus; Drusus was declared a public enemy, and thrust into a dungeon in the Palatine, there to linger until the time should be ripe for his removal. And though there was one moment, in the crisis of the conspiracy of Sejanus, when Tiberius thought of bringing Drusus out of his dungeon to confront the upstart with a scion of the imperial house, the necessity passed away with that emergency. Tiberius acted on the principle that a man who has been outraged beyond a certain point cannot with safety be permitted to live; so he left Drusus to his fate, and suffered him to perish, three years afterwards, amid circumstances of indescribable horror.

A.D. 30. CONSULS M. VINICIUS AND L. CASSIUS LONGINUS.

Throughout this year the fortunes of Sejanus were still in the ascendant, and at its close he seemed to be more powerful than ever. His career, thus far, had

---

1 Ann. vi. 40. 4.  
2 Ann. vi. 23. 5.  
3 Dio, lviii. 3, 7, and Ann. vi. 24.
been one of unbroken success. Just as the chosen heirs of Augustus had been cut off, one after the other, leaving the way open for Tiberius, so had Sejanus seen, one by one, the probable successors of Tiberius disappear. Germanicus, Drusus, Agrippina and her two grown-up sons, had no longer to be reckoned with. There remained only the stripling Gaius, who was scarcely out of his teens, and the child Tiberius Gemellus, son of Drusus, who had scarcely entered them: their natural protectors gone, it would seem a light matter for the minister firmly entrenched in power, with the troops of the capital under his command, to sweep them also out of his path.

But there were two elements in the situation which had not entered into the calculations of Sejanus. The youthful Gaius was kept out of his grasp and influence; and the withdrawal of Tiberius from the capital to his island home had a very different effect upon his attitude and temper from that which had been anticipated.

The young Gaius had been under the protection of his great-grandmother Livia, and had lived in her house until she died; it was he who pronounced her funeral oration. He was then taken into the house of his grandmother Antonia, the wisest and most discreet of all the women of the early Empire. Thence he was summoned to Capri, where he assumed the manly gown in private, without any of the dangerous honours which had been bestowed upon his brothers on a similar occasion. From that time onwards he lived quietly with Tiberius; and his character seems to have fitted him for that hazardous companionship. Not less wild and reckless by nature than the other members of his family, and with a tinge of madness which was to develop so disastrously afterwards in the 'furious Caligula,' he exhibited, under his present circumstances, a faculty of self-control, a power of adapting himself to circumstances, which enabled him to hold his ground. He had no fiery mother, no injudicious advisers, to goad him on to indiscretions; and under his great-uncle's tutelage, he learnt to practise the arts of dissimulation. Tiberius was capable of strong family

1 Suet. Cal. 10. 2 Gibbon, chap. 3. 3 Ann. vi. 45, 46.
affection; he may have taken kindly to the young man; and Tacitus tells us that from a feeling of *ambitio in posteros* he shrank from the idea of seeking an heir outside the family of the Caesars. At Capri the youth could be the centre of no political plots; and he was there kept safe, as his brothers had not been, from the allurements and designs of Sejanus.

But the retirement to Capri did more than keep Gaius out of harm's way: it removed Sejanus from constant intercourse with the Emperor. The duties laid upon him must often have called him to Rome; he would thus lose the opportunity of working, day by day, upon the suspicious temperament of Tiberius, and of maintaining his personal ascendancy over him. For in addition to all the talents which made Sejanus so useful a coadjutor to Tiberius, he must have been a man of extraordinary personal fascination, and capable of inspiring those about him with entire confidence. His success in corrupting, one after the other, the women who could help him in his designs, is evidence of this fact; he could worm out, through their wives, the secrets of all the most distinguished men in Rome.¹ Tiberius was not a man easily imposed upon; and no minister was ever more absolutely trusted than was Sejanus by his master.

Whatever may have been the personal element in that influence, it was lost when the minister could no longer be by his master's side. We may be sure that the whisper of suspicion and calumny was not silent among the chosen few who still had access to the imperial person; and distance would exaggerate every evil rumour.

Very different had been the calculation of Sejanus. The voice of his enemies, he had thought, would sound more faintly at Capri than at Rome; his crowded levees, the universal court that was paid to him, would escape observation; an Emperor devoted to vicious ease would let the reins of government fall gradually from his hands.² But all turned out otherwise. It was not Tiberius, but Sejanus, who lost his hold on power by the retreat to Capri. Tiberius showed no tendency to relax his grip of the most important affairs of state; and his jealous

¹ *Dio,* lvi. 3. 8. ² *Ann.* iv. 41. 3.
temper was not soothed, but irritated, by the knowledge that he had to hand over many of the details of government to another. The danger to himself and to the State of allowing a substitute to wield plenary authority in Rome began to loom large before him; and the suspicion dawnd upon him that he had been striking down Agrippina and her family only to make way for another and more sinister ambition.

The severity of Tiberius did not abate with his seclusion. He decoyed and threw into prison, under every circumstance of treachery, the hated Asinius Gallus; of whom we have heard so much in the earlier books of the Annals as the husband of the divorced Vipsania, as the officious proposer of motions in the Senate, as a possible competitor for empire—in his own opinion at least, if not in that of others. Gallus presented himself at Capri as an envoy, to announce fresh honours voted to Sejanus by the Senate; and at the very moment when he was being entertained as a guest at the Emperor's table, the Senate, instructed by a secret order, voted his condemnation. A praetor was despatched to effect his arrest. Tiberius calmly suffered Gallus to depart, and bid him be of good cheer; but he ordered that he should be kept in custody in Rome till he should arrive himself to try the case. The case was never tried; and after languishing for three years in hopeless confinement, Gallus was allowed to die miserably of starvation.

At what precise moment the confidence of Tiberius in his favourite passed into suspicion and alarm does not appear. Possibly some rumour reached him as to how Drusus had come to his end. He was naturally slow in forming his judgments; he never hurried on a move until he believed the time was ripe for it; though when once the resolve was formed, he could act upon it with terrific suddenness. This feature in his character, as well as the nature of the situation itself, both harmonise excellently with the details of the story so dramatically told by Dio. The resolve to strike Sejanus was probably formed some time during the year A.D. 30. The minister had

---

1 Ann. i. 13. 2. 2 Ann. vi. 33, and Dio, lvi. 3. 3 See Ann. iv. 71. 5. 4 Dio, lvi. 4-13.
become too powerful to be retained longer in that position; and, with characteristic cunning, Tiberius conceived that the best mode of bringing about his fall would be to begin by raising him to the highest office in the state. He would thereby lull him into security, expose him to greater envy, and tempt his more ardent supporters to declare themselves. He accordingly designated him to the Consulship for the year following, with himself as colleague; thus exalting him to the same position as that in which he had placed his natural heir Germanicus in the year A.D. 18. The duties of that office would keep Sejanus at a distance; and, if the favourite flattered himself that the report of his doings in Rome would only reach Tiberius through his own creatures, while he himself would be kept informed of all that passed at Capri, the sequel showed how egregiously he was mistaken.

A.D. 31. CONSULS TIBERIUS CAESAR AUGUSTUS V.
AND L. AELIUS SEJANUS.

No sooner was Sejanus installed in office, than honours of every kind were showered upon him. His receptions were thronged by obsequious crowds; statues were voted to him and to the Emperor in conjunction; gilded chairs were set up for both in the theatres; men spoke of Tiberius as the ruler of an island, of Sejanus as master of the Empire. Tiberius himself spoke of him as 'his own Sejanus;' his betrothal to Livilla, it would appear, was now at last permitted; and a decree was passed conferring upon him the Consulship along with Tiberius for the next five years.

But amid this torrent of honours and adulation, Sejanus had cause to feel uneasy. As the year went on, Tiberius wrote in varying strains about himself, both to Sejanus and to the Senate; at one moment he spoke of illness, and hinted at his approaching end; at another, he declared that he was in excellent health, and would shortly return to Rome. Word came that Gaius had been raised to the Augurship and Priest-

1 See Ann. i. 7, 11.
2 Dio, lviii. 4, 2, and 6, 2.
3 Hence he is spoken of as 'the son-in-law of Tiberius,' Ann. vi. 8, 6.
hood, and indicated as heir. Sejanus himself was sometimes commended, sometimes censured, in the imperial despatches. It was noticed that, in announcing the death of Drusus, Tiberius had introduced the name of Sejanus without any of his usual titles; and when Sejanus asked for a personal interview, the Emperor declined to receive him, on the pretence that he himself was about to come to Rome.

Men knew not what to think; Sejanus began to feel that the ground was falling away beneath him. If he ever thought of entering into a conspiracy against the Emperor's life, as asserted by the Roman historians, and assumed by Tiberius afterwards, this would have been the time to choose. The Senate were still at his feet; the Praetorian Guards were devoted to their commander; he believed the populace to be favourable. But he did not move. Perhaps he still believed in the Emperor's favour; perhaps his nerve failed him at the last. Josephus asserts the conspiracy as a fact;¹ it was discovered, he tells us, by the faithful Antonia, who at once despatched a trusty messenger to Capri with the news. If there was a plot, it was not ready; Sejanus had allowed the favourable moment to slip by.

Early in May, Tiberius vacated the Consulship; Sejanus had to do the same, thus finding himself stripped of office. Two consules suffecti were installed upon the 8th, one of whom gave way on the 1st July to L. Fulcinius Trio, a partisan of Sejanus—chosen doubtless for the very purpose of allaying his suspicions—while the other was replaced on the 1st of October by P. Memmius Regulus, a man upon whose nerve and devotion Tiberius could rely. At last, on the 18th of October, there arrived from Capri the famous despatch—the verbosa et grandis epistola²—which was a death signal to Sejanus, and to all who could be suspected of being his accomplices, and which inaugurated a reign of terror which lasted more or less throughout the remaining years of Tiberius.

The despatch was entrusted to Naevius Sertorius Macro, who carried with him a secret commission, appointing him to the command of the Praetorian Guards. Arriving late at night in Rome, he announced

¹ Ant. xviii. 6, 6. ² Juv. x. 71.
his mission to the Consul Memmius Regulus, and to Graecinus Laco, the commander of the city police. Regulus summoned the Senate to meet at daybreak, in the Temple of Apollo on the Palatine. Sejanus hurried to obey the summons, attended by his Praetorian Guards; reassured by Macro, who informed him that the tribunitian power was to be conferred upon him that day, he passed into the place of meeting. Having seen Sejanus safely into the building, Macro turned back to address the Praetorians who had been stationed outside; exhibited to them his commission as their commander; and promising them a largess in the Emperor’s name, induced them to return to their camp. In the mean time, Laco occupied every avenue to the temple with his police. This done, and the Senate having now assembled, Macro entered the chamber, handed the Emperor’s letter to the presiding Consul Regulus, and hurried off to the camp to check any possible movement on the part of the troops.

Then followed the reading of the letter. It began with indifferent topics; passed on to some faint censure of Sejanus, and requested that one of the Consuls should come to Capri to escort Tiberius to Rome. By degrees, the tone of complaint grew stronger; new points were introduced; two senators, special friends of Sejanus, were marked out for punishment: and at the very end of all, Sejanus himself was denounced by name, and ordered off to prison.

As the reading of the letter went on, a change came over the face of the assembly. The senators who but now had been flocking round Sejanus to congratulate him on his new honours, and assure him of their support, edged away from his side; the magistrates and the tribunes quietly closed round him to prevent him from making a rush for the door, and raising a tumult outside. When the last fatal words were pronounced, Sejanus seemed like one dazed; the Consul called upon him three times before he could find words to reply. As he rose, he found Laco by his side; in a moment, the long pent-up hatred against the favourite broke out in one roar of triumph and exultation over his fall, and a storm of insults and reproaches, from foes and friends alike,
burst upon the head of the unhappy man, who, but yesterday, had been reckoned 'second in the whole world.'

The Consul, after calling on some leading senators to speak, thought it best not to put the question to the vote. At the head of the magistrates, escorted by Laco and his Guards, he hustled Sejanus across the Forum to the dungeon—the famous Tullianum—in which the enemies of Rome had to meet their end. The news of the favourite's downfall had spread like wild-fire through the city; as he passed along, he could see his statues being dragged from their pedestals and ground to powder, with every mark of vindictive fury, by the mob.

Later in the same day, as soon as it was ascertained that the temper of the populace was safe, and that there was nothing to fear from the Praetorians, the Senate was again summoned to the Temple of Concord, in the immediate proximity of the prison. Here the death of the traitor was decreed without a moment's delay. He was strangled in that same terrible prison in which Jugurtha had shuddered at the cold bath provided for him by the Roman people; his body was cast out upon the Gemonian stairs to be insulted and trampled upon; and at last the mangled remains, like those of an ordinary malefactor, were tossed into the Tiber.

Meanwhile Tiberius was awaiting the news from Rome in a state of the utmost anxiety. He took his station on the head of a cliff to get the first sight from afar of the signals which he had arranged for the occasion; he even had ships ready, in case things at Rome went wrong, to carry him off to one of the provincial armies.

The fall of Sejanus was immediately followed by the prosecution and punishment of all who could be accused or suspected of having shared his designs or cultivated his friendship. The broken narrative of Tacitus resumes in the midst of an account of a meeting in the Senate, at which an accused friend of Sejanus openly acknowledges the friendship, and justifies himself by the example of Tiberius.

---

1 Juv. x. 63.  
2 Suet. Tib. 65.
A.D. 31. CONSULS (SUFF.) L. FULCINIUS TRIO AND P. MEMMIUS REGULUS.

. . . Forty-four speeches\(^1\) were delivered on this 6. 1 occasion; some of them inspired by terror, the majority by the mere habit of adulation. . . . I never thought to bring shame on myself, or odium upon Sejanus. But Fortune has now turned. He who assumed Sejanus as his colleague and his son-in-law\(^3\) finds excuse for himself; the others, adding crime to their shame, denounce the man upon whom they fawned.\(^8\) Whether it be a more unhappy thing to be the accuser of a friend, or to be accused for being a man's friend, I care not to determine. 4 I will put no man's cruelty, no man's clemency, to the test; but while still free, and with my conscience to approve, I will anticipate my doom. Of you I beg that you will think of me, not with sorrow, but with gladness, and enrol

---

\(^1\) What formed the subject of the forty-four speeches referred to in this fragment of fifteen words is not known. It was evidently connected with the fall of Sejanus; and the number of orations delivered, with the assigned motives, ob metum et aduersudine, suggest a debate on some motion in the senate. But there is no evidence to connect the debate specially, as most editors do, with the punishment of Livia for the murder of Drusus. The rest of the chapter forms a second fragment. It contains an address by an avowed, but as yet unaccused, friend of Sejanus; who, like the eques M. Terentius in vi, 8, 6, protests his innocence of all guilty projects, and justifies his friendship for Sejanus by the example of the emperor himself.

\(^3\) It is a mistake to press the words collegam et generum too far, so as to suppose that Sejanus had been made in some special sense collega imperii by sharing with Tiberius the proconsular power. The similar words used by M. Terentius in vi, 8, 6 (tuum, Caesar, generum, tui consulatus socium, tua officia in re publica capissentem), refer to the joint consulship of Sejanus with Tiberius in A.D. 31, and also to such share in the work of administration as led Tiberius to speak of Sejanus as socium laborum (iv, 2, 4), and Drusus to complain incollem illi adiutorem imperii alium vocari (iv, 7, 2). Had Sejanus been made a sharer of the proconsular or any other formal power, as Furn. suggests (Intr. p. 83), the historians could scarcely have failed to notice so important a fact. The term generum refers to the alliance with Livia which Sejanus had dared to hope for. To raise so hateful a proposal from the region of surmise into that of fact is characteristic of Tacitus; it is no less appropriate rhetorically in the mouths of men who are defying Tiberius before they die, and are per invictum straining the case against him to the utmost. The words would in fact mean, 'your would-be son-in-law.' Suetonius more correctly describes Sejanus as spe advinstitis ut tribunicae potestatei successum (Tb. 65).

\(^8\) i.e. by accusing innocent persons in order to save themselves. The speaker is no doubt referring to the informers (indicis) mentioned in chap. 8, 1.
me in that company who have found in honourable death an escape from the evils of their country.

7. He then passed part of the day with his friends, bidding them farewell, or detaining them, according as each desired to stay and converse with him or not; and the house was still thronged with guests, all gazing on his intrepid face, and not deeming the end so nigh, when he threw himself on a sword which he had hidden in the folds of his dress. Nor did the Emperor vent on him when dead any of the foul charges which he had not spared in the case of Blaesus.¹

8. Next came the cases of Publius Vitellius² and Pomponius Secundus.³ The former was accused of having offered to open the Treasury, of which he was Prefect, and use the military chest⁴ to aid a rising; the latter was charged by Considius, an ex-Praetor, with being a friend of Aelius Gallus:⁵ for Gallus had fled to the gardens of Pomponius as to a sure refuge when Sejanus was executed. Nothing would have saved these two men but the staunchness of their brothers,⁶ who came forward as sureties for them.

But there were many postponements; and Vitellius

¹ The uncle of Sejanus (iii. 35, 2), hailed as ‘Imperator’ by his troops for his African successes (iii. 74, 6). He was apparently among the first victims. His two sons afterwards put an end to themselves (vi. 40, 3).
² This is the Vitellius who conducted the retreat by land from Germany (i. 70). As a friend of Germanicus, he was an accuser of Cn. Piso (ii. 74, 2; iii. 10, 2, etc.).
³ Pomponius Secundus was subsequently cos. suf. A.D. 44.
⁴ The mention of militiae pecuniae and praefectus shows that the aerarium militare is meant, instituted by Augustus in A.D. 6 for the payment and rewards of the army (i. 76, 2), as we learn from the Mon. Anc. iii. 36-37. The military treasury was managed by a prefect or prefects appointed by the emperor; the public aerarium was managed by the praetors (i. 75, 4).
⁵ On the conjecture that Sejanus was adopted by Aelius Gallus, made prefect of Egypt B.C. 24, see n. on iv. 1, 3. It is conjectured that the Aelius Gallus here mentioned was the eldest son of Sejanus, bearing the same name as his adoptive grandfather. It seems, however, unlikely that Tacitus, in his one mention of this name, should have omitted to add the cardinal fact that he was the son of Sejanus.
⁶ A brother of Pomponius, Quintus by name, is mentioned in vi. 18, 2, as accusing a sister of Considius. One of the brothers of P. Vitellius was Lucius, who became cos. A.D. 34, who conducted the Parthian campaign as Governor of Syria in A.D. 35, and of whom Tacitus uses the fine phrase cesserunt prima postremis (vi. 32, 7).
was unable to endure the alternations of hope and fear. Asking for a penknife, as if for purposes of study, he made a slight incision in his veins, and so died, of sheer despondency. Pomponius, however, survived Tiberius; he was a man of fine character, and of great intellectual parts, and he bore with fortitude his change of fortune.

Although the popular fury was now subsiding, and most people had been appeased by the sentences already inflicted, it was resolved to punish the remaining children of Sejanus, and they were carried off to prison. The boy was old enough to understand what was before him; but the girl was so innocent that she kept on asking, What was her fault? Whither were they taking her? She would not do it again: could she not be chastised like any other child? Writers of the time tell us that as there was no precedent for inflicting capital punishment on a maiden, she was outraged by the executioner before being strangled. The execution over, the poor young bodies were cast down the Gemonian stairs.

At this juncture, an alarming though short-lived rumour ran through the provinces of Asia and Achaia that Drusus, the son of Germanicus, had been seen in the Cyclades, and again upon the mainland. The young man in question was of about the same age as Drusus, and some of that prince's freedmen professed to recognise him, and attached themselves to

---

1 The story of Suetonius is that he was constrained to bind up his wounds, and died afterwards morbo (Vit. a).
2 Pomponius was a tragedian of high repute; Quintilius says of him eorum quos vididerim longe princeps Pomponius Secundus, quem ternis parum tragicum putabant, eruditione et nitore priuatiare confitabantur (x. 1, 98).
3 From iv. 3, 5 we learn that Sejanus had three children by Apicata. The eldest, whether called Aelius Gallus or not, probably perished with his father. See n. on chap. 8, 1.
4 For the Gemonian stairs, see n. on iii. 14, 6.
5 Drusus was at this time a prisoner in the Capitol; his miserable end is described below, vi. 23, 4.
his person to promote the fraud. The renown of his name, and the love of the Greek mind for all that is strange and marvellous, soon attracted to him an ignorant following. A story was concocted, and straightway believed, that Drusus had escaped from custody, and was on his way to his father's army to make a descent upon either Syria or Egypt. Attended by crowds of young men, and received with enthusiasm by the provincials, the youth had become elated by his success and puffed up with empty hopes, when the thing came to the ears of Poppaeus Sabinus, Governor of Macedonia, who had Achaia also under his charge. To be beforehand with the affair, whether there should be truth in it or not, he hurried past the bays of Torone and Thermae, skirted the island of Euboea in the Aegean, touched at the Piraeus on the coast of Attica, and then landing on the Corinthian shore, crossed the Isthmus of that name. Taking ship again on the Ionian Sea, he entered the Roman colony of Nicopolis, where at last he learnt that the pretender, when shrewdly questioned as to his identity, had declared himself son of Marcus Silanus, and being deserted by many of his followers, had taken ship as if for Italy. All this he reported to Tiberius; but I have not been able to discover anything further as to the origin or issue of the affair.

II. 1 At the close of the year, a quarrel which had long

---

1 Cp. Acts xvii. 21: 'For all the Athenians and strangers that were there spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new thing.'
2 Called *paternos* as having been commanded by Germanicus in the East.
3 See n. on iv. 46, 7.
4 The gulls of Kassandra and Saloniki, on the E. coast of Macedonia.
5 *Nicopolis Actia* was the colony founded by Augustus on the N. side of the Ambracian Gulf, opposite to Actium. See ii. 53, 1.
6 This is thought to be the same M. Silanus whose influence obtained from Tiberius a pardon for his brother Decimus (iii. 24, 5), whose daughter Claudia was married to Caligula A.D. 33 (vi. 30, 1); and who was forced by that emperor to commit suicide, A.D. 37 (Suet. Cal. 23).
been brewing between the Consuls came to a head. Trio, who was of an aggressive temper, and versed in the ways of the law-courts, had indirectly rebuked Regulus for slackness in putting down the followers of Sejanus; while Regulus, who, except under provocation, was a man of peace, not only repudiated the charge, but proposed to bring his colleague to trial for having himself taken part in the conspiracy. In vain did many of the senators implore them to give up a quarrel which could only end disastrously: they persisted in their animosity and their threats against each other until they vacated office.

1 Fulcinius Trio is known to us as leading the accusation against Libo (ii. 98, 4), when he is described as avidus famae malae; and also as accuser of Cn. Piso (iii. 10, 1). Expecting to be accused himself, he committed suicide A.D. 35 (vi. 38, 2), after delivering himself of a violent attack upon Macro and Tiberius.

2 A.D. 35; he died A.D. 61. auctoritate constantia fama clarus (xiv. 47, 2). Dio tells us that when Macro entered Rome by night, armed with his secret instructions against Sejanus, he entrusted them to Regulus, but not to Trio, as the latter was thought to be too friendly to Sejanus (livii. 9, 3).

3 As to this quarrel, see further, vi. 4, 2.

4 P. Memmius Regulus succeeded Poppaeus Sabinus in his command,
BOOK VI.

A.D. 32. CONSULS CN. DOMITIUS AHENOBARBUS1 AND M. FURIUS CAMILLUS2 ARRUNTIIUS SCRIBONIANUS.

1. 1 THE new Consuls had already entered upon their office when Tiberius crossed the strait which separates Capreæ from Surrentum, and coasted along Campania, either uncertain whether to go to Rome or not, or else professing the intention for the very reason that he had resolved otherwise. He came several times close up to the city; entered some gardens4 beside the Tiber; and then slunk back once more to his cliffs and his solitary sea, in very shame at his own criminal and lustful practices. For his passions had now become so rampant that he would debauch free-born children, after the fashion of an oriental despot; not for their grace or beauty only, but because the innocent youth of one, or the illustrious ancestry of another, added a fresh stimulus to his desires. It was now that were first invented the terms of sellarii and spintriae, to correspond to

1 The husband of Agrippina and father of Nero: see n. on iv. 75, 1.
2 This Camillus had for his natural and adoptive fathers respectively the M. Furius Camillus of ii. 52, 5, and the L. Arruntius of i. 13, 1; but which was the adoptive, which the natural father, is uncertain. Why he was called Scribonianus is not known; that name was not assumed until a later period (xii. 52, 1).  
3 These were the gardens bequeathed by Julius Caesar to the people, on the right bank of the river. Suetonius says that on this occasion Tiberius came up the river in a trireme as far as the gardens proximos naumachiae (i.e. the naval amphitheatre built by Augustus), guards being posted on the banks to keep off the crowd. When Horace attempts to shake off his bore, he tells him he has to visit a sick friend: Trans Tiberim longe cubat is, prope Caesaris hortos (Sat. i. 9, 18).
filthy forms and multiplicities of lust. The office of
hunting up and dragging in victims was assigned to
slaves, who would offer bribes for compliance, and
meet reluctance with menaces; if resistance were
offered by friends or parents, they would use open
violence, and work their will on them as in a captured
city.  

1 As this chapter presents the indi-
cement against the private life of
Tiberius in its most loathsomeness as well
as most positive form, it is well to ask
how far we are bound to accept as true
the facts here stated. The account
given by Suetonius in the corresponding
passage is so similar in its details, that
we cannot doubt that both writers
drew from the same source; and from
the nature of the case that source must
have been mainly, if not entirely, the
popular rumour prevalent at the time.
We have already seen how frequently
Tacitus first records the existence of
some rumour or suspicion, and then
afterwards, having thus satisfied his
conscience as a historian by indicating
the nature of his evidence, permits the
suspicion to harden into an assertion,
and treats the matter to which it refers
as an established fact. This is especi-
ally true of the private life of Tiberius.
The mere secrecy of that life in its later
years would lead naturally, in an atmo-
sphere like that of Rome, to the inven-
tion and propagation of every evil
rumour in regard to it. Immorality of
the grossest kind was so rife in Rome,
that to attribute it to an opponent had
become the ordinary stock-in-trade of
personal abuse. If it be true, as
Tacitus tells us, that in those days no
accusation against any one was con-
considered complete unless a charge of
maiestas was added to it, it is equally
true that no accuser, whatever the other
charges on which he relied might be,
faulted to superadd to them a vilification
of the private life of the accused. This
fact alone should make us chary of
accepting as true all the foul stories
current at the time in regard to per-
sonages who had become objects of
public detestation. Tacitus himself
lays down a caution which may well be
applied to the case which we are now
considering: 'The truth is that Sejanus
was thought capable of devising any
villainy; but the ingrained love and
affection of Tiberius for him, and the
hatred of every one towards them both,
that any tale against them, however
fabulous or monstrous it might be,
found ready credence' (iv. x. 3).
It has been already pointed out (see
n. on i. 4) that all we know, on
certain evidence, of the public life and
character of Tiberius during his earlier
years, is inconsistent with a life of
private debauchery. His strenuous,
over-anxious attention to public business;
his indifference to ordinary pleasures;
his interest in literature and Greek
learning; his impatience of scandalous
conduct, especially in members of the
imperial family, which he punished
with a severity deemed excessive by
Tacitus himself; his loathing towards
his own profligate wife Julia—all these
things lead us to doubt that Tiberius,
in his later days, could have given him-
self up to a life of infancy. We bear
no whisper of the kind during his
earlier years, when his life was public,
and spent in Rome: it is only when his
life was withdrawn from public view,
when positive evidence was no longer
forthcoming as to how his time was
spent, that he is asserted to have
changed the whole current of his life—
and that, too, because of the fact that he
lived to a hale old age, enjoying good
health to the last.

Some of the details given in this
chapter (ut more regio pubem ingenuam
stejris polinere ... in his modestiam
pueritiam, in alis imagines maiorum
incismentum cupidinis habet) are mere
rhetorical exaggerations, suggest-
ing motives incapable of proof, and
wholly foreign to the character of
Tiberius. And if there be an element
of truth in the tales of kidnapping and
violence given in the closing words of
the chapter (praesopstique servi ... exer-
cebant), it is not necessary to suppose
that these things were done by the
order, or with the knowledge, of
Tiberius. We know from Petronius
how wild and borderless life in Italy
was at that time, and what outrages
2. 1 Meanwhile at Rome, as though the scandalous doings of Livia had only just come to light, and not been punished long before, cruel decrees were pronounced against her at the new year; even against her statues and her memory. The property of Sejanus was taken out of the public Treasury, and transferred to the Fiscus; just as if that made any difference. Such proposals, in identical or slightly varied terms, were strenuously supported by men bearing the names of Scipio, Silanus, or Cassius; when suddenly Togonius Gallus, thrusting his ignoble self could be committed with impunity. We may well believe that outrages like those here described might be committed by the freedmen and other members of the household of Tiberius. Cut off at Capri from the pleasures and opportunities of the city, it would be easy for them to organize raids on to the main land, and outrage or carry off whom they would. None would dare to resist a party coming from Capri; all would be done and excused in the emperor’s name; and the emperor himself would thus gain the credit for the disorderly conduct of his own household. After the death of the hated tyrant, all such stories, to use the language of Tacitus, were ‘raked up and made the most of’ (iv. 11, 4); and in view of such a possibility, as well as of the other doubts which surround the case, we may well give the verdict of ‘not proven’ on this most repulsive part of the indictment against Tiberius as set forth by Tacitus in the closing words of Book VI.

1 According to Dio (liv. 11, 7), Tiberius put to death Livia and others on receiving a written account of the murder of Drusus, drawn up by Apiana, wife of Sejanus, before her own suicide. He mentions another version according to which Tiberius would have spared Livia for the sake of her mother, Antonia minor; but that Antonia herself caused her to be starved to death. This is a good instance of the manner in which the court gossip followed by Dio and Suetonius could always add a new element of horror to every story. Tacitus makes a more discriminating use of his authorities. 

8 So in the case of Messalina, the senate decreed nomen eius et effigies privatis ac publicis locis demovendas (xi. 38, 4); so it was decreed that Libo’s image was not to appear at the funerals of his descendants (ili. 32, 2); and in ili. 17, 8 the consul Cotta proposes Pisonis nomen erudendum fastis. Paris has not infrequently inflicted similar forms of retribution on her fallen heroes.

5 The cue was taken up all over the empire. An inscription from Interamna of A.D. 39 is dedicated providentiae Ti. Cassari, and congratulates him subiato hoste perniciosissimo: no doubt Sejanus is meant. See Rushforth, p. 69.

4 i.e. the emperor was, in fact, master of all. In theory, while the fiscus, like the administration of the imperial provinces, was under the direct control of the princeps, the aarium could only be dealt with by decree of the senate. The rule for confiscated property was that it should be paid into the aarium; but, like all others, that rule could be overridden by the emperor, as when he appropriated for the fiscus the property of Sextus Marius (chap. 19, 1).

6 The plurals Scipiones, Silani, Cassii, here mark the bitterness of Tacitus in recording the adulation displayed by members of the great old houses. Only individuals are meant in each case.

This person is unknown. The absurdity consisted partly in taking it for granted that Tiberius meant what he said; partly in the proposal to protect the emperor from his enemies in the senate by a bodyguard chosen by lot from that body (Dio, liv. 17, 4).
among these mighty names, made himself ridiculous by imploiring the Emperor to select a certain number of senators, twenty of whom should be chosen by lot to act as an armed escort and protect his person whenever he should enter the Senate-house. He had taken in good faith, no doubt, a passage in the Emperor's letter asking for the protection of a Consul on his journey from Capreae to the city. But Tiberius had a way of throwing in a jest in the midst of serious affairs; so he thanked the Fathers for their goodness, and inquired:—Who were to be chosen, who left out? Would it be always the same men, or would the duty be taken in rotation? Were they to be young men, or men who had held office? Private individuals, or magistrates? How would it look to see them girding on their swords at the door of the Senate-house? His life would not be worth the having if arms were needed for his protection. Such was his temperate reply to Togonius; and he advised nothing further than the cancelling of the resolution.

On the other hand, he administered a cutting rebuke to Junius Gallio, who had proposed that members of the Praetorian Guard should have the

1 How little Tiberius meant what he said is shown by the fact that the consul Regulus actually presented himself at Capri for the purpose, and was refused admittance (Dio, liv. 13, 3).

2 This was doubtless the famous letter immortalised by Juv. x. 71: *Nil horum: verbosa et grandis epistola venit = A Capreis.*

3 Suetonius relates some instances of the grim humour of Tiberius. On the arrival of a tardy embassy from Illyricum to present condolences on the death of his son, he replied that 'he too was grieved for them, at the loss of their excellent citizen Hector' (Tib. 52). Some wag, as a funeral passed, shouted aloud to the corpse to tell Augustus that 'his legacies to the people were still unpaid.' Tiberius caused the amount of the legacy to be paid to the man at once; then ordered him off to execution, bidding him to be sure and inform Augustus that he had received his legacy (Tib. 57).

4 *i.e.* either those who had not yet risen above the quaestorship (tenable at twenty-five years of age), or such as had been specially adlecti a principi. See Furn. Intr., p. 80.

5 This Gallio is ranked by Seneca as one of the four foremost declaimers of his time (Contr. x. pr. 13); but Quintilian speaks only of his 'linkings,' *titemius Gallionis* (ix. 2. 97). He adopted Annaeus Novatus, one of the sons of Seneca, who, taking the name of L. Annaeus Junius Gallio, became pro-consul of Achaia in St. Paul's time, and is famous as the Gallo who 'cared for none of these things' (Acts xviii. 17).
right of sitting in the Fourteen Rows after they had served their time. As if questioning him to his face, Tiberius asked:—*What had he to do with the soldiers? From whom but from the Emperor* should soldiers receive either their commands or their rewards? Had Gallio discovered a new principle which had escaped the wisdom of Augustus? Or had he been seeking to stir up discord and sedition as a satellite of Sejanus: inciting the rude minds of the soldiery to break through the rules of the service, under pretence of conferring on them a distinction?

Such was the reward that Gallio reaped for his carefully studied flattery. He was expelled from the Senate forthwith, and soon afterwards from Italy. And as it was objected that he would find life too pleasant in the famous and delightful island of Lesbos, which he had chosen for his exile, he was dragged back to Rome, and given over for private custody to the magistrates.

In the same despatch, to the great satisfaction of the Senate, the Emperor struck at Sextius Paconianus, an ex-Praetor, a pestilent person of great effrontery, who pried into everybody's secrets, and had been selected by Sejanus to help in laying a plot for Gaius Caesar. No sooner was this known than the hatred long entertained against him burst out openly, and he would have been condemned to death had he not offered to turn informer.

1 *i.e.* they were to be treated as equites, and to receive the privileges of primitiarii.

2 At the height of the mutiny in Pannonia, Drusus, temporising, had referred the troops to the *arbitrium senatus et patres*; but, as a matter of fact, their petition was never laid before the senate at all. The retort of the soldiers to Drusus shews how hollow they felt his pretense to be (i. 26, 6).

3 As Furn. points out, Roman law recognised four kinds of custody which the magistrates could inflict: (1) in a career; (a) *militaris custodia*, as in iii. 22, 5, and xiv. 60, 5; ep. Acts xxviii. 16. 'But Paul was suffered to dwell by himself with a soldier that kept him;' (3) with special guardians or *vades,* as was the case with Pompianus (v. 8, 2); or lastly (4) in their own houses, as in the passage before us. See Dig. xiviii. 3. 1.

4 Paconianus was strangled in prison, A.D. 36 (chap. 39, 1).
And when Sextius denounced Latinius Latiaris, the sight of these two men, both equally detested, in the position of accuser and accused, filled every one with joy. Latiaris, as I have related, had taken the leading part in entrapping Titius Sabinus; and he was the first to pay the penalty. While the affair was still pending, Haterius Agrippa attacked the Consuls of the preceding year, asking:—How was it that, after threatening each other with accusations, they were silent now? It must be that fear, or complicity in guilt, was serving as a bond between them: the Fathers, at any rate, should not keep silence as to what they had heard. To this Regulus replied that he would bide his time for revenge, and state his case before the Emperor. Trio’s answer was that their rivalry as colleagues, and their angry words to one another, had better be forgotten. Agrippa still persisting, Sanquinius Maximus, a Consular, implored the Senate not to add to the Emperor’s troubles by hunting up further subjects of exasperation: he could himself provide a remedy. Thus was Regulus said, and Trio’s fate postponed. What made Haterius so hateful was that, although enervated by somnolence or nights of debauch, and protected by his own lethargy from the Emperor’s cruelty, however great it might be, he never ceased plotting the downfall of illustrious men in the midst of his lusts and gluttonies.

On the first opportunity after this, Cotta Messalinus, a man long and deeply hated for his alacrity

---

1 See iv. 68, 2, and 71, 1.
2 Mentioned as a relation of Germanicus, and gaining the praeitura by his influence (li. 51, 2); as proposing a capital sentence on Clutorius (lii. 52, 4); and as cos. A.D. 22 (liii. 52, 1). He had made a show of independence as trib. pleb. in A.D. 15 (lii. 77, 3).
3 See above, v. 11, 1.
4 A man of some distinction: twice cos. suf., and ultimately legatus of Lower Germany, where he died A.D. 47 (xi. 18, 1).
5 A special object of Tacitus’ detestation. See v. 3, 4; also iv. 20, 6; ii. 32, 2, and vi. 7, 1. His full name was M. Aurelius Cotta Maximus; he
in proposing measures of severity, was accused on various counts: that he had spoken of Gaius Caesar as effeminate; that he had described a priestly banquet on Augusta's birthday, at which he was present, as a funeral feast;¹ and that, when complaining of the excessive influence of Manius Lepidus and Lucius Arruntius,² with whom he had some difference on money matters, he had added:—*The Senate will protect them; but I shall have my dear little Tiberius to protect me.* All this was proved against him by men of high standing; but when the case was pressed, Messalinus appealed to the Emperor. And before long a letter arrived, in which Tiberius, by way of defence, recounted the origin of his friendship with Cotta, enumerated his many services towards himself, and begged that *a criminal interpretation might not be put on words twisted from their natural meaning, or uttered in all frankness at the dinner-table.*³

6. 1 The preamble to this letter attracted much attention. It ran thus:—

*If I know, Conscript Fathers, what to write to you at this time, or how to write, or, in fine, what not to write, may all the Gods and Goddesses destroy me with a destruction worse than that with which I feel myself to be perishing day by day!*⁴

was a son of the famous M. Valerius Messalla Corvinus, the orator, poet, grammarian and historian, the friend and patron of Horace and Tibullus. His brother Messalla 'Valerius, from whom he is said to have taken the name of Messalinus, appears also as a servile senator in i. 8, 5. He himself is called a gourmand by Pliny (N. H. x. 22, 27), and is described by Persius as the 'blessed offspring of the great Messala' (li. 72). Yet Ovid rates him highly.

¹ A feast to the dead given nine days after the funeral. The point of the jest was that as Livia had not been deified, a banquet to her was but a funeral feast.

² For these men, see i. 13, 2 and iii. 32, 2.

³ The excellent tenor of this reply would show that even in his later days Tiberius had flashes of good sense and even kindliness, such as were not unfrequent in his earlier years. Tacitus does not quote them as expressing a sentiment honourable to Tiberius; he quotes them only to exhibit him in the odious character of a protector of informers.

⁴ These famous and pathetic words are quoted verbatim by Suet. Tib. 67,
So terribly had his own crimes and excesses re-coiled in punishment on his head! How true the saying of the great ancient sage, that if the souls of tyrants could be laid bare, the marks of blows and torture might there be seen; since just as the body is scored by stripes, so is the mind by cruelty, by lust and wicked purposes. For neither high station nor seclusion could save Tiberius from confessing with his own lips the torments of his heart, and the penalties which he was undergoing.

The Senate was then permitted to try the case of the senator Gaius Caecilianus who had been the principal witness against Cotta. It was resolved that he should receive the same punishment as Aruseius and Sanquinius, the accusers of Lucius Arruntius. Never did Cotta receive an honour like to this. He was of noble birth, no doubt; but he had been reduced to beggary by extravagance, and his life was stained with infamies; and yet now, in receiving so honourable a reparation, he was put on a level with a man of spotless character like Arruntius.

Next, Quintus Servaeus and Minucius Thermus were brought into Court. Servaeus had held the Praetorship, and had been on the staff of Germanicus; Minucius was a man of equestrian rank, who with the exception that for quam ferire Suetonius has quam cotidie ferire, leaving out the me. It is clear that the letter must have been officially preserved, and that both writers had access to it. Tacitus interprets the words as a confession of the pangs of conscience; Suetonius, more naturally, as an expression of despair and helplessness—adding that some regarded them as a presage of the hatred of which he was to be the object after death.

1 i.e. Socrates. The reference is to the Gorgias, 524 E, where Rhadamantus is represented as finding the soul of some potentate all unsound, marked by the scars and wounds inflicted on it by a life of wickedness and debauch. See also Rep. ix. 579, D.

2 Nothing is known of these persons, or of their accusation and punishment: the impeachment of Arruntius must have been recorded in the lost book. His subsequent accusation, and his noble speech before suicide, are related below, chap. 47, 2 and 48, 2–5.

3 Servaeus is mentioned (ii. 56, 5) as the first governor of Commagene, and as one of the accusers of Piso (iii. 13, 3).

4 Possibly father of the ex-praetor Minucius Thermus, who was sacrificed to please Tigellinus (xvi. 20, 2).
had enjoyed, but not abused, the friendship of Sejanus. Hence much sympathy was felt for both. Yet Tiberius denounced them as criminal in the highest degree, and Gaius Cestius¹ the elder² was instructed to tell the Senate what he had communicated to the Emperor in writing.

Cestius accordingly undertook the prosecution; for of all the evil features of that time, none was more calamitous than this, that the first men in the Senate would practise the vilest delation: some openly, some in secret; not distinguishing between kinsfolk and strangers, between friends and unknown persons, between things of yesterday and things obscured by time. Words uttered in the street, or across the dinner-table, on any subject whatever, were noted for accusation, every man hurrying to be first to mark down his victim: some few acting in self-defence, the greater number as if infected by some contagious malady.

Minucius and Servaeus were condemned, but turned informers;³ a similar fate overtook Julius Africanus,⁴ a Gaul of the Santonian tribe, and Seius Quadratus, a man whose origin I have not been able to discover. Many similar cases, I am aware, of peril and of punishment are passed over by the historians, wearied out, perhaps, by their abundance, or perhaps anxious to spare their readers the torture inflicted on themselves by such a catalogue of horrors. I myself have come across many incidents worthy of being known, though left unnoticed by other writers.⁵

¹ Supposed to be the same as the C. Cestius who showed some independence of character (iii. 36, 2.)
² As the son of Cestius is not mentioned, probably praetores should be read instead of patres.
³ Thus a man could save himself by turning informer, even after being himself condemned; see chap. 3. 5.
⁴ Probably father of the famous orator of that name under Claudius and Nero.
⁵ These words imply that Tacitus had authorities of his own to draw from.
Thus at a time when others had been falsely dis-

claiming all friendship with Sejanus, a Roman knight

of the name of Marcus Terentius, accused of that

offence, dared openly to avow the fact. He put his

case before the Senate in this way:—

"It may, perhaps, be more hurtful to my interests to plead 2

guilty to this charge, than to deny it; but whatever the

result, I will confess, not only that Sejanus was my friend,

but that I eagerly sought his friendship, and rejoiced to

have secured it. I had seen him sharing with his father 3

the command of the Praetorian Guards, and discharging

various duties, both military and civil. ¹ His relations, his 4

connections, were advanced to office; to be intimate with

Sejanus was to enjoy the favour of the Emperor; to be

his enemy, was to live in terror, to be humiliated and

struck down. I will adduce no example save my own: at 5

my own sole peril, I will defend all who, like myself, had

no share in his latest designs. For it was not the Sejanus 6

of Vulsinii whom we courted; it was the member of the

Julian and the Claudian families, into which he had

entered by alliance; it was your own son-in-law, O

Caesar, your own colleague ⁸ in the Consulship, one who

was discharging the functions of your high station. It

is not for us to appraise those whom you exalt above all

others, or to ask why you have exalted them. To you the

Gods have given the supreme direction of affairs; to us

has been left the glory of obedience. We can but see

from, not accessible to, or not used by, other writers. It is characteristic that

he should apologise for giving the speech of a mere eques, specially ex-

plaining that it was dignum cognitum. See the similar remark in iv. 32, 4.

¹ These words, with those below in section 6 of this chap., show clearly

that Sejanus held no official authority of his own, except that of commander

of the Praetorians, and that he acted only as the instrument of Tiberius.

⁸ The elevation of Sejanus to the consulship along with Tiberius himself

in A.D. 31 might well suggest to the Roman world that he was destined as

successor to the empire, and was taking the place of Germanicus and Drusus;

for they alone had had the honour of being colleagues of Tiberius in the

consulship since he became emperor. The names of Tiberius and Sejanus

occur together on coins of the year. See Cohen, i. p. 198, No. 97, and

Rushforth, p. 69.
what passes before our eyes: on whom you bestow wealth and office, who it is that wields the greatest power, whether to help or to hurt. That Sejanus had all this, none can deny. To pry into the Prince’s inner mind, to search out his secret intentions, is to tread on dangerous, forbidden ground: nor though you search, may you discover. Think not, Conspect Fathers, of that last day of Sejanus, but of his sixteen years of power. We had to show respect to a Satrius, to a Pomponius; to be known to his freedmen and doorkeepers was accounted a grand thing. What then? Shall this plea hold good for all alike, without distinction? Not so: but let a just boundary-line be drawn. Let conspiracies against the State, and murderous plots against the Emperor, meet with punishment; but in what concerns friendship and friendly offices, let the same rule that has justified you, Caesar, justify us also.

9. 1 The boldness of this speech, coupled with the fact that a man had been found to give voice to what was in the minds of all, had so great an effect, that his accusers, for this as well as previous delinquencies, were punished with death or exile.

Then came a letter from the Emperor attacking Sextus Vistilius, an ex-Praetor. Vistilius had once been a favourite of the Emperor’s brother Drusus, and Tiberius had transferred him to his own staff.

1 See iv. 34, 2. Who Pomponius was is unknown; he was certainly not the Pomponius Secundus of v. 8, i.

2 Finis here means ‘the dividing line, or ‘boundary,’ between what is permissible and what is not; and so the principle of demarcation.’ Cp. our own use of the wood ‘partition; ’ ‘And thin partitions do their bounds divide’ (Dryden, ‘Abs. and Achit.’ i. l. 164); ‘What thin partitions sense from thought divide’ (Pope, ‘Essay on Man,’ Ep. i. 226). Cp. Hor. Od. i. 18, 10: exiguus fine libidinum. Furn. is surely wrong, with Nipp., in making finis refer to time only; as if the meaning were, ‘our attentions must be excused, because they were continued as long as he was your friend, and no longer.’

8 That Tiberius should have thus recognised the straightforward manliness of this speech, and yielded to its logic, is greatly to his credit. So keen a home-thrust would have doubled the wrath of a Caligula or a Nero, and met with no mercy. The story suggests that the clumsy servility of the Roman nobles did much to aggravate the cruelty of Tiberius.

4 Nothing is known of Vistilius.
The cause of offence was that he was believed, truly or falsely, to have written something in which Gaius Caesar was stigmatized as a profligate. Forbidden the Emperor’s table for that reason, he first attempted, with his aged hand, to open his veins; then had them tied up again, and addressed a petition to the Emperor: but on receiving a relentless reply, he opened them once more. Next Annius Pollio, Appius Silanus, with Scaurus Mamercus and Sabinus Calvisius, were all accused of treason in one batch; Pollio’s son, Vinicianus, was included in the list also. All these were men of distinction; some had held the highest offices. The consternation of the senators—for which of them could not count one or other of these distinguished men as his friend or kinsman?—was relieved when Appius and Calvisius were saved by the testimony of Celsus, an officer of the Urban Cohorts, who was one of the informers. Tiberius postponed the cases of Pollio, Vinicianus, and Scaurus, in order to try them himself, in conjunction with the Senate; but in doing so, he let fall some sinister references to Scaurus.

Even women were not safe. They could not be accused of taking part in politics; so they were arraigned for their tears. Thus an aged lady of the name of Vitia, mother of Fufius Geminus, was put

---

1 Similarly Germanicus renounced his friendship with Piso before his death, ii. 79, 3: Augustus did the same to D. Silanus, iii. 24, 5. See also iii. 12, 4.
2 All these were men of high rank. Annius Pollio was cos. suf. A.D. 90. Appius Julius Silanus was cos. A.D. 28 (iv. 68, 1). Mamercus Scaurus was probably cos. suf. A.D. 21 (i. 13, 4): his fate, due, according to Tacitus, to the enmity of Macro, is recorded below, chap. 29, 4 and 5. C. Calvisius Sabinus was cos. A.D. 26 (iv. 46, 1); L. Annius Vinicianus, son of Annius Pollio, joined the rebellion of Camillus Scribonianus against Nero, A.D. 59 (Dio lx. 15, 1, and Ann. xii. 52, 2).
3 C. Fufius Geminus was cos. A.D. 29 (v. 1, 1). As the name Vitia is elsewhere unknown, Nipp. suggests Vibia, quoting an inscription in which the same mistake is made. In v. 3, 2 Tacitus tells us that Tiberius, in a letter to the senate, rebuked Fufius for his ‘female friendships:’ in crepsuit amicitias multies, Fufium consulem oblique terrinquantem. We may conjecture that the mother lived in a circle in
to death for bewailing the death of her son. This case was tried before the Senate; but the Emperor himself\(^1\) sentenced to death two of his oldest friends, Vescularius Flaccus and Julius Marinus. Both had accompanied him to Rhodes; both had been his inseparable companions in Capreae. Vescularius had been his go-between in the trap set for Libo; Marinus had assisted Sejanus in bringing Curtius Atticus\(^3\) to his ruin. Every one rejoiced to see these men’s devices recoil upon themselves.

About the same time the Pontiff\(^2\) Lucius Piso died a natural death—a rare occurrence in a position so illustrious. This Piso was a man who never, of his own motion,\(^4\) made any servile proposal; and if the necessity were laid on him, he would act temperately, which the doings of the emperor were too freely criticised, and where Fufius exercised his wit amid a company of female admirers (aptus alliciendis feminarum animis, dixit idem et Tiberium acerbis facit et irridere solitus, v. 9, 3). The death of Fufius himself is not recorded.

\(^1\) We have seen that both in criminal and civil causes the emperor claimed a supreme jurisdiction of his own, alongside of the constitutional power of the consuls and the senate; which again he could override as he chose. Sometimes he would himself preside in the senate when sitting as a court; as in chap. 9, 7, where he postpones the cases of Follio and others ut spes cum senatus mosceret. Augustus constantly administered justice, sometimes in the regular courts, but sometimes domi cubans (Suet. Oct. 33). The holding of courts in the Palatium became common under the later emperors. We have seen that the case of Piso illustrates these different modes of procedure (iii. 10, 6). After the conspiracy of Sejanus, Suetonius represents Tiberius at Capri as soli hoc cognitioni per totos dies dedixit et intentus (Tib. 69). The power of life and death was held to be derived from the proconsular power, exercised within the city.

\(^2\) The title pontifex (confirmed by an insc. of A.D. 14) distinguishes this man from three other Pisos bearing the same praenomen (ii. 34, 1; iv. 45, 1, and iv. 62, 1). This Lucius Piso was consul B.C. 15, and is supposed to have been father of the Pisones of the Ars Poetica (see n. on iv. 45, 1).

\(^3\) The words of Tacitus imply that though Piso never originated cruel proposals, he occasionally had to join in them under compulsion; but that when doing so, he did something to mitigate their harshness. This makes it probable that he is the person referred to in ii. 32, 4, and iii. 68, 2. In the former passage his name seems to occur, after the condemnation of Libo, as joint-proposer of a harmless mark of disgrace: that the day of Libo’s suicide should be kept as a dies festus. In the latter, being directly called upon by Tiberius to propose a sentence on Silanus, he makes a strong appeal to the emperor’s clemency, and proposes, in lieu of death, a sentence of relegatio. This was accepted, with a slight further mitigation, by Tiberius.

\(^4\) Mentioned in iv. 58, 1 as the only aeques splendidus, besides Sejanus, included in the suite of Tiberius when he retired to Capri. His death must have been recorded in the lost portions of Books V. and VI. In the wildness of his panic, Tiberius lost all confidence even in his nearest and oldest friends.
and with discretion. His father, as I have mentioned, was of censorial rank; he himself had earned triumphal honours in Thrace. He had reached his eightieth year. His chief title to fame, however, was the rare tact with which he had filled the office of Prefect of the City. That office had but recently been made permanent; and men chafed against its authority all the more that they were unaccustomed to it.

For in former times, when the King, or afterwards the magistrates, left the city, a temporary officer was deputed to administer justice and deal with emergencies, that the city might not be left without a ruler; and tradition tells how this post was bestowed by Romulus upon Denter Romulus, by Tullus Hostilius on Numa Marcius, and again by Tarquinius Priscus upon Spurius Lucretius. After that, the appointment lay with the Consuls; a shadow of which custom still survives in the nomination of one to discharge the office of Consul during the Latin festival. During the

---

1 The reference is lost. The father of this Lucius (L. Calpurnius Piso Caesoninus) was censor in B.C. 59, and consul B.C. 58, when he was Cicero's bitter enemy (see Cic. in Pisonem). His sister Calpurnia was married to Caesar, as his last wife, B.C. 59; it was she who vainly urged him to stay away from the senate on the fatal Ides of March.

2 This was in B.C. 11. The campaign for which he gained the triumphal ornaments had lasted, according to Velleius, for three years (Vell. ii. 58, 1).

3 Not implying that he failed to secure obedience, but that as the holder of a new office with large powers he shewed tact in enforcing them.

4 This person is unknown.

5 According to Livy, i. 20. 5, Numa Marcius was chosen as patriarch by King Numa as first pontifex, and entrusted with the administration of the whole religious and ceremonial law. Plutarch (Numa 21) makes him son-in-law of Numa, and so father of Ancus Marcius; which is consistent with Livy's account (i. 39, 1).

6 Appointed by Tarquinius Superbus, and left in command of the city by Brutus when he hurried to Ardea to raise the army against Tarquin (Liv. i. 59, 12).

7 Drusus is mentioned as holding this ancient form of the office in A.D. 25 (iv. 36, 2). The development of the office of praefectus urbi well illustrates the manner in which imperial institutions were grafted on old republican forms. In kingly and early consular times the king or consul appointed a praefectus urbi as a substitute, to discharge their duties within the city during any temporary absence—especially for the yearly ceremony of the Feriae Latinae, held on the Alban Mount. With the institution of the praetorship in B.C. 367, the office became less necessary; and with the exception of its retention for the Feriae Latinae, fell into abeyance. Mommsen supposes that it was abolished by the Licinian laws in that year. Caesar, being above all law, nominated several prefects to discharge such of his duties as he chose to commit to them. During the Actian campaign, and at other times also, Augustus devolved large powers.
civil war, Augustus put all Italy and Rome under the
knight Cilnius Maecenas; and when he had risen to
power, the vastness of the population, and the tardy
operation of the law, induced him to select a man of
consular rank to control the slaves and that part
of the population which nothing but the fear of force
can keep in order. The first holder of this office was
Messalla Corvinus; but after a few days he was dis-
missed as incompetent. After him Statilius Taurus,
though well up in years, filled the post with great
credit; and then came Piso, who earned the respect
of all during the whole of his twenty years' service.

on Maecenas as his viceroy, though
with no special title; Agrippa exercised
similar powers in the city during the
absence of Augustus in B.C. 21 and
years following. Acting on the advice
of Maecenas (Dio lll. 21), Augustus
established the office as here described
by Tacitus on a more regular footing
(nova officia excogitavit...praefecturam
urbis, Suet. Oct. 37), though only to be
exercised in his absence, and with the
main object of keeping the police of the
city. Under Tiberius, the office and
title became permanent. The prefect
had under his command the three
cohorts of Vigiles, and provided for the
security of the city in all respects. He
assumed a jurisdiction, at first confined
to matters of police, but gradually ex-
tending to every department of criminal,
and even in some cases to civil, juris-
diction; and thus became eventually
one of the principal officers of state,
responsible to the emperor alone.

1 According to Suetonius, as repro-
duced by Jerome, Messalla seems to
have received the appointment in B.C.
25. He adds that he abdicated the
office on the sixth day, in civilem potes-
tatem esse contestans. It was incivilibis
inasmuch as it put Rome into the posi-
tion of a provincial city.

2 According to Dio (liv. 19, 6) Augustus
left Statilius Taurus in charge of the
city and Italy on his departure for
Gaul in B.C. 16. More probably Sta-
tilius was appointed in B.C. 25, on the
resignation of Messalla, and the words
of Dio refer to some extension of his
powers in B.C. 16.

3 This would make Piso's appoint-
ment date from A.D. 12, before the
death of Augustus. Halm and Nipp.
here substitute xv. years for the M.S.
xx., for two reasons: (1) Piso does not
appear as swearing allegiance to Tiberius
on his accession (l. 7, 3), along with
the prefect of the Praetorian Guards and
the praefectus annonae; hence they
argue the office must have been vacant
at the time; (2) to make the dates of
Tacitus agree with a story told by
Suetonius, Tib. 42, illustrating Tibe-
rius's nimmer vini aviditatem. The
story is that on one occasion Tiberius
spent two whole days, and the interven-
ing night, in a drinking-bout, along with
Pomponius Flaccus and L. Piso; im-
mediately after which he rewarded the
former with the province of Syria, the
latter with the prefecture of the city.
But as Pomponius could not have been
legatus of Syria till long after A.D. 12,
and as Piso, if appointed in A.D. 12,
must have been appointed by Augustus,
and not by Tiberius, Furn. considers
that the whole story must be false, and
that Tacitus omitted to mention it
because of its absurdity. But though the
dates are wrong, the essence of the story
is given both by Seneca (Epq. lxxxii.
12) and by Pliny (H.N. xiv. 28 (22)),
in a manner which proves it to have
been generally known and believed. In
any case, there is no reason for changing
the text from xx. to xv. In A.D. 12,
Tiberius was in a position which would
have enabled him to procure for a friend
either a prefecture or a province; and
Pomponius received other appointments
—that of Moesia in A.D. 19—as well as
Syria. The evidence as a whole con-
irms, rather than weakens, the authority
of Suetonius.
The Senate accorded him the honour of a public funeral.

A question was then raised in the Senate by Quintilianus, a Tribune of the plebs, as to a Sibylline volume which Caninius Gallus, one of the College of Fifteen, wished to include among the writings of the Prophetess. The decree which he proposed for that purpose was carried without discussion; whereupon Tiberius wrote a letter in which he gently censured the Tribune, whose youth, he said, accounted for his ignorance of ancient custom; but he rebuked Gallus, familiar as he was with sacred law and practice, for having brought up such a matter on no certain authority, and in a thin house, without waiting for the opinion of the College, and without having had the poem read and adjudicated upon, in the usual way, by the Masters of the College. He reminded him further that Augustus, because of the many unauthorised verses passing current under the famous name of the Sibyl, had fixed a day before which all such poems were to be deposited with the Praetor Urbanus, after which day none might be kept in private hands. A similar decree had been issued in

---

1 Tiberius looked jealously on all assertion of priestly or superstitious claims. Thus he rebuked Asinius Gallus for suggesting that the Sibylline books should be consulted in regard to the inundation of the Tiber (i. 76, 2); he caused the senate to sift carefully the claims made by Greek cities to the right of asylum, and endeavoured to check its abuse (iii. 60-63); and Drusus checked a similar abuse in respect of taking hold of the statue of the princeps (iii. 36).

2 Dio tells us that Augustus, finding a quorum of 400 members was too large, relaxed the rule; but apparently without fixing any other number in its place.

3 It appears from inscriptions that there were five magistri in the college of Quindecimviri; Augustus names himself as a magister on the Mon. Anc. iv. 36 (see Mommsen). The term must have marked a grade in the college, not its presidency.

4 Suetonius tells how Augustus, on becoming Pontifex Maximus in B.C. 13, caused a search to be made for Latin and Greek prophetic books, and burnt such of them as were of doubtful authority—no less than 2000 in all. He retained none but the Sibylline books, and had a recension made of these also, placing those that were retained in gilded cases in the temple of the Palatine Apollo. Tiberius himself, annoyed at the circulation of a foolish Sibylline prophecy after the death of Germanicus, made a similar revision, and condemned many more (Dio lvii. 18, 5).
an earlier generation, after the burning of the Capitol during the Social War,\(^1\) when Samos, Ilium, Erythrae, Africa also and Sicily, and the Italian colonies,\(^2\) were ransacked\(^3\) for the poems of the Sibyl—whether she were one or many—and when the priests were charged with the duty of discriminating those which were genuine, so far as human means could do so. In obedience with which ruling the book was submitted to the Fifteen for examination.

I 3. 1 In this year the high price of corn nearly provoked a riot. For several days the theatre\(^4\) was filled with a mob who vented their discontent with a freedom seldom exhibited towards the Emperor. Tiberius, in high displeasure, found fault with the magistrates and Senate for not putting down the demonstration with a high hand; mentioning at the same time from what provinces he was importing corn,\(^5\) and in how much

---

\(^1\) The Capitol was burnt, not during the social war, which ended in B.C. 88, but in the fight between Sulla and the Marian in the year B.C. 83. Either, therefore, Tacitus makes a slip (which is improbable; for in Hist. iii. 72, 2 he expressly mentions that the temple was burnt *civili bello*); or else he uses a milder term to keep out of view the ugly fact of civil war. On a similar principle, the triumphs of Caesar and Augustus were never nominally celebrated as over Romans.

\(^2\) *i.e.* the Greek Colonies in the South of Italy, collectively known as *Magna Graecia*.

\(^3\) Tacitus overlooks the obvious fact that the search for Sibylline prophecies, after the burning of the Capitol, was made for the very different purpose of replenishing the collection, not of weeding it out. Doubtless much spurious trash found its way in on that occasion. Dionysius of Halicarnassus confirms this account of the search made for the books, those existing in his time being *ex pollicis sumptis deis* (Ant. iv. 69, 493). The antiquarian Varro is stated by Lactantius to have recognised ten genuine Sibyls; of these the Cumaean was the most celebrated.

\(^4\) The meetings of the comitia being now purely formal, and no political *contiones* being permitted, the theatre was the only place in which popular feeling could find a vent. The incident recalls Juvenal's famous saying that the Roman populace had now but two objects of desire, *panem et circenses* (x. 81).

\(^5\) We have seen above (iii. 54, 6-8; iv. 6, 6) how great were the pains taken by the emperors to secure a supply of corn for Rome. In A.D. 51 the stock in the city was only enough for 15 days' consumption: Claudius was surrounded by a howling hungry mob, and driven across the forum (xii. 43, 2). According to Seneque (Brev. Vit. xviii. 4), there was only corn enough in Rome for seven or eight days when Caligula died. In republican times, Sicily was the main granary of Rome; in imperial times Egypt, and the north coast of Africa. Josephus quotes a statement that, in round numbers, Rome was supported by Egypt for four months of the year, and by Africa for four (Bell. Iud. ii. 16, 4). Cp. xii. 43, 4: *Sed Africam potius et Aegyptum exercerum, navibusque et casibus vita populi Romani permissa est.*
greater quantities than had been done by Augustus. So the Senate reproved the populace in a decree of old-fashioned severity, and an edict of equal stringency was issued by the Consuls. Tiberius himself remained silent; but his silence was attributed, not to forbearance, as he had hoped, but to arrogance.

At the close of the year, three Roman knights—Geminius, Celsius, and Pompeius—were condemned on a charge of conspiracy. Geminius had become the friend of Sejanus, from having habits of extravagance and luxury like his own, not as sharing in any of his serious designs; but Julius Celsius was a Tribune of the plebs. Loosening the chain which bound him, Celsius put his head through the loop, and then throwing his whole weight against it, thus broke his neck. Then Rubrius Fabatus was taken into custody for attempting to fly from the city in despair at the present state of affairs, and throw himself on the mercy of the Parthians. Caught in the Straits of Sicily, and dragged back to Rome by a centurion, he could give no plausible reason for his distant journey; but he was allowed to live on, forgotten rather than forgiven.

1 Furn. quotes Aur. Vict. Epit. i. 6, who says that twenty million bushels of wheat were said to have been imported annually by Augustus from Egypt.

2 Of these men nothing is known. As they were only equites, Tacitus does not think it worth while to record their praenomina. So with the equites named i. 73, 1; ii. 48, 1, etc.

3 Senators were not permitted to travel beyond the limits of Italy and Sicily without leave from the emperor (Dio iii. 43, 6). Gallia Narbonensis was specially thrown open to them in A.D. 49 (Ann. xii. 23, 1).
A.D. 33. CONSULS SERVIUS SULPICIUS GALBA¹ AND L. CORNELIUS SULLA FELIX²

15. 1 After long considering on whom he should bestow his two grand-daughters, now approaching the age of marriage, Tiberius selected Lucius Cassius and Marcus Vinicius.³ Vinicius derived his origin from the municipal town of Cales; his father and grandfather had been Consuls, the rest of the family were of equestrian rank. He was a man of gentle nature, and a graceful speaker. Cassius was a plebeian, but of an old and respected Roman family; and though he had been strictly brought up by his father, he was more remarkable for amiability than for force of character. To the latter Tiberius gave Drusilla, to the former Julia, both of them daughters of Germanicus; announcing the fact to the Senate in terms of slight compliment to the young men. Then offering some unsubstantial excuses for his absence, he passed on to graver topics: complaining of the enmities he encountered in doing his duty, and asking that whenever he entered the Senate-house, he might be escorted by the Prefect Macro, with a few Tribunes

¹ The future emperor (June, A.D. 68 to January, A.D. 69). The praenomen which he bore at this time was Lucius, not Servius; for on being adopted by his stepmother, Livia Ocellina, he took the name of L. Livius Ocella; reverting to his original name, Ser. Sulpicius Galba, on his elevation to the empire (Suet. Galba, 4).
² The cognomen Felix which this consul bears in the Fasti of Nola indicates that he was a descendant of the Dictator Sulla. He was praetor peregrinus in A.D. 29. We heard of a L. Sulla in iii. 37, 4.
³ i.e. Drusilla and Julia (or Livilla), aged respectively 16 and 15, the two youngest children of Germanicus. The birth of the latter at Lesbos is recorded ii. 54, 1. Their elder sister Agrippina was already married to Cn. Domitius (iv. 75, 1).
⁴ L. Cassius Longinus was consul in A.D. 30, his brother Galus being consul sufl. in the same year. Their father had been consul sufl. in A.D. 11.
⁵ M. Vinicius was consul in A.D. 30, along with L. Cassius. His father Publius (mentioned iii. 11, 9) was consul in A.D. 2, his grandfather Marcus in B.C. 10. Velleius dedicated his history to this Vinicius when consul in A.D. 30.
⁶ Successor to Sejanus in the command of the Praetorian Guard. His full name was Naevius Sertorius Macro.
and centurions. The Senate passed a decree in the widest terms, without any limitation as to the number or class of soldiers to be employed. But for all that, Tiberius never again set foot in the city, much less in any public assembly, though he would often steal round his capital by side-ways, and then sheer off from it again.

Meanwhile a host of prosecutors rose up against persons who were enriching themselves by usury in violation of the law passed by the Dictator Caesar. That law had laid down certain limits as to the lending of money and the holding of landed estate inside Italy; but as private interest always gets the better of the public good, it had long fallen into abeyance. The lending out of money upon usury had long been a trouble in the city, a constant cause of strife and discord; and attempts had been made to check it even

---

Footnotes:

1 This message conveys the idea that a genuine but vague and wild terror had taken possession of the emperor's mind, and almost upset its balance. The open acknowledgment of apprehension, and the piteous request that the senate would grant a protection to the emperor—absolute master of the whole resources of the state—indicate a sense of weakness and a craving for sympathy foreign to the character of a mere tyrant, and recall the tone of the famous letter addressed to the senate in the preceding year (chap. 6, 1). Suetonius inserts similar words into the hypocritical letter written to the senate just before Sejanus was denounced: mittent alterum e conditibus qui se seneam et solmum in conspectum eorum cum aliquo militari praestidio perduserent (Tib. 65).

2 The only law in regard to debt known definitely to have been enacted by Caesar was the temporary measure de pecunii mutatis, passed in B.C. 49. Setting his face against the desire of his extreme supporters for tabulae novae, i.e. a total abolition of debts, he relieved debtors (1) by striking off arrears of interest from the capital sum due; (a) by requiring creditors to accept in payment the property of their debtors, valued at the prices current before the Civil War (Suet. Jul. 42; Dio xli. 37-38; App. ii. 48; Caesar, B.C. iii. 15). It is to be noted that Caesar, in the last-named passage, omits all reference to the first of the above-named provisions: Mommsen thinks he was ashamed of it. A further law of a permanent character must have followed. Tacitus here tells us that it was de modo censendi postidemque intra Italiam; i.e. it laid down a maximum sum which any capitalist might put out at interest, and that maximum was to bear some proportion to the amount of land in Italy possessed by the lender. The object of the measure was to force capitalists to invest part of their money in land, and so revivify Italian agriculture. See Mommsen, vol. v. pp. 398-402 (English trans.).

3 The debt troubles, so well known to the readers of Livy, lasted over the whole period from B.C. 495 to the passing of the Lex Hortensia B.C. 286. The sufferings caused to the plebs by the Roman law of debt supplied, in fact, the stimulus which goaded them on to wrest an equality of political privilege from the patricians.
in ancient times, when manners were less corrupt than they are now. First, the Twelve Tables\(^1\) limited the rate of interest which might be charged to 10 per cent.;\(^2\) for up to that time wealthy persons had exacted what rate they chose. Next, a tribunitian law reduced the rate to 5 per cent.\(^3\) At last, the lending out of money on interest was forbidden altogether;\(^4\) and many measures were passed to meet the fraudulent evasions which, continually repressed, were being continually devised, with an ingenuity truly marvellous. On the present occasion, the Praetor Gracchus, who was president of the court in which such cases were tried, embarrassed by the number of persons brought

\(^1\) No authority but Tacitus attributes this law to the XII. Tables (B.C. 453). Livy ascribes it to the tribunes of the plebs in B.C. 337 (vii. 16, 2).

\(^2\) The phrase unciam inerum faenus is now universally admitted to have meant interest at the rate of one-twelfth of the principal (literally one ounce in the pound) per annum. This would be equivalent to 84 per cent. Niebuhr supposes that this rate was paid monthly, and first came into use when the Roman year had only ten months; so that with the year of twelve months, the rate would be equal to 10 per cent. But this is very doubtful. It was only in later times that interest came to be paid monthly; it was originally paid only once a year.

\(^3\) This was in B.C. 342 (Livy vii. 27, 3). In Cicero's time the rate of interest was centesima, i.e. a hundredth part of the principal paid monthly = 12 per cent.

\(^4\) Furn. and Nipp. take this to mean that interest was forbidden altogether in B.C. 342, relying on Livy (vii. 42, 1) supported by Appian (B.C. 1. 54). But Appian probably only follows Livy, and Livy's language is not certain: \textit{invenio apud guardiam L. Genuciuni tribunum plebis tulisse ad plebeem ne faenerare liceret.} Apart from the inherent improbability of such a law, it is inconsistent with Livy's statement that the harsh law of debt, which rendered the debtor's person liable for his debts, was only abolished in B.C. 320 (viii. 28, 9). Such a law never was, and never could be, acted upon. The proper meaning of versus, the word used in the present passage (\textit{vetita versusa}), is the contracting of a fresh loan to cover both principal and interest due; and a law forbidding it merely meant that the capital of a debt should not be increased by arrears of interest. In other words, it made compound interest illegal. It was this addition of compound interest which made the debtor's position so hopeless \textit{multiplici sum sorte excolita mergentibus semper sortem usuris} (Livy vi. 14. 7); and probably the object of the law of B.C. 342 (ambiguously put by Livy as \textit{ne faenerare liceret}) was merely to make such addition illegal. If this were so, the first of the two provisions enacted by Caesar in B.C. 49 (see above on section 1) would only be a re-enactment of the old law of B.C. 342.

\(^5\) One form of fraud is explained by Livy, xxxv. 7. The money-lenders, finding themselves hampered by the usury laws \textit{cum multis faenestribus legibus constraicta avaritia esset:} a phrase which of itself shews that usury had only been restricted, not forbidden, had devised a plan of evading them by having loans entered in the names of socitii, i.e. non-citizens, who were not amenable to these laws. To correct this, a \textit{plebiciscitum} was passed in B.C. 193, putting \textit{socitii ac nomen Latinum} on the same footing as Roman citizens in regard to the law of debt.
into court, referred the matter to the Senate; and the senators, scarce one of whom was free from blame in the matter,\(^1\) threw themselves on the mercy of the Emperor. He was pleased to allow a period of eighteen months, during which every one should bring his money affairs into conformity with the requirements of the law.

This step brought about a scarcity of money; not only because all lenders were calling in their loans at once, but also because the coined metal which had come in from the many recent condemnations and confiscations was all locked up in the Imperial Treasury, or in the Fiscus of the Emperor. To meet this scarcity, the Senate had ordained that lenders should invest two-thirds of their capital in landed property in Italy. The creditors, however, asked for payment in full; and the debtors, when called upon, could not honourably be in default. So at first they all ran to the money-lenders, entreating their forbearance; next, the Praetor's court rang with notices of suits; and the plan devised to bring relief, the buying and selling of land, turned out to have exactly the opposite effect, since the capitalists hoarded up their money with a view to purchasing landed properties. The quantity of land for sale brought about a fall of price; and the greater a man's indebtedness, the greater his difficulty in selling. Thus many were ruined, the loss of property carrying with it loss of position and reputation also.\(^2\) At last Tiberius came to the rescue by

\(^1\) i.e. violations of the usury laws, especially that of Caesar (see above).
\(^2\) The crisis described in this chapter arose in this way. The edict of the senate gave the money-lenders eighteen months within which to adjust their loans in accordance with the law. During that time, they were to call in all the money which they might have lent in excess of the proportion allowed by law. The senate fixed that proportion at one-third only, requiring the capitalist to invest the remaining two-thirds in land in Italy; while the debtor was to pay up at once two-thirds of his debt, either in cash or by surrendering land of equivalent value. The creditors, however, exercised their right to call up
distributing through the banks a sum of one hundred million sesterces, and allowing landowners to borrow for three years without interest, provided that they could offer security to the Treasury for double the amount. Thus credit was restored, and by degrees private lenders came into the market. The purchase of lands, however, was not carried out on the conditions laid down by the Senate. These were enforced with much strictness at the beginning, as is usual in such cases, but with very little in the end.

18. 1 The reign of terror was then revived. A charge of high treason was brought against Considius Proculus, who was celebrating his birthday, misdoubting nothing, when he was hurried off to the Senate-house, condemned at once, and executed. His sister Sancia was accused by Quintus Pomponius and interdicted from fire and water. This Pomponius was a person of restless character, who gave it as an excuse for these

the whole; the immediate result was a scarcity of cash, and a depreciation of all landed estate, ruinous to its possessors. The tightness in the money-market was thus intensified by three causes: (1) Tempted by the fall in land-value, creditors called in the whole of their loans, with a view to re-investing the amount in land; (2) Speculating on a still further fall, they held up their money, instead of investing it at once, thus ‘bearing’ the market; (3) In consequence of the many confiscations which had taken place since the downfall of Sejanus, large sums of money were locked up in the aerarium and the fiscus, where they lay idle, unavailable for circulation. To relieve the pressure in the money-market brought about by these concurrence of causes, Tiberius had recourse to a measure analogous to what we should call a suspension of the Bank Act. He ceased the market by putting a sum of a hundred million sesterces at the disposal of the banks for three years, to be lent without interest to all persons who could give landed security to double the amount of the loan. The compulsory sale of land was thus delayed; those who had security to offer got cash for their present necessities; private lenders came into the market again, and credit was gradually restored. The sympathies of Tacitus, as usual, are in favour of the restrictive law (see 16, 1), the re-enactment of which, at the instance of the delators, had caused all the mischief. The law itself, it would appear, now died a natural death.

1 The money was not entrusted to ordinary bankers; special Government banks were opened temporarily for the purpose, under the superintendence of a senatorial commission (Dio lviii. 27, 5). Livy tells how a similar financial crisis had been relieved exactly in the same way in B.C. 353, when a commission of five was appointed to lend money from the treasury to all debtors who could offer security (vii. 21).

2 Doubtless the same Considius who impeached Pomponius Secundus (v. 8, 1). The fact that Q. Pomponius, the brother, took part in the accusation, shews that the indictment was, in part at least, an act of revenge upon Considius.
and such-like services that, if he gained the Emperor’s good-will, he might save his brother Pomponius Secundus.

Even Pompeia Macrina was exiled, a lady whose husband Argolicus, with his father Laco—both leading men in Achaia—had already felt the displeasure of Tiberius. Her father also, and her brother—the former an illustrious knight, the latter a man of praetorian rank—seeing condemnation before them, both put an end to themselves. Their offence was that their grandfather Theopanes of Mytilene had been one of the intimate friends of Pompeius the Great, and that Greek flattery had awarded him divine honours after his death.

After them, Sextus Marius, the richest man in Spain, was accused of dishonouring his own daughter, and was hurled from the Tarpeian rock. That his wealth was the cause of his ruin was made evident from the fact that although his gold and copper mines were confiscated to the State, they were appropriated

---

1 This cold-blooded persecution of an honoured provincial family—husband, brother, father, father-in-law and Macrina herself—could have had no justification like those directed against noble Roman houses. Its object certainly was not their money, as Orelli suggests. The great-grandfather, Theopanes of Mytilene, had given material help to Pompey during the Mithradatic war; he also wrote a history of his campaigns. For this he was presented with the citizenship in the presence of the Roman army (Cic. pro. Arch. 10, 24), taking the name of Cn. Pompeius Theopanes. He became Pompey’s intimate friend. Cicero mentions him several times as a person from whom confidential information could be obtained. His son (or grandson) Pompeius Macer, was employed by Augustus to arrange his library (Suet. Jul. 65), and became his procurator in Asia (Strabo, xiii. 3).

2 i.e. Pompeius Macer, praetor in A.D. 15 (J, 72, 4).

3 Coins record this deification, granted no doubt in gratitude because Theopanes had obtained for Mytilene the privileges of a free city. Thus in the East, at any rate, the deification of the emperors was but the continuance of a practice already in vogue. The offence of the descendants consisted in their having, and perhaps boasting of, a deified ancestor. To claim divine honours, or divine descent, would be to put themselves on a level with the emperor, and so render them open to a charge of maestas.

4 The obvious blank in the MS. before aurariasque seems best supplied by aerarias, for which Nipp. quotes Pliny (H.N. xxxiv. 3, 3), who speaks of a famous Spanish copper ore called Marianum or Cordubense. Others read argentarias, for which also S. Spain was famed.

5 i.e. had the amount paid into the fiscus instead of into the aerarium.
by Tiberius. At last, excited to madness by all these executions, Tiberius ordered that every one who was in custody on the charge of complicity with Sejanus should be put to death. There lay the victims, in untold number; of both sexes, of every age, high and low, singly or huddled together: no relative or friend might stand by, or shed a tear over them, or even cast a look at them for more than a moment. Guards were set round to watch for every sign of grief, and to follow the rotting bodies until they were dragged into the Tiber, there to float down the stream, or ground upon the banks: none might burn them, none touch them. Terror had cut them off from all commerce with their kind; and cruelty, waxed wanton, closed the door of pity on them.  

20. About this time Gaius Caesar, accompanying his grandfather back to Capreae, took to wife Claudia, daughter of Marcus Silanus. Under the mask of an assumed modesty, this youth concealed a most inhuman temper. On the condemnation of his mother, at the death of his brothers, no word escaped him: he would reflect every mood of Tiberius, take pattern by his demeanour, and echo his very words. Hence in

---

1 As Nipp. remarks, Tacitus speaks of Tiberius as of a wild beast excited by the taste of blood. Similarly Juvenal compares him to Ajax in his fury: *Quam timeo victus ne poenas exigat Iliu* (x. 84).

2 The grandeur of this description almost condones its exaggeration. So in chap. 39, 2, with equal extravagance, Tacitus speaks of *undantiam per domos sanguinem aut manus carnificum*. Suetonius is no palliator of the cruelty of Tiberius; yet in describing this period of terror he gives but twenty persons, including boys and girls, as the maximum number put to death on one day. Cp. the similar exaggeration in regard to the disaster at Fidenae, iv. 62, 63.

8 Her full name was *Iunia Claudilla* (Suet. Cal. 12). The father, Marcus, is mentioned (iii. 24, 5) as interceding for his brother Decimus, exiled for an intrigue with Julia, and restored in A.D. 20; and in iii. 57, 2 as proposing an adulatory decree. Caligula forced him to cut his throat in A.D. 37, because he had declined to accompany him on board ship in rough weather, being afraid of sea-sickness (Suet. Cal. 23). Dio says Caligula killed him because of his pluming himself on his virtue and his relationship to himself (lxx. 8, 4).
later days the well-known saying of the orator Passienus,\(^1\) that \textit{no man had ever been a better slave, or a worse master.}\(^3\)

I must not omit to mention a prognostication of Tiberius in regard to Servius Galba, who was Consul for that year. After sending for him, and sounding him by converse on various topics, Tiberius made this speech to him in Greek:—\textit{And you too, Galba, will one day have a taste of Empire:}\(^5\) thus foreshadowing for him a long-deferred and short-lived lease of power. This he did through his knowledge of astrology; for he had had leisure at Rhodes to study that science under Thrasyllus,\(^4\) a teacher whose skill he had proved in the following manner.

Whenever he sought counsel on such matters, he would go to the top of his house, which overhung a precipice, taking with him as his sole confidant an illiterate freedman of huge physical strength. This man, crossing a steep place where there was no path, would lead the way for the person whose skill Tiberius desired to test. On the way down, if Tiberius suspected the astrologer of ignorance or imposture, the freedman would hurl him into the sea below, that no

---

\(^1\) C. Passienus Crispus \textit{(quo ego nil novi subtillius in omnibus rebus}}, Sen. Nat. Quest. IV. Praef. 6\) was an orator of distinction, as was his father before him. He was twice consul, the second time in A.D. 44. His position is shewn by his marriages. He married first Domitia (sister of Agrippina’s first husband, the father of Nero), and secondly Agrippina herself: Agrippina is said to have poisoned him. Instances of his clever sayings are given by Sen. Ben. i. 12, 2, and Quint. Inst. vi. 1, 50.

\(^2\) For a further account of the character of Gaius, commonly called Caligula, see chaps. 45 and 46.

\(^3\) This story is given by various writers in different forms. Suetonius tells it of Augustus: \textit{Constat Augustum puero adhuc salutantis se inter aequales appro-

\(^4\) Thrasyllus had returned to Rome with Tiberius, and remained his constant companion. Dio says, Tiberius consulted him every day, though treating all other astrologers and magi with the greatest severity. He had been with Augustus in his last moments (Suet. Oct. 98). He died one year before Tiberius (Dio livii. 27, 1), having saved many lives by his cleverness in assuring Tiberius that he had ten more years to live (id. 27, 3), and therefore need not hurry over his executions.
one might live to tell the tale. Thrasyllus was introduced by this passage; and in answer to the queries of Tiberius, foretold with great sagacity his future rise to power. Tiberius, greatly agitated, enquired of Thrasyllus, Had he cast his own horoscope? What of the year, of the day, through which he was now passing?

Having calculated the position and the distances of the stars, Thrasyllus at first hesitated; then trembled; the closer he looked, the greater his amazement and alarm: till at last he exclaimed that some unknown and well-nigh fatal peril was hanging over him.

Tiberius embraced him, complimented him on his prescience of danger, and assured him of his safety. From that day forth he accepted all his pronouncements as those of an oracle, admitting him among the number of his most intimate friends.

2. 1 As for myself, when I hear tales of this kind, my mind remains in doubt whether human affairs are ordered by Fate and unchangeable necessity, or proceed by chance. For you will find the wisest of ancient philosophers and their followers at variance on this point. Many firmly believe that the Gods take no care for our beginning, or our end, or for man’s life at all: so continually do we see evil befall the good, and the wicked in enjoyment of prosperity.

---

1 i.e. the position of the heavenly bodies at the moment of birth.
2 The words fate et necessitate, as Furn. points out, make up one idea—‘a predestined necessity,’ corresponding to the Greek Moiρα and άνδρα.
3 i.e. the doctrine of the Epicureans. He gives first the view which he himself rejects, that all things go by chance.
4 Cp. the passage in Horace (Sat. i. 5. 101), who borrows from Lucr. v. 83 and vi. 58: Namque deos didici securum agere aevum, = Nec si quis miri faciat natura, deos id = Tristes ex alto caeli demittere leto.
Others again hold that there is a correspondence between Fate and the course of events; only that this does not depend upon the movements of the stars, but on certain elemental principles, and on the sequence of natural causes. Yet even so, they would leave to us our choice of life; which once made, what comes after is fixed immutably. Nor are things good or evil, say they, which the multitude so deems: for many are happy, who seem to be struggling with misfortune, while many more, in the midst of great wealth, are most miserable, if only the former bear their ills with fortitude, and the latter use their good things unwisely. Nevertheless, most mortals cannot rid themselves of the belief that every man’s future is pre-ordained at his birth; but that, through the trickery of those who pronounce upon what they do not know, some things fall out otherwise than as foretold, thus destroying the credit of a science to which both our own and former ages have furnished notable testimonies. For not to wander over-far from partial free-will, exercised once for all at the beginning of life, such as is figured in the well-known apologue of the Choice of Hercules.

1 *i.e.* the doctrine of the Stoics. The doctrine of *fatum* in this passage is thus clearly intended to contain a religious element; being contrasted with the Epicurean view that the Gods pay no regard to human affairs. Seneca actually identifies Fate with the Deity: *hunc eundem et fatum si dixeris, non mentiri* (de Ben. iv. 7. 2).

2 Granting, then, the Stoical view that Fate is an established and necessary order of events, divinely appointed and fore-ordained, the question arises, is there a correspondence between that order and the motions of the heavenly bodies, so that they who read the stars can read the future also? or does the correspondence follow the lines of natural causation?

3 *i.e.* whichever way the above question be decided, those who believe in Fate (whether Stoics or others) allow to man a choice of life: which choice once made, the necessary consequences follow. In other words, the necessity they believe in does not exclude a
my subject now, I shall relate in due time how the son of this same Thrasyllus predicted empire for Nero.¹

23. During this year the death of Asinius Gallus² became known. That he died from want of food was beyond question; but whether of his own will, or by compulsion, was a matter of doubt.³ On being asked if he would permit Asinius to be buried, Tiberius granted the request without a blush;⁴ he even complained of the untoward incident which had carried off the accused before he could himself try the case; as if the three years which had intervened had been all too short a time for the aged Consular—the father of so many Consuls⁵—to be brought to trial!

Then came the end of Drusus.⁶ For nine days the points out that most Stoics admitted astrology in some form, either as a factor in causation, or as affording indications of the will of heaven. It is perhaps not generally known that at the present day in India natives religiously preserve their horoscopes. This practice, in fact, affords the only equivalent in that country to our system of registering births.

¹ Furn. suggests with probability that chaps. 21 and 22 have been inserted for an artistic purpose, to give some relief from the catalogue of horrors recorded in this book.

² Asinius Gallus appears frequently in the preceding books as a fussy, self-important senator, always anxious to put his word in, and endeavouring to make his servility more acceptable by a show of independence. Tacitus takes pleasure in recording how his want of tact led him to tread on the toes of Tiberius (see i. 12, 2–6: 76, 2: 77, 3; ii. 35, 3: 36, 1; iv. 71, 3), and how completely he merited the epigram (aridium sed minorum) by which Augustus described his claims to empire (i. 13, 2). The special reason for Tiberius’s dislike to him was that he had married his divorced wife Vipsania (i. 13, 2).

³ Asinius Gallus had been arrested under circumstances of peculiar treachery three years before. On the very day that he was being feasted by the emperor at Capri, and had partaken with him of the loving cup, he was secretly denounced in the senate. A magistrate was at once despatched to carry him off to Rome, where he was kept in solitary confinement under consular custody for three years, with just food enough to support life, and no more. Death alone was thought too good for him. Dio tells us how in another case Tiberius refused to put an imprisoned friend to death, as ‘he was not yet reconciled to him’ (lviii. 3, 6).

⁴ i.e. had the face to grant as a favour what could have been claimed as a right: Asinius having died unheard and uncondemned.

⁵ Of five of his sons known to us, at least three were consuls. All were children of Vipsania. See Nipp.

⁶ The exact date of the arrest and death of Drusus is not known. Sejanus had patronised Drusus with a view to using him as a tool against his brother, while ready to drop him the moment he had no further use for him (iv. 60, 6). In the interval he had been married to Aemilia Lepida (chap. 40, 4); according to Dio (lviii. 3, 8), Sejanus had trafficked with her also against her husband.
young man had supported life on the most pitiable food, having to gnaw the very stuffing of his bed.¹ Some say that Macro had received orders, in the event of an armed rising by Sejanus, to take the young man out of his prison in the Palatine, and put him at the head of the people. But after that, a rumour got abroad that Tiberius was to be reconciled to his daughter-in-law and his grandson; whereupon he preferred severity to mercy.

He even inveighed against the young man after his death. He accused him of personal vices, of plotting the death of his own relatives, and of harbouring designs against his country:² he even ordered a diary³ which had been kept of everything which the youth had done or said, to be read aloud. This seemed the cruellest thing of all. That men should have been posted, through all those years, to take note of his every look, his every groan and secret murmur, and that his grandfather could have brought himself to hear, read and publish all these things, seemed incredible; and yet there it all was, in the letters of Attius a centurion, and Didymus a freedman, with the names of the slaves appended who had intimidated or even struck Drusus if he attempted to leave his chamber. The centurion even reported his own brutal language to the deceased, as if that were something to be proud of, as well as the lad’s dying words. For Drusus at first feigned madness, and cursed Tiberius, as if he were beside himself; then abandoning all hope of life, he uttered the most studied and elaborate

¹ Suetonius confirms this account of the death of Drusus in ima parte Palatii (Tib. 54), as well as that of the instructions said to have been given to Macro in the following sentence (ib. 65).
² Cp. the similar charges made against Nero (v. 3. 3), Galus (chap. 9, 3), and Sabinus (iv. 70, 7). As Furr. points out, the words insensum rei publicae animi are equivalent to the old phrase hostis publicus, or Suetonius’ hostis indicavit (Tib. 54. Cal. 7).
³ See iv. 67, 6.
imprecations upon him, praying that as he had slain his
daughter-in-law, his brother’s son and his own grand-
children, and had filled his whole house with blood,
so might he himself pay the penalty to his name and
race, to his ancestors and to posterity.¹ The senators
interrupted the reading, as if in reprobation; they
were filled with horror and amazement that one who
had hitherto been so artful in concealing his iniquities
should have reached such a pitch of assurance² as to
throw down, as it were, the prison walls, and display
his grandson under a centurion’s lash, receiving
blows from slaves, and begging in vain for the last
necessaries of life.

25. 1 Scarcely was this distressing event over, when
news came of the death of Agrippina.³ The execution
of Sejanus, I doubt not, had buoyed her up with
hope; but when she found herself treated as cruelly
as before, she put an end to herself—unless indeed
food was denied to her that she might be thought to
have died by her own hand.⁴ And now Tiberius broke
out with the foulest charges against her, accusing her
of having committed adultery with Asinius Gallus,
and asserting that it was chagrin at his death which
had made her despair of life. But in truth Agrippina,

¹ Drusus at first feigned madness, to
excuse his uncontrollable outbursts
against Tiberius; then, finding that to be
of no use, deliberately cursed Tiberius.
Wild outbreaks of passion (atros Drusi
ingenium, iv. 60, 5) seem to have been
common to all the children of Germani-
cus and Agrippina.
² The extraordinary mixture of an
habitual reserve with occasional fits of
frankness, sometimes, as here, of the
most brutal kind, is one of the mysteries
of the character of Tiberius. It gives
the idea of a strong and passionate
nature, kept ordinarily under severe
control, but subject to sudden tempests
which swept away all bonds of prudence,
decency and self-respect. Under the
influence of such storms he seemed to
revel in proclaiming his own infamies
and the degradation of his family (see
chap. 25, 4).
³ Book V, chap. 5, 2 broke off at
the point at which Agrippina and Nero
had been denounced by Tiberius to
the senate, and the senate had declared
itself ready to anticipate his wishes.
Both were hurried off, chained, into
banishment; Nero was declared a
public enemy, and sent to Pontia;
Agrippina to Pandateria, a little island
off the bay of Naples, in which the
elder Julia had been imprisoned for
five years (i. 53, 1).
⁴ Suetonius says she was treated with
the greatest brutality: rursus mori
inedia destinanti, per vim ore diduco,
infulcire cibum iussit (Tib. 53).
with all her ambition, her intolerance of rivals, and her masculine preoccupations, had none of a woman's frailties. Tiberius mentioned that she had died on the same day on which Sejanus had paid the penalty two years before, and desired that circumstance to be noted; he took credit also to himself that she had not been strangled, nor her body flung on to the Gemonian stairs. Thanks were voted to him for this, and a decree was passed that on the eighteenth of October in every year, the day marked by the double death, an offering should be made to Jupiter.

Soon after this Cocceius Nerva, one of the Emperor's constant companions, a man learned in all law, human and divine, unassailed in his position, and in full health of body, made up his mind to die. When Tiberius heard of it, he came and sat beside him, inquired of him his reasons, and implored him not to carry out his design; impressing upon him at last how distressing it would be to himself, and how damaging to his reputation, if his nearest friend were to seek escape from life without cause. Nerva declined all conversation, and persisted in his abstinence from food. Those who knew his mind best reported that his inner view of the evils of the times had filled him with terror and indignation, and that he had made up his mind, while still unscathed and unattacked, to die an honourable death.

The fate of Agrippina, strange to say, drew along with it that of Plancina, the widow of Gnaeus Piso. Plancina had exulted at the death of Germanicus; and

---

1 The single senator of consular rank who had accompanied Tiberius to Capri (iv. 58, 1). The emperor Nerva was his grandson. His son (the emperor's father) was a jurist also (Pomp. Dig. i. 2, a, 48).
2 The usual phrase to denote a jurist of the first rank. Capito is similarly described (iii. 70, 4).
3 This is almost the only incident recorded by Tacitus which shews Tiberius capable of a personal friendship.
4 For Plancina, see n. on ii. 43. 4.
when Piso fell, she owed her safety as much to the hostility of Agrippina as to the entreaties of Augusta. But now that both the hatred and the favour had passed away, right was done; the well-known charges were brought up against her, and she inflicted on herself, with her own hand, a punishment which was tardy rather than undeserved.

27. 1 Depressed as the public mind was by all these calamities, it came as a fresh grief that Julia, who had been the wife of Nero, married into the family of Rubellius Blandus. There were many who could remember that the grandfather of Rubellius was a plain Roman knight, belonging to Tivoli.

2 At the close of the year Aelius Lamia died, and was honoured with a censorial funeral. He had been relieved at last of his mock appointment as Governor of Syria, and made Prefect of the City. He came of a good family, enjoyed a hale old age, and had gained in public esteem from being forbidden to assume his governorship. Soon afterwards, on the death of Flaccus Pomponius, Propraetor of Syria, a letter was read from the Emperor complaining that the most illustrious citizens, and those best fitted for

---

1 A striking instance of the aristocratic temper of Tacitus. In the midst of a reign of terror, when judicial murders were taking place every day, he here represents the general gloom as darkened by Julia's marriage to the grandson of a municipal Roman knight. Seneca mentions the grandfather as the first person in the position of a knight taking to the teaching of rhetoric; all previous teachers having been only libertini (Contr. ii. pr. 5). One of the two sons of this marriage, Rubellius Plautius, was father of the Rubellius Blandus apostrophised by Juvenal as a type of the pride of birth: tecum est mihi sermo, Rubelli - Blande, tules alto Drusorum sanguine (viii. 99).

2 Probably the Aelius Lamia of Horace (Od. i. 26, 8; Epp. i. 14, 6, etc.), to whom he attributes a descent from the mythical founder of Formiae (iii. 17, 2-8).

8 A public funeral of the handsomest kind, such as was given to a censor. See iv. 15, 3; xiii. 2, 6.

4 As in the case of L. Arruntius below, § 3. For Tiberius' habit of appointing governors to provinces and then not allowing them to leave Rome, see i. 80, a and 3. No name of a governor of Syria is known to us since the temporary appointment of Cn. Sen- tuus to hold the province against Piso, in A.D. 19 (ii. 74, 1).

6 As successor to L. Piso, chap. 10, 3.

6 For Pomponius see ii. 32, 3 and 66, 3, and n. on chap. 11, 6.
ANNALS OF TACITUSS.

the command of armies, declined to undertake such duties:—He had been driven, he said, to the necessity of entreating men of Consular rank to take the command of Provinces—forgetting that Arruntius had been kept at home for ten years to prevent his going out to Spain.

Manius Lepidus also died in this year. On this man's wisdom and moderation I have dwelt sufficiently in the earlier books of this history. Of his noble birth I need say nothing; for the Aemilian house has ever been fruitful of good citizens, and even such of them as lived evil lives were persons of distinction.

A.D. 34. CONSULS PAULLUS FABIUS PERSICUS and L. VITELLIUS.

In this year, after a long cycle of ages, the phoenix made its appearance in Egypt, and the marvel afforded material for much learned discussion both to Greeks and to the inhabitants. I shall mention the facts on which all are agreed, with several points not free from doubt, yet not unworthy of being recorded.

The bird is sacred to the Sun. In its beak, and in the markings of its plumage, those who have given representations of it agree that it differs from all other mixed character as a good soldier but servile courtier, see chap. 32, 6 and 7. For this Lepidus see nn. on iv. 20, 4, 5 and i. 13, 2.

Thus Tacitus regards high birth as to some extent a set-off against bad character.

Apparently son of the P. Fabius Maximus mentioned in i. 5, 2 as privy to the visit of Augustus to Agrippa Postumus at Panasia; he was proconsul of Asia under Claudius. L. Vitellius, father of the future emperor, was appointed to a general command over the East during the Parthian troubles about to be narrated (chap. 32, 5). For his description of the bird; his period and proceedings.

28.
birds. Of its length of life, diverse tales are told. The commonly accepted view is that it lives for five hundred years. Some put the interval between two appearances at one thousand four hundred and sixty-one years; holding that, of the three last seen, the first made its appearance in the reign of Sesosis; the next in that of Amasis; the third in that of Ptolemaeus, third of the Macedonian line: each flying to the city called Heliopolis, accompanied by a vast concourse of other birds marvelling at its strange appearance. The two earlier dates are lost in antiquity; but between Ptolemaeus and Tiberius there were less than two hundred and fifty years. Hence some are of opinion

---

1 Herodotus describes the bird from representations of it which he had seen. In size and shape, he says, it resembles the eagle, with feathers of red and gold (ii. 73). Pliny gives it a purple body, a golden neck, a blue and red tail, with crest and plume (H.N. x. 2, 1). Lactantius has a special poem on the phoenix, describing it as half pheasant, half peacock.

2 Herodotus gives five hundred years on the authority of the inhabitants of Heliopolis. The longer period of 1461 years is the ‘annus magnus,’ or ‘Canicularis,’ at the end of which the civil year of 365 days used by the Egyptians comes again into agreement with the true year of 365.25 days (Censorinus, de die nat. 18). Pliny, who quotes Manilius, author of the Astronomica, gives 540 years—some read 509—as the period. Other periods are given by other authorities. It is possible that the number 500 may have been taken roughly as one-third of 1461.

My friend Mr. W. Ewing, Crum, has kindly furnished me with the following note:—For the various lengths of the phoenix-period according to classical writers, see Wiedemann’s Herodot, p. 312. There seems to be no hieroglyphic or astronomical sense in the 500 years here given. But the period of 1461 years is known also as the ‘Sothis period,’ i.e. the number of years it took before the rise of the Dog Star (Sothis) again coincided with the New Year’s Day of the official, moveable year. A great deal has been written about this and the other periods; see Krall in Wiener Sitzen, xxvii. 835, and in Wiener Stud. iv. 36; F. Petrie, Hist. i. 249; Mahler in Aegyptische Zeitschr. xxviii. 115 (elaborate astronomical reckonings); and Cecil Torr, Memphis und Mycenae, 57. The legendary bird was that called in hieroglyphics BNW (probably ‘benne’) sacred to the Sun-god at Heliopolis. Recently it has been proposed to explain the bird’s Greek name, πεινι, as a confusion due to similarity between the Egyptian words for ‘date-palm’ (=ający) and for this particular bird; both would sound like ‘benne’ (Spiegelberg, in Versamml. Deutsch. Philol., 1901).

3 Sesosis is the name given by Dio- dorus (i. 55) to the king called Sesostris by Herodotus, to whom he attributes the conquests made by Rameses II., of the 19th dynasty. Tacitus (ii. 60, 4) agrees with the monuments in assigning them to Rameses. The name Sesosis may be meant for Sethos, the father or brother of Rameses.

4 The date of Amasis was the 6th century B.C.

5 Evidently Ptolemy Euergetes, the third of the Ptolemies, is meant. His father Philadelphus might be described as ex Macedonibus tertius if we reckon from Alexander as the first. But the date of Euergetes, who died B.C. 222, suits best with the words of Tacitus below in § 5: minus ducenti quinqua- ginta anni.
that the phoenix then seen was not the genuine bird;\(^1\) that he did not come from Arabia; and that he performed none of the acts which ancient tradition ascribes to him. For when his tale of years has run, and his death draws nigh, he builds a nest in his own country; over this nest he sheds a genital substance, from which the young phoenix arises, whose first care, on arriving at maturity, is to bury his father. This he does in no random fashion.\(^2\) He takes up a load of myrrh, and essays long journeys with it; when he finds himself fit for the weight, and for the journey, he puts his father's body on his back, carries it all the way to the altar of the Sun,\(^3\) and there burns it. The details are uncertain, and have been embellished by fable; but that at certain times the bird is seen in Egypt, admits of no question.\(^4\)

At Rome, meanwhile, blood never ceased to flow. 29. 1

Pomponius Labeo, whom I have mentioned\(^5\) as having been Governor of Moesia, opened his veins and bled

---

\(^1\) On the authority of Cornelius Valerianus, Pliny gives A.D. 36 as the year of the appearance of the phoenix: he denounced as a manifest imposture the phoenix which appeared, and was brought into the Roman Forum, in A.D. 47, the year when Claudius was censor, and celebrated the Ludi Saeculares. The motive for that imposture is obvious.

\(^2\) The account here given of the proceedings of the phoenix agrees generally with those of Herodotus and Pliny. The latter says the remains of the old bird were carried in its nest. The simplicity of the account of Tacitus recalls somewhat the manner of the Father of History.

\(^3\) At Heliopolis, near Cairo.

\(^4\) The attitude of Tacitus towards the phoenix is similar to his judgment on astrology. He believes in the existence of the bird, but rejects the miraculous tales that have gathered round it.

\(^5\) i.e. in iv. 47, 1. There is a difficulty about the Governorship of Moesia. Poppaeus Sabinus was continued in the governorship of that imperial province, with the addition of Achaia and Macedonia (i. 80, 1), which as a special favour had been relieved from proconsular rule, and handed over to Caesar (i. 76, 4). Dio says this arrangement continued as long as Sabinus lived (he died A.D. 35), and after that (lviii. 25, 5); and yet in ii. 66, 3 (A.D. 19) we find Latinus Pandusa as pro praetore Moesiae, and Pomponius Flaccus appointed to succeed him. In iii. 39, 1 (A.D. 21), P. Vellaeus is in command of the army 'nearest' to Thrace and Macedonia; in iv. 47, 1 (A.D. 26), and in the present passage, Pomponius Labeo is Governor of Moesia; and Dio says he governed that province for eight years after his praetorship (lviii. 24, 3). The inference seems to be that the governor of Moesia was put under that of Achaia and Macedonia, and received orders from him, as in iv. 47, i. As Furn. points out, Moesia was a consular province, while both Labeo and Pandusa were only of praetorian rank.
to death; his wife Paxaea followed his example. For people resorted readily to deaths of this kind from the fear of execution; and also because a man's property was confiscated, and burial was denied to him, if he was sentenced to death; whereas, if he took his fate into his own hands, his body was buried, and his will respected. So great were the benefits of despatch!

In this case Tiberius wrote a letter to the Senate reminding them of an old usage of our ancestors, whereby, when they wanted to break with a friend, they would forbid him their house, and so end the intimacy. To that practice, he explained, he had resorted in the case of Labeo; but Labeo, who was accused of misgovernment and other offences, had sought to screen his crime by exposing his Prince to public hatred. His wife had been alarmed without cause; guilty though she was, she had been in no danger.

Mamercus Scaurus was now put on his trial for the second time; he was a man of evil life, though distinguished alike by birth and by his ability as an advocate.

It was not his friendship with Sejanus that brought him down, but an influence no less fatal—the hatred of Macro; who was now practising, in a more stealthy way, the arts of Sejanus. Macro had denounced Scaurus because of the subject which he had chosen for a tragedy, quoting from it certain verses which

---

1 Furn. quotes iv. 20, a and 30, 3 as exceptions; but there was no confiscation of property in either case. In the former case, that of Silius, only repayment of the liberalitas Augusti was exacted. Dio says there were very few exceptions to the rule (lxi. 15, 4).

2 See ii. 70, 3; iii. 24, 5.

3 Long an object of Tiberius' dislike (i. 13, 4). On the occasion of his accusing Silanus, Tacitus describes him as a ‘disgrace to his ancestors,’ and as ‘dishonouring them by his infamous acts of subserviency’ (iii. 66, 3).

4 Scaurus was distinguished both as an orator and as a writer of tragedies. The story of Dio is that Tiberius took offence at a line of his tragedy of Atreus, imitated from Eur. Phoen. 394, to the effect that ‘the follies of rulers must be endured.’ ‘If I am Atreus,’ said Tiberius, ‘I’ll make an Ajax of him.’ and straightway ordered him to commit suicide. Seneca (Ben. iv. 31) shows that vita probrosus refers not to his conduct as accuser, but to the infamies of his private life; he was probably cos. suf. A.D. 21.
might be applied to Tiberius; but what his accusers 6 Servilius and Cornelius brought against him was that he had committed adultery with Livia, and had dabbled in magical rites. Scaurus worthily maintained the dignity of the Aemilian name by anticipating his sentence; 3 his wife Sextia had incited him to the deed, and shared his fate.

And yet accusers also were punished if occasion offered. Servilius and Cornelius, who had the ill fame of having brought Scaurus to ruin, were indicted from fire and water, and deported to islands, for having accepted bribes to drop an accusation against Varius Ligur. 5 Another case was that of Abudius Ruso, 4 who had held the Aedileship, and served as commander of a legion under Lentulus Gaetulicus. 5 Having threatened to prosecute Lentulus for betrothing his daughter to a son of Sejanus, he was himself convicted and expelled the city. Gaetulicus was at this time in command of the army of Upper Germany; he was greatly beloved by his troops for his kindness of heart and for his gentle discipline; he stood well also with the neighbouring army through his father-in-law, Lucius Apronius. 6 Hence it was commonly reported that he had dared to write to the Emperor that it was not of his own will, but by the advice of Tiberius, that he had entered into an alliance with Sejanus; he might have been deceived as well as Tiberius: and an error which was innocent in the Emperor could not be deemed worthy of death in others. His own loyalty was unimpaired, and would remain so, 5

1 The Magi were properly dealers in philtres, drugs and magic spells of all sorts. See ii. 27, 2: 28, 3: 69, 5.
2 It gives Tacitus some satisfaction that the death at least of Scaurus was worthy of his ancestors.
3 Mentioned iv. 43, 3.
4 Unknown.
5 Cos. A.D. 26 (iv. 45, 1) ; now legatus of Upper Germany.
6 This was the general who failed against the Frisii. See on iv. 73, 1.
provided that no plots were laid against him; but he should regard the appointment of a successor as a death-signal. Let them make a kind of compact together, whereby the Emperor should keep all else, and leave to him the possession of his Province.

Strange as this story was, it derived confirmation from the fact that Lentulus was the only person connected with Sejanus who remained unscathed, and in high favour with Tiberius—Tiberius bethinking himself of the hatred which the people bore him, of his own great age, and of the fact that his power rested not so much on force as on prestige.

A.D. 35. CONSULS C. CESTIUS GALLUS AND M. SERVILIUS NONIANUS.

31. 1 In this year a deputation of Parthian nobles came to Rome, unknown to King Artabanus. That monarch had been true to us, and just to his own people, so long as he had Germanicus to fear; but afterwards, puffed up by his victories over the surrounding nations, and despising Tiberius as old and disinclined

1 Here used of only a projected alliance, just as Sejanus is called the gener of Tiberius, chap. 8, 6, where seen.
2 But only during the life of Tiberius; he was put to death by Caligula on a charge of conspiracy, A.D. 39 (Suet. Claud. 9; Dio, lix. 22, 5).
3 It was doubtless a sense of this fact—that their power rested mainly on prestige, and had no real solid foundation either constitutionally or in the spontaneous loyalty of their subjects—that drove Tiberius and other emperors, especially those not conscious of having won their claims to empire, into so many acts of cruelty. The position of Lentulus at the head of the great German armies was very formidable.
4 Mentioned iii. 36, 2; vi. 7, 3. M. Servilius Nonianus wrote a history of Rome, and is important as one of the probable authorities of Tacitus; Servilius diu foro, max tradendis rebus Romanis celebris et elegantia vitis (xiv. 19, 1). Pliny the Younger quotes him to show how much more ready people in the generation before his own were to attend recitations. Hearing thunders of applause in the palace, Claudius asked what it was; on being told that Nonianus was reciting, he went in to hear him (Epp. i. 13, 3). Possibly he is the vir consularis quoted by Suet. Tib. 6x.
5 Artabanus, an Arsacid on his mother’s side, had been on the throne ever since he had chased away the Roman praetor Vonones, son of Phraates (ii. 3, 1); and when, some years later, Vonones had occupied the throne of Armenia, Artabanus induced Creticus Silanus, by threat of war, to withdraw him from that country also (ii. 4, 4).
for war, he became insolent to us and tyrannical to his countrymen. He also coveted Armenia, over which, when Artaxias died, he set his own eldest son Arsaces as king; and sent envoys with an insulting message, demanding back the treasure which Vonones had left in Syria and Cilicia. Moreover, he used threatening and boastful language about the ancient boundaries of Persia and Macedon, and declared that he would seize all the dominions of Cyrus and Alexander. The main promoter of the secret mission from the Parthians was a man of high family, with wealth to match, called Sinnaces, after whom came Abdus, a eunuch: for in barbarous countries that class is not despised, but exercises great influence of its own. These men called in other notables to their councils; and as there was no member of the Arsacid family whom they could set on the throne, since most of them had been killed by Artabanus, or were not yet grown up, they begged for Phraates, son of the king of that name, from Rome. All they needed, they said, was a name and a sanction; it would be enough if one of the Arsacid house showed himself, by the Emperor’s desire, upon the banks of the Euphrates.

This was what Tiberius wanted. Holding fast to his settled policy of managing foreign affairs by...
diplomacy and craft, without having recourse to arms, he equipped Phraates with everything required to place him on his father’s throne. Meantime Artabanus, on discovering the plot, was at one moment paralysed with fear, at another fired with a lust for revenge; but although barbaric sentiment brands delay as slavish, and expects instant action from a king, he allowed prudential considerations to prevail. Under show of friendship for Abdus, he invited him to a banquet, and administered to him a slow poison; Sinnaces was to be amused with presents and pretences, and kept occupied with public affairs. On reaching Syria, Phraates put off the Roman dress to which he had been accustomed for so many years, and adopted the customs of his Parthian ancestors; but they proved too much for him, and he fell ill and died.

Still Tiberius would not abandon his project. He set up Tiridates, a member of the same family, as a rival to Artabanus; while for the recovery of Armenia he selected Mithradates of Iberia, reconciling him to his brother Pharasmanes, the reigning monarch of that country. He then appointed Lucius Vitellius to take a general charge of Eastern affairs. Vitellius, I am well aware, earned a bad reputation in Rome, and many evil things are told of him; but in the government of his provinces he shewed all the virtues of ancient times. On his return to Rome, what with terror of Gaius Caesar, and intimacy with Claudius, he became a cringing slave; a by-word among

---

1 An excellent summary of the foreign policy of Tiberius.
2 *i.e.* *auctum pecunia, additis stipatoribus*, xii. 16. 3.
3 Probably one of the four grandsons of the elder Phraates mentioned by Strabo. See n. on ii. 1.
4 See n. on iv. 5. 4.
5 See n. on chap. 28. 1. No appointment to Syria has been mentioned since the death of Flaccus Pomponius, A.D. 33 (chap. 27. 3). Probably Vitellius had been appointed, and received now a general commission over the East, like that given to Germanicus. One of his acts was to recall Pilate, A.D. 37 (Jos. Ant. xviii. 4 and 5).
posterity for all that is base in sycophancy. And so his later fame prevailed over his earlier; and the virtues of his youth were effaced by the infamies of his old age.

Mithradates was the first of the princes to take action, compelling Pharasmanes, both by force and treachery, to assist him in his enterprise. They procured emissaries who by offering huge bribes to the attendants of King Arsaces induced them to make away with him; while the Iberians, with a large army, burst into Armenia, and captured the city of Artaxata. On hearing of these events, Artabanush despatched a Parthian force, under his son Orodes, to chastise the invaders, and sent out envoys to hire auxiliaries. On the other side, Pharasmanes secured the Albanians, and called in the Sarmatians, whose chiefs, after the manner of their tribe, took bribes from both parties at once, and espoused opposite sides. Now the Iberians had command of the passes; so they allowed the Sarmatians who were friendly to them to pour into Armenia by the Caspian route, while they easily barred the way against those who were coming to help the Parthians. These last found every access closed to them by the enemy, with the exception of that between the sea and the extremity of the Albanian mountains. But this route is impracticable in summer, when the Etesian gales cause the low ground to be flooded; in winter, the south wind

---

1 See ii. 56, 3.
2 See ii. 68, 1.
3 A general name for Scythian and other tribes north of the Caucasus.
4 The great pass over the centre of the Caucasus chain, called Claustra Caspiarum (Hist. i. 6, 5), Caspiae portar (Suet. Ner. 19), and now called the Pass of Dariel, connects the modern Tiflis with the upper valley of the Terek.
5 * i.e. the coast road along the W. foot of the Caucasus, between Derbend and Bakon. It will be remembered that the Albanians occupied the extreme eastern end of the Caucasus, right down to the Caspian.
6 The Greek ἐπορεία, from ἐπορέω, 'an annual wind.' According to Pliny, north winds begin to blow on the 11th July. These blow gently for eight days, when they are called προδρόμιοι, or
drives back the sea upon itself, and leaves the shallows near the shore high and dry.

34. 1 Meanwhile Orodes was left without an ally; and Pharasmanes, strengthened with reinforcements, called on him to fight. Orodes declined the challenge, but Pharasmanes gave him no peace; he rode right up to his camp, cut him off from his foraging ground, and even hemmed him in with his pickets after the manner of a blockade, till at last the Parthians, unused to such insults, crowded round their prince and demanded battle.

2 Now the whole strength of the Parthians lay in their cavalry, whereas Pharasmanes was strong in his foot also; for the Iberians and Albanians, inhabiting a hill country, are more used to hardship and privation. They claim a Thessalian descent, dating from the time when Jason,¹ having carried off Medea, and begotten children by her, returned to the empty² palace of Aëtes and the deserted country of Colchis. Many stories are told about Jason, and the

'precursors.' In July, B.C. 53, when Cicero was gone due S. from Velia to Vibo down the W. coast of Italy, he had to use oars all the way, giving as the reason, prordromi nulli (Att. 16, 6). The same north wind, increasing in strength, formed the 'Etesians,' which began on July 30th, and blew steadily till August 26th (Plin. H.N. ii. 124-127 and xviii. 74). For the absurd exaggeration that these constant winds, which are gentle in character, should render the coast road impassable in summer, cp. l. 70, where Tacitus similarly exaggerates the effect of the tides on the north coast of Germany. Curtius repeats the same exaggeration about the Caspian shore: A sempitem- trium insens in litus mare incumbit, longique agit fluctus, et magna parte exaustus stagnat; when the wind changes the sea retires and terram naturae suae reddit (Hist. vi. 4, 19).

¹ Jason, the leader of the Argonauts, belonged to the Thessalian town Iolcus, of which his father Aeson was king. The expedition for the Golden Fleece grew out of the usurpation of Aeson's throne by his half-brother Pelias, whose death Medea compassed on her return with Jason to Iolcos. Expelled for this crime, Jason and Medea went to Corinth, where Jason deserted her for Creusa, daughter of King Creon. The legend in its usual form ends with an account of Medea's cruel vengeance on Creusa and Creon, and the murder of her own children; but according to the Albanian version here given (and so Justinus, xili. 2, 12), Jason became reconciled to Medea, took her back to Colchis, reinstated her father Aëtes (meantime deposed) in his kingdom, and settled his followers in the country. It was from these settlers that the Albanians professed to be descended.

² Thus, according to the legend followed by Tacitus, Aëtes was dead, and the throne vacant.
famous oracle of Phrixus. No ram may be sacrificed to Phrixus, because he is supposed to have been carried by one of those animals, whether it really was a ram, or only the figurehead of a ship.

The two armies being now drawn up for battle, each leader addressed his men. The Parthian discoursed upon their Eastern empire and the splendour of the Arsacidae; they had against them a low-born Iberian, with an army of mercenaries. Pharasmanes told his followers that they had never bowed to the Parthian yoke; the greater the prize before them, the more glorious would be their victory, the greater the shame and peril of defeat; and pointing to their own unkempt ranks, and to the gold-bespangled columns of the Medes, he told them that all the manhood was on the one side, all the booty upon the other.

The Sarmatians had more than their leader’s voice to cheer them on. Each called on the other not to let it be an archers’ battle, but to rush the fighting. Hence the battlefield wore a chequered appearance. The Parthians, skilled equally in pursuit and flight, threw open their ranks so as to have room to shoot; while the Sarmatians, throwing aside their bows, which have no length of range, rushed in with pike and sword. At one moment, in true cavalry style, the

---

1 Phrixus, the son of Athamas and Nephete, escaped from the intrigues of his step-mother Ino by riding on the ram with the golden fleece, a present from Hermes. Arrived safe in Colchis, Phrixus sacrificed the ram to Zeus Phystius (or Lakystius); the fleece was hung up in the grove of Ares by Aeetes. The name and legend of Jason were famous in that part of the East (Justin. xlii. 3). They were caught up and spread by the Thessalians included in Alexander’s army. See Grote, chap. 13.

2 The Parthian forces, like those of the Boers, were very mobile, consisting of mounted archers; they rode well and they shot well. Their tactics were to shoot and retire, avoiding close quarters till their enemy was demoralised: their long deadly shafts ‘nailed the shield to the arm that bore it, and the helmet to the head.’ (Oman’s ‘Seven Roman Statesmen,’ p. 198).

3 The terms Medes, Persians, and Parthians, are used indiscriminately by Latin writers. Thus in Horace we have Persae, Od. i. 2, 22; iv. 15, 23; Mede, Od. ii. 16, 1; iii. 8, 19; Parnisi, Od. ii. 13, 18; Sat. ii. 1, 15. Virg. Geo. iii. 31.
lines would be alternately face to face, or back to back; at another, every man would use his weight and his weapons in a stand-up fight, pushing and pushed back by turns. Then the Albanians and the Iberians would spring in, seize the riders, and pull them from their horses; thus the Parthians were pressed on both sides, the horsemen striking at them from above, the footmen, at closer quarters, from below.

Meanwhile, conspicuous above the rest, Pharasmanes and Orodés were cheering on the forward, or encouraging the laggards: each recognized the other, and with a shout they pushed their horses to the charge. Pharasmanes was the more impetuous in his attack; he drove his spear through the helmet of his foe, but being borne on by his horse could not repeat the blow. The wounded prince was rescued by the bravest of his guards; but as a rumour of his death gained currency and credence, the Parthians in panic yielded up the victory.

36. 1 Artabanus soon brought out the whole strength of his kingdom to repair the disaster. The Iberians, from their knowledge of the country, had the best of the fighting; but Artabanus would not have retired before them had not Vitellius created an alarm of a war with Rome by gathering his legions together, and giving out that he was about to invade Mesopotamia.

2 This turned the tide against Artabanus. He gave up his designs upon Armenia, while Vitellius tempted his subjects to abandon a king who had played the tyrant in time of peace, and brought them to ruin by his defeats in battle. Thus appealed to, Sinnaces, whose hostility to Artabanus I have already mentioned, induced his father to revolt, as well as others

1 Probably in the year following.  
2 i.e. in chap. 31, 3.
in his private confidence who were the readier to desert because of the recent succession of disasters. Others who had submitted from fear rather than goodwill, and who plucked up courage now that there was some one to shew the way, flocked in by degrees; till at last Artabanus had none but his foreign bodyguard left, men exiled from their own country, with no sense of right or wrong, mere hired instruments of crime. Taking these with him, he fled precipitately to the distant but adjoining country of Scythia, hoping to get help through his connection with the Hyrcanians and the Carmanians; he thought also that the Parthians, as loyal to their kings in exile as they were restless under their rule, might in the mean time repent and change their minds.

Artabanus having thus fled, and the thoughts of his countrymen being turned towards a new king, Vitellius urged Tiridates to seize his chance, and at the head of his whole forces, Roman and allied, marched to the Euphrates. Here they offered sacrifice, the Roman General, according to custom, offering a boar, a sheep, and a bull; while Tiridates propitiated the river with a handsomely caparisoned horse. While thus engaged, word was brought to them by the natives that the Euphrates, of its own accord, unfed by

1 Hyrcania was situated on the SE. corner of the Caspian, inhabited by Scythian tribes. One of these was the Dahae, among whom Artabanus had been brought up (ii. 3. 1), and from whom the province takes its modern name of Daghestan. Cp. Virg. Aen. viii. 728, where among those included in Caesar’s triumph are Indomitique Dahae et pontem indignatus Araxes.

2 Carmania was a vast half-desert province of the Persian Empire, to the W. of Persis proper (now Pars or Farsistan), and extending S. to the Persian Gulf and Indian Ocean.

3 This sacrifice (called suovetaurilia) was originally offered as an agricultural instruction to Mars. It was afterwards offered at other ceremonies, especially at triumphs, to Jupiter, instead of to Mars. The sacrifice is depicted in two of the most famous remains of Roman sculpture—the bas-relief in the Roman forum, of the time of Vespasian, and that on the Arch of Constantine, which represents Trajan in the act of sacrificing.

4 Like all imaginative people, the Parthians paid homage to rivers; and the horse, as their most valuable animal, was their highest sacrifice. He was usually offered to the sun (Xen. Anab. iv. 5. 35).
rains, was rising to a great height, and curling the
white foam into circlets like diadems—sure omen of a

3 favourable crossing: Others, with more shrewdness,
interpreted the omen to signify that the enterprise would
succeed at the outset, but the success would not be lasting;
seeing that portents on the earth, or in the sky, might be
trusted, whereas on an unstable element, like that of a
river, they were no sooner displayed than snatched away.

4 A bridge of boats having been made, and the army
carried across the river, the first to join the camp
was Ornospades, who came in with a force of several
thousand horse. Formerly an exile, this man had
served with some distinction under Tiberius at the
close of the Delmatian war, and had been rewarded
with the Roman franchise; he had afterwards again
sought the King's friendship, had been held by him
in high honour, and appointed Governor of the flat
country which, being surrounded by the famous rivers
Tigris and Euphrates, bears the name of Mesopotamia.

5 Soon after this, Sinnaces arrived with reinforce-
ments; while Abdagaeses, who was the pillar of the
cause, brought in the treasure and the court para-
phernalia. Vitellius thought it enough to have made
a demonstration of Roman force; so he retired with
his legions into Syria, after addressing some words of
advice to Tiridates and his chief men. The former

1 In A.D. 6-9.
2 The policy of Tiberius towards the
Parthians seems inglorious at first sight.
One of his main objects was to play off
Armenia against Parthia, and to keep
the two countries embroiled with each
other. He was willing to coquet with
any new claimant to power, and to
foment indirectly any intrigue which
promised to aggravate the dynastic or
party discords which were always
smouldering beneath the surface, and
to take advantage of the sudden changes
of fortune which were chronic under
the oriental system of government—a
system of despotism tempered by as-
sassination. He was willing enough to
make a display of Roman force upon
the frontier, and to assume the airs of
an armed arbiter, like Napoleon III. in
his palmy days; as though his supreme
sanction were required for any new
settlement of affairs in either kingdom.
But the moment he was called upon to
take a decisive step, and engage the
forces of the empire in any serious
undertaking, he drew off, satisfied with
having made a show of the majesty of
he exhorted not to forget his grandfather Phraates and his protector Augustus, and all the noble qualities of both; the latter he admonished to be dutiful to their King, and respectful towards Rome, and to keep every man his place and his honour inviolate.¹

I have related the events of two summers in conjunction to afford the reader’s mind some respite from the unhappy state of things at home. For though three years had passed since the execution of Sejanus, none of the influences which soften other men—neither time nor entreaty nor satiety—had any effect upon Tiberius. He still went on punishing old or dubious offences as if they were recent and of the utmost gravity. Haunted by this terror, Fulcinius ² Trio ³ would not wait to be prosecuted. His will contained a scathing denunciation of Macro and the Emperor’s chief freedmen; the Emperor himself being stigmatised as a dotard who had been so long absent from the city that he had become almost an exile. These remarks his heirs would have suppressed, but Rome, and leaving the contending factions to stew in their own juice. It was not a dignified policy; but it was enough to satisfy public opinion in Rome, where any appearance of bowing to the supremacy of the empire could be construed into a triumph; and it was, in reality, a policy more in harmony with Roman interests than a forward policy would have been. Parthia contained none of the materials suitable for incorporation in the Roman Empire. Western methods were inapplicable to her; further expansion to the east would have brought to Rome nothing but weakness and disaster, and would have distracted her from the work of assimilating the Western and Northern provinces, which were to be her mainstay in the centuries which followed. Rome had nothing to fear from Parthian aggression. If instead of casting covetous eyes upon the East, she had contented herself with keeping her eastern frontier secure, and put her whole strength into the West and North; had she extended her frontier from the Lower Danube to the Elbe, and set her forces to subdue and pacify and civilise Germany, as she had pacified Gaul and Spain, she might have added untold strength to her empire. With a narrower frontier to defend, and the splendid strength of a loyal and Romanised Germany to man the bulwarks of her power, she would have been in a very different position, when the day of trial came, to face the barbarians from the North.

¹ Having made a parade of the whole strength of Rome, having crossed the frontier, offered his sacrifices, and received the homage of a few notables, Vitellius deems his work done. He leaves the party leaning on him to face their difficulties without his help as best they may, addresses to them a few lofty words of advice and patronage, and then withdraws.

² For Fulcinius Trio and his quarrel with his colleague Regulus in A.D. 31, see v. 11, 1, and chap. 4, 3.
Tiberius insisted on their being read aloud;\(^1\) whether to parade his tolerance of free speech, and his indifference to his own reputation,\(^2\) or because, after being so long ignorant of the crimes of Sejanus, he preferred now to have everything that might be said about him made public, and thus, even at the cost of insult, learn the truth, to which flattery bars the way.

\(^4\) About the same time the senator\(^8\) Granius Marcianus, being accused of treason by Gaius Gracchus,\(^4\) laid violent hands on himself; and Tatius Gratianus, an ex-Praetor, was condemned to death under the same law.

39. 1 Not unlike to these were the deaths of Trebellenus\(^5\) Rufus and Sextius Paconianus.\(^6\) The former perished by his own hand; Paconianus was strangled in prison because of some verses which he had there composed against the Emperor. And Tiberius heard of these things, not across a strait of the sea, as formerly, or by the hands of messengers from a distance, but so close to the city that he could answer the despatches from the Consuls on the same day, or with only a night intervening, and almost see with his own eyes

\(^1\) Just as he ordered the record of all the sayings of Drusus for years back to be read aloud and published, though full of insult to himself (chap. 24, 2-4).\(^7\)

\(^2\) This grim determination to get at the facts of a case, and drag the truth, however disagreeable, to light, even at his own expense, is very characteristic of Tiberius. We have seen how Tacitus sneers at the minuteness of his judicial investigations (i. 75, 2), though he has to acknowledge that they furthered justice. In this passage, he feels compelled reluctantly to admit that the unflinching determination, in spite of courtiers and even \textit{per propra}, to get at the truth, is deserving of some commendation. The natural interpretation of the action of Tiberius is that he caused these things to be published in self-justification.

\(^3\) When used thus by itself, without qualification, the word \textit{senator} seems to denote a senator who had not held high office. So of Firmius Catus, ii. 27, 2, and iv. 31, 7, and of Pius Aurelius, i. 75, 3, etc.

\(^4\) Probably the person mentioned iv. 13, 3, and chap. 16, 5.

\(^5\) Mentioned in ii. 67, 4, and iii. 38, 4, as having been appointed guardian of the infant children of the Thracian prince Cotys. The name should be written as \textit{Trebellinus}; see Furn. on ii. 67, 4.

\(^6\) Mentioned above, chap. 3, 4, as \textit{audace maleficum omnium secretam rimantem, detectumque a Seiano cuius ope dolus Gaio Caesaris pararetur.}
the blood streaming through men's houses, or dripping down the hands of the executioner. 1

At the end of the year Poppaeus Sabinus died. 3 Of respectable origin, imperial favour had raised him to the Consulship, and to the honours of a Triumph. For twenty-four years 5 he had been retained in command of important Provinces; not for any conspicuous ability that he possessed, but because he was competent, and not more than competent. 8

A.D. 36. CONSULS Q. PLAUTIUS 4 AND SEXTUS PAPINIUS ALLENIUS.

The public had become so used to horrors that the execution of Lucius Aruseius and others in this year attracted no attention; but a sensation was created by the death of Vibulenus Agrippa, a Roman knight. For when his accusers had concluded their case against him, he took poison out of his dress in the Senate-house, drank it off, and fell dying to the ground. 6 He was hurried off to prison by the lictors; and though he was already dead, his neck was subjected to the halter. Even Tigranes, 6 once king of 2

---

1 As grossly exaggerated as the language used above in chap. 19, 3.
2 For the tenure of his office by Poppaeus Sabinus, see Furn. on l. 50, 1. For his Thracian campaign, see iv. 45–51.
3 A fundamental maxim of despotic governments, when the despot himself is not a commanding genius. Caesar had no jealousy of his subordinates; he could turn to account, and use for the public service, all the ability he could lay his hands on. Tiberius had none of the self-confidence which belongs to greatness. He distrusted himself and his own capacity to control his officers. He had to recollect before the firm and defiant language of Gaetulicus (vi. 30, 3–7); he waited to crush C. Silius till Silius had laid down his provincial command (iv. 18). His safety—perhaps the safety of the state also—lay in the law by which the mediocre monarch must make use of mediocre instruments.
4 Perhaps the brother of the praetor Plantius Silvanus who threw his wife out of the window (iv. 22).
5 Tacitus speaks of this as a single notorious instance. Suetonius, with his usual exaggeration, describes it as done frequently: partim in media Curia venenum hausserunt, et tamen colligatis vulneribus ac semianime palpiabantque in carcerem rapit (Tib. 61).
6 Identified by Mommsen with Tigranes IV., mentioned by Augustus in the Mon. Anc. as placed by him upon the throne. He was a grandson of Herod the Great. Tacitus makes no mention of him in ii. 4.
Armenia, found no protection in his royal title; he was accused and punished like any private citizen.

8 Gaius Galba, a Consular, and the two Blaesi, perished by their own hands. Galba had received a letter from Tiberius sternly forbidding him to cast lots for a Province. The Blaesi had been destined for priesthoods during the prosperous days of their house; but when the crash came, Tiberius postponed the appointments, and he now conferred them, as though vacant, upon others. The Blaesi took this as a death-signal, and acted accordingly. Then came the case of Aemilia Lepida. Wedded, as I have related, to the young Drusus, she had pursued her husband with continual accusations; but infamous as she was, she was allowed to go unpunished so long as her father Lepidus was alive. She was now brought to trial for committing adultery with a slave; and as there was no doubt about her guilt, she abandoned her defence and put an end to herself.

41. 1 About this time the Clitae, a tribe subject to Archelaus of Cappadocia, being compelled to give in returns of their property and pay tribute on the Roman system, retired into the recesses of Mount Taurus; where aided by the character of the country they maintained themselves against the feeble forces of the King. At last Vitellius, Governor of Syria,

---

1 C. Sulpicius Galba, elder brother of the future emperor, cos. A.D. 29 (iii. 52, 1).
2 Sons of Blaesus, the uncle of Sejanus, who was appointed proconsul of Africa A.D. 21 (iii. 35, 3), and in that capacity gained the ‘triumphalia’ (iii. 72, 6), and was saluted ‘imperator’ (iii. 74, 6) for his successes against Taqarinas. Both seem to have been consuls (Vell. ii. 127, 3).
3 So Suetonius Gall. 3, who adds that he was in exile: attritus facultabilis urbe cessit.
4 Apparently daughter of M. Lepidus of iii. 32, 9, where see n.
5 i.e. in the lost books.
6 A tribe of wild hillsmen, agrestium Cilicum nationes quibus Clitarum cognomentum (xii. 55, 1), in the W. part of Cilicia, called Trachsea. The Archelaus here mentioned was son of the Cappadocian king Archelaus, who was enticed to Rome by Tiberius and entrapped (ii. 42, 2–5). Cappadocia was then made a province, but the Clitae were left to the young Archelaus.
sent against them his Legate Marcus Trebellius with four thousand legionaries and a picked body of allies. Throwing up earth-works round two hills occupied by the barbarians, the smaller of which was called Cadra, the larger Davara, Trebellius put to the sword those who ventured to break out, and reduced the rest to submission by want of water.

Tiridates in the mean time, with the consent of the Parthians, had taken possession of Nicephorium and Anthemusias and other towns with Greek names which had been founded by the Macedonians, as well as the Parthian towns of Halus and Artemita. His successes were hailed with delight by the party who loathed Artabanus for his cruelty, and for his Scythian bringing-up, and who hoped to find in Tiridates the milder traits of Roman civilisation.

The people of Seleucia surpassed all others in their flattery. This powerful and well-fortified city still bears the impress of its founder Seleucus, and has never lapsed into barbarism. It has a Senate of three hundred citizens, selected for their wisdom or their wealth; and the people have powers of their own. When people and Senate agree, they can defy the Parthians; but when the two fall out, each seeks

1 As M. Trebellius was thus under the orders of Vitellius, it would appear that Cilicia, or at least this part of it (see also ii. 78, 3), belonged to the province of Syria.

2 Tacitus names these cities with little sense of their respective positions. The usual road from Antioch to Mesopotamia lay in a N.E. direction to Zeugma on the Euphrates, opposite to Apamea on the left bank, and thence to the important Macedonian town of Edessa; to the immediate south of which was the district or city of Anthemusias, also a Macedonian name, on the stream Bilechas. At the junction of that stream with the Euphrates, sixty miles due S. of Edessa, lay the Greek town of Nicephorion or Callini, founded by Seleucus I.; close to which was the lowest ford on the Euphrates at Thapsacus (= Thiqsach, or 'the Passage'), which could be reached by a route running nearly due E. from Antioch. Tiridates obviously marched by the former route, passing through Anthemusias to Nicephorion. Of the rest of the march—some 600 to 800 miles—Tacitus says nothing. Halus is not known; but it was probably near Artemita, a Parthian town about sixty miles N. of Seleucia, the half-Greek city founded by Seleucus I. on the Tigris, near Baghdad. Opposite to Seleucia, on the left bank of the Tigris, lay Ctesiphon, which became the residence of the Parthian kings after the conquest of Babylon, B.C. 130.
help against the other, and the ally called in to help
the one ends by lording it over both. This had lately
happened in the reign of Artabanus, who with a view
to his own interests had put the commons under the
heel of the nobles; for whereas popular rule is closely allied to liberty, domination by the few is near akin
to kingly absolutism.

It came about, therefore, that the people welcomed
Tiridates when he entered the city, and received him
with all the honours paid to their ancient monarchs,
with many more of recent devising; while they poured
contempt on Artabanus as no true Arsacid, connected
as he was with that family only on his mother's side.

Tiridates accordingly gave all power to the people;
and was considering on what day he should assume
the royal insignia, when he received letters from
Phraates and Hiero, governors of important provinces,
asking for a short delay. Resolving to await the
arrival of those influential personages, he betook him-
self in the meantime to Ctesiphon the capital; but as
they kept procrastinating from day to day, the Surena,¹
at last, in accordance with national custom, bound the
royal diadem ² round his head in the presence of a
vast approving multitude.

43. ¹ Now if Tiridates had at once made for the interior,
and visited the other nationalities, he would have

¹ This name seems to have been a
semi-official title, denoting both the
family and the office of the commander-
in-chief of the Parthian armies, the
office being hereditary in that family.
Nipp. compares it to the name Caesar
under the empire.
² Cp. ii. 56. 3, where Germanicus
places the insigne regium on the head
of Zeno as king of Armenia in Artaxata.
In the case of Persian or Parthian
monarchs, it consisted of the diadema,
a white band or fillet encircling the
head, which was the symbol of royalty
in the East (Cic. Phil. ii. 5, 12), and as
such was offered to, and refused by,
Caesar in a.c. 44. It was bound round
the conical high Persian cap called tiara.
Thus Curtius, iii. 3, 19, Cidarim Persae
capitis insigne; hoc caerules fascia albo distincta circumbat.
From this head-dress the mitre of the
bishop and the triple crown of the Pope
are descended; just as the modern
crown is the descendant of the simple
diadema—adopted by the Greeks for
their divinities, and first regularly
assumed as the mark of royalty by
Constantine.
crushed the doubts of waverers, and every one would have come over to him. But instead of this, he sat down before the fort into which Artabanus had conveyed his treasure and his concubines, and so gave people time to slip out of their engagements. Phraates and Hiero, and the other chiefs who had failed to attend on the day of the coronation, went over to Artabanus; some from fear, others in disgust at Abdagaeses,¹ who was now supreme in the court and had possession of the new king’s person. They found Artabanus in the Hyrcanian² country, in a filthy condition, supporting himself by the produce of his bow. At first he was alarmed, suspecting treachery; but when satisfied that they had come to restore him to power, he plucked up courage, and asked what was the meaning of their sudden change. In reply, Hiero spoke contempuously of Tiridates as a mere boy, enervated by foreign luxury, and enjoying nothing but the empty name of king:—All real power was in the hands, not of a Prince of the royal house, but of the family of Abdagaeses.

Well versed in state-craft, the King perceived that, however false their love, their hatred was unfeigned. With no more delay than was needed to summon his Scythian allies, he pushed on with all speed, giving no time either for enemies to cabal, or for friends to change their minds; even his person he left unkempt as it was, to attract the compassion of the multitude. Nothing that trickery or entreaty could do was left untried to allure waverers or confirm supporters. He was soon in the neighbourhood of Seleucia at the head of a large force, where the news of his approach, and then his presence, threw Tiridates into consternation.

¹ See chaps. 36, 3, and 37, 5.  
² See chap. 36, 5.
He was now torn between two opinions: should he go out to meet Artabanus, or drag on the war?

Those who were for fighting and bringing all to an issue at once, argued that the enemy's forces were still scattered, and worn out by their long march; having so lately betrayed and fought against the man whose cause they were now again espousing, they were not united enough, even in purpose, to yield obedience to any one. Abdagaeses, on the other hand, advised a retreat into Mesopotamia, so as to put the river in their front; let them then call up the Armenians, the Elymaeans, and other tribes in their rear, and not try the fortune of war until reinforced by their allies, and such forces as the Roman General might send to help them. This view prevailed; for the influence of Abdagaeses was all-powerful, and Tiridates himself had no stomach for danger. But the retreat wore all the appearance of a flight. First the Arabians, then the rest, went off to their homes, or to the camp of Artabanus; until at last Tiridates, making his way back to Syria with a few followers, relieved every one from the disgrace of betraying him.

During this year, the city was devastated by a fire, which burned down the part of the Circus Maximus which lies between the Palatine on the N. and the Aventine on the S., and which was originally called the vallis Murcia. In imperial times it was 700 yards long by about 135 wide, and could accommodate 150,000 spectators. It consisted of three tiers of covered porticoes, running round three of the sides, the fourth being left for the carceres, or starting-places. The lowest seats were of stone, the two upper tiers of wood; outside ran a row of workshops, houses, etc. The whole, therefore, was highly inflammable. The great fire of Nero began in ea parte circi quae Palatino Caelioque montibus contigua est, i.e. at its S. extremity (xv. 38, 3). On the present occasion, the part burnt

1 The Elymaeï lived at the head of the Persian Gulf, near the mouth of the Tigris. The meaning, therefore, must be that Tiridates was to retire behind the Tigris, fall back upon Armenian and Roman reinforcements, and rouse the Elymaeï from the S. to fall upon the Parthian rear.

2 Not inhabitants of Arabia proper, but apparently the inhabitants of Osroene, the province of which Edessa (see n. on chap. 42, 1) was capital. This appears from xii. 13, 3, where Acherus, the prince of Osroene, is called rex Arabum.

3 The Circus Maximus—the great race-course of Rome, first built by Tarquin—filled the long narrow valley
adjoining the Aventine, and the Aventine itself. Tiberius turned the disaster to his own credit by paying the value of the houses and tenements\(^1\) which had been burnt—an act of generosity which cost him \(^2\) a million sesterces, and was all the more acceptable to the multitude that he had been moderate in building for himself.\(^3\) Even of public buildings he had \(^3\) erected only two—the temple to Augustus\(^8\) and the stage of the Theatre of Pompeius—and even these he did not dedicate when completed, either because of his age or because he despised popular favour. Every \(^4\) individual loss was estimated by a commission composed of four of his step-grandchildren, Gnaeus Domitius,\(^4\) Cassius Longinus, Marcus Vinicius, and Rubellius Blandus; to these Publius Petronius\(^6\) was added on the nomination of the Consuls. The \(^5\) senators devised and decreed new honours for the

was the long western, or more accurately, the south-western extremity, along the base of the Aventine.

\(^1\) An \textit{insula} was a large self-contained block of houses, which might consist of a large mansion-house inside (with shops, etc.), round the outside of the ground floor, together with small sets of apartments, tenanted separately from the main mansion; or it might consist wholly of such separate apartments, and so correspond to the ‘lands’ in a Scotch town, containing several ‘flats,’ or to a French ‘hotel’ with its \textit{étages}. These large buildings lent themselves disastrously to fires: the tenants at the top had little hope of escaping (Juv. iii. 198–202). In enumerating the losses by Nero’s fire, Tacitus similarly describes the buildings burnt as consisting of \textit{domus et insularum et templorum} (\textit{sv.} 43, 1).\(^3\) In regard to money matters, Dio pays Tiberius a high compliment: ‘\textit{A\'theteto gar de aut\'o\'no\'stwv xleiv\'eta de de to k"o\'stos o\'mwske}’ (vii. 10, 3). He adds that Tiberius restored many buildings, but in doing so replaced upon them the names of their original founders. This may be regarded as another instance of the scrupulous regard for ‘\textit{veritas’} which was a characteristic of Tiberius: see l. 75, 2 and n.

\(^2\) The huge brick remains of the \textit{Temple Divi Augusti}, at the corner of the Palatine nearest to the Capitol, confront the visitor as he enters the Palatine by the regular entrance at the Villa Nussiaer. The temple lay backed against the slope of the hill; owing to the shape of the ground, its plan differed from the ordinary type in having the front on the long side of this temple, instead of on the short side. Livia shared with Tiberius in the building of it (\textit{Dio}, vii. 46, 3). As the theatre of Pompey was only restored, this temple was in fact the single work of Tiberius. Both were completed by Caligula (\textit{Suet. Cal.} 21): the temple was dedicated by him in A.D. 37 (\textit{Dio}, l. 7, 1), though it was far enough advanced to be represented on a coin of A.D. 34.

\(^3\) Co. Domitius was the husband of the younger Agrippina (\textit{sv.} 75, 1): L. Cassius Longinus and M. Vinicius were the husbands of her sisters, Drusilla and Julia (or Livilla) respectively (chap. 15, 1). Rubellius Blandus was the second husband of Julia, the daughter of Drusus (chap. 27, 1).

\(^4\) It was in this man’s house that Clutorius Priscus read aloud his unfortunate poem (iii. 49, 2).
Emperor, each according to his bent; but which of them he accepted and which he declined was never known, because of his approaching end. For soon after this the last Consuls under Tiberius, Gnaeus Acerronius and Gaius Pontius, entered upon office.

A.D. 37. CONSULS CN. ACERRONIUS PROCULUS AND C. PETRONIUS PONTIUS NIGRINUS.

By this time the influence of Macro had become supreme. He cultivated the good graces of Gaius—which indeed he had never neglected—more and more every day; and after the death of Claudia, whose marriage to Gaius I have mentioned,\(^1\) he urged his own wife Ennia to affect a passion for the young man, and entice him into making a compact of marriage with her.\(^8\) Gaius was ready to agree to anything that would help him to power; for though hot-tempered by nature, he had learnt under his grandfather’s tutelage to cultivate the arts of dissimulation.

46. 1 All this was known to the Emperor; and for that reason he long hesitated as to the succession. First, as between his grandsons, the son of Drusus was closer to him in blood and affection, but he was still a boy; whereas the son of Germanicus was in the full strength of early manhood,\(^4\) and was adored by the people

---

\(^1\) *i.e.* in chap. 30, 1. Claudia died in childbirth (Suet. Cal. 11).

\(^8\) This story, recorded by Tacitus, Suetonius, and Dio, is told by each in a different way. Tacitus makes Macro the prompter of his wife’s dishonour. Dio says Macro enticed Caligula into the intrigue (lvi. 38, 4); Suetonius puts it down to Caligula himself, who promised Ennia marriage both by oath and in writing should he succeed to the empire (Cal. 12). They evidently each followed different authorities. Macro and Ennia were forced by Caligula to commit suicide within a year (Dio, liv. 10, 6).

\(^3\) The same word *commotus* is used of Agrippina’s temper (i. 33, 6); of that of Drusus (iv. 3, 9); and of Messalina (xi. 22, 1).

\(^4\) Caligula was in his twenty-fifth year; Tiberius Gemellus, son of Drusus, only in his eighteenth.
and for that very reason hated by his grandfather. He even thought of Claudius, because he was of ripe age, and had tastes of a higher kind; but his weakness of intellect stood in the way. If, again, he were to look outside the family for a successor, he was afraid that the memory of Augustus, and the name of the Caesars, might become a laughing-stock and a reproach; for he cared less for present popularity than to stand well with posterity. At last, unable to make up his mind, and failing in strength, he left to fate the decision to which he was himself unequal;

1 An invalid all his early days, Claudius was an extraordinary mixture of clownishness and dulness, both of mind and body (anismo simul et corpore hebetato, Suet. Claud. 9), with considerable literary learning and even cleverness; but it was of a dull and pedantic kind that brought him no kind of reputation. His mother called him a monster whom 'Nature had begun and not finished off.' No one dreamed that he could ever succeed to the empire (iii. 18, 7). Cp. hebetem Claudium et usor devinctum (xi. 28, a); he had a mind not capable either of forming an opinion or of hating, except at another's bidding (xii. 3, 3): some believed that even his body was too dull and heavy to be susceptible to poison.

2 The phrase bonae artes is difficult and uncertain. Sometimes it stands merely for 'education,' 'literary culture,' or 'literary pursuits,' as in i. 3, 4 of Agrippa Postumus, rudem same bonarum artium; and so in Dial. 99, 3. Similarly artes honestae, liberales, or illustres, refer to intellectual accomplishments, as in liv. 70, 4. Elsewhere the term stands for 'good conduct,' 'good character,' or even 'virtue' in general: Mucianus is malis bonisque artibus mixtus, 'half good, half bad' (Hist. i. 10, 3); all citizens might stand for public office si bonis artibus fide rent, i.e., 'had a good character,' or 'a good record' (xi. 22, 4). In i. 9, 4 and Hist. i. 17, 3 per bonas artes is simply 'by praiseworthy methods.' In the present passage the sense seems to be that Claudius was 'a well-meaning man.'

3 It would thus appear that the cruelty of Tiberius to the children of Germanicus cannot be entirely put down to jealousy on behalf of his own grandson. A handsome acknowledgment on the part of Tacitus, which should be placed to his credit amid all the cruel things which he has said of Tiberius. The anxiety which Tiberius felt in regard to a successor was of the same kind as that which distracted him in the making of provincial appointments (i. 80, 3). That his ambitio in posteros was stronger than his desire for gratia praestentium, suggests that even in his seventies he may have been moved by a regard for the stability of the government, as much as by feelings of personal vindictiveness, or by a regard for his own safety. The sentiment is in entire accord with that of the famous speech in which he declined divine honours in iv. 36, 1-3; and if there be an inconsistency between the two passages, as Plin. suggests, the inconsistency lies not so much in Tiberius himself as in the wording comments of his critics (iv. 38, 4-6).

4 The uncertainty as to the succession was a fatal, perhaps inevitable, flaw in the constitution devised by Augustus. It was the one point in which the attempt to graft a monarchy on to the forms of a republic broke down. In theory, the whole imperial system fell to the ground at once on the death of each emperor, and had to be re-created by special votes in the person of his successor. The question who that successor was to be was left to chance, to be decided by the circumstances of the moment.

5 Fatum is not mere chance, it is the
and yet he let fall a word or two, which shewed that he foresaw what was to come. It was not a riddle hard to read when he reproached Macro for deserting the setting, and looking to the rising sun; or when he prophesied that Gaius, who in a casual conversation spoke slightly of Lucius Sulla, would have all Sulla’s vices, without any of his virtues. And again, when he was embracing, with floods of tears, the younger of his two grand-children, while Gaius looked sullenly on:—Yes, he said, you will kill this boy some day, and some one else will kill you. But though his health was failing, he would give up none of his vicious practices, making a show of fortitude amid his sufferings. For he had always derided the medical art, and would laugh at people who, being over thirty years of age, needed any adviser to tell them what was good or bad for them.

47. 1 At Rome, meanwhile, the seeds of future bloodshed were being sown. Laelius Balbus had brought a charge of treason against Acutia, formerly wife of Publius Vitellius; but when she was convicted, and it was proposed to vote a reward to the accuser, Junius Otho, a tribune of the Plebs, interposed his veto: the quarrel thus raised between the two

Various fresh accusations:

destined course of events, what we might call ‘Providence.’ See above on chap. 22, 1.

1 The same saying is recorded by Dio (lvii. 28, 4). Plutarch attributes the proverb to Pompey, as his retort to Sulla who opposed his triumph: ‘Remember that more men worship the rising than the setting sun’ (Pomp. 14).

2 The prophecy was fulfilled by the murder of Gemellus within the year by Caligula (Suet. Cal. 23), and by that of Caligula himself by Cassius Chaerea and others in the Crypto-porticus of the Palatine on the 24th January, A.D. 41.

3 Suetonius states that Tiberius enjoyed almost perfect health, without ever consulting a doctor, after the age of thirty, a fact which renders the tales about his debaucheries improbable. We find, however, a doctor Charicles in attendance on him (cap. 50, 3), whom Suetonius represents as going away on leave of absence (Tim. 72).

4 This metaphor is a favourite one with Tacitus, and it is not always used appropriately. Cf. ni semina bellì restinxisset (Hist. iv. 80, 1); Corbulò semina rebellionis praebet (Ann. xi. 19, 5); semina futuri estitì meditatur (iv. 60, 6), etc.

5 An orator of note (Quint. x. 1, 24).

6 There were still tribunes of the plebs, and they still enjoyed the ancient privileges of their office; but as their tribunitian power was subordinate to
resulting in Otho’s banishment. Next, Albucilla, who was notorious for her amours, and had been the wife of Satrius Secundus, one of the informers against Sejanus, was accused of impiety towards Tiberius: Gnaeus Domitius, Vibius Marsus, and Lucius Arruntius being named as her lovers and accomplices. Of the noble birth of Domitius, I have already spoken; Marsus also belonged to an ancient and illustrious family, and was a man of high attainments. It appeared from the papers laid before the Senate that Macro had himself presided at the examination of the witnesses, and the torture of the slaves; but as Tiberius wrote no letter against the accused persons, the suspicion arose that Macro, taking advantage of the Emperor’s weakness, and perhaps even without his knowledge, had trumped up a series of false charges to gratify his well-known hatred of Arruntius.

So the lives of Domitius and Marsus were prolonged; the former set about preparing for his defence, the latter made as though he had resolved upon starvation. But when the friends of Arruntius implored him to delay and temporise, he replied as follows:—

*The rule of honour, he said, was not the same for all.*

*He had had enough of life; the one thing he had to repent* 3

---

1 C. Vibius Marsus was one of the legates of Germanicus in Syria, and competed with Cn. Sentius to be his successor (ii. 74, 1). As he is called below illiustres studii, Furneaux suggests that he may have been one of those to whom we owe the details of the death of Germanicus.

2 See i. 13, 6; vi. 7, 1; 27, 3, etc.

3 The record of the proceedings having been sent to the senate, and transmitted to the emperor, the senate would await his pleasure before passing sentence.
of was that he had endured to live on to old age amid perils and mockeries, always in anxiety, always the object of some great man's hatred. It had been Sejanus for a time, it was now Macro; and his only crime was that he could not tolerate iniquity. He might doubtless live through the few remaining days of Tiberius: but how could he escape from the stripling who was to come after? If the possession of power had perforce deranged and transformed Tiberius, with all his experience of affairs, was it likely that Gaius Caesar would do better, with Macro to point the way? The lad was scarce out of his teens, ignorant of everything, or instructed only in what was evil; and Macro had been chosen to crush Sejanus as the greater villain of the two, having committed crimes more numerous, more disastrous to the State than he. He could foresee days of still grosser servitude; and he was making his escape from future as well as from present evils.

Uttering these words after the manner of an inspired prophet, he opened his veins. What follows will show how well Arruntius did to die.

Albacilla was ordered off to prison by the Senate, after inflicting a futile wound on herself. One of her paramours, Carsidius Sacerdos, a man of praetorian rank, was sentenced to be deported to an island; another, Pontius Fregellanus, to be deprived of his

---

1. *i.e.* such a mockery of power as was left to the senate, which had to register the decrees of the emperor, whatever they might be, or as he himself had to put up with when appointed to the command in Spain and yet not allowed to leave Rome.

2. As Furn. suggests, this observation gives the true key to the government and character of Tiberius. See his Intro.

3. The dignified, moderate, and self-restrained tone of this speech recalls that of the speaker in v. 6, or that of M. Terentius in chap. 8. To use the language of Tacitus himself, these speeches exhibit the happy mean between the *abrupta contumacia* too often displayed by later victims of imperial tyranny and the *deforme obscurem* of the flatterers (iv. 90, 5).

4. *i.e.* as oracular alike in their weight and in the manner of their utterance.

5. Accused of supplying Tacfarinas with corn (iv. 12, 3). He was apparently *Praetor Urbanus* in A.D. 27.
rank as senator. The same punishment was inflicted on Laelius Balbus:¹ a sentence which the Senate decreed with the utmost satisfaction, as Balbus was noted for a truculent eloquence which he was ever ready to exercise against the innocent.

About the same time, Sextus Papinius,² a man of consular family, chose a sudden and hideous form of death by throwing himself out of the window. For this act his mother was held to blame. In spite of all he could do, her amorous advances had brought him into a position from which he could find no way of escape save through death. Indicted in the Senate, she threw herself down before the Fathers, expressing in piteous and dolorous terms the anguish which any one, and most of all a poor weak woman, would feel at so terrible an accident, with other sentiments of a similar character. She was nevertheless banished from the city for ten years, till her younger son should have passed through the critical period of his boyhood.

And now Tiberius was failing in health and strength, in everything but dissimulation. There remained the same unbending will, the same intentness of look and speech; but he would affect sometimes an air of gaiety to conceal his manifest decline. After changing more than once his place of abode, he settled down at last in a villa which had belonged to Lucius Lucullus, on the promontory of Misenum.³ That his end was drawing near was discovered in the following manner. There was

¹ See chap. 47, 1.
² Probably son of the consul of the same name (A.D. 36).
³ The vast and luxurious villa on the western extremity of the Bay of Naples, which had been added to and sumptuously embellished by L. Lucullus after his Eastern campaign. It had belonged to Marius, was bought by Cornelia, and by her sold at a fabulous price to Lucullus (Plut. Mar. 34).
an eminent physician called Charicles, who used to give Tiberius the benefit of his advice, though he was not his regular attendant. On taking his leave, as if for business of his own, Charicles took the Emperor’s hand by way of respect: in doing so, he touched his pulse. The action did not escape Tiberius. Offended, perhaps, and therefore all the more resolute to conceal his annoyance, he ordered fresh viands to be brought in, and then sat at table longer than was his wont, as though out of compliment to his departing friend. Charicles assured Macro that life was ebbing away, and that Tiberius could not hold out for more than two days.

Hurried conferences were held on the spot; despatches were sent off to the Legates, and manifestoes to the armies. On the 16th of March the breathing failed; and it was thought that the end had come. Gaius Caesar stepped forth, amid congratulating crowds, to assume the government: when suddenly word was brought that Tiberius had recovered speech and sight, and was calling for food to keep up his strength. A general panic ensued. The crowd slunk away from the side of Gaius and dispersed, every one feigning sorrow or ignorance; Gaius, in silent stupor, fallen from his high hopes, looked for the worst. But Macro was equal to the occasion. He ordered the attendants to heap clothes upon the old man, and leave the room.

1 The name suggests that he was a Greek, and probably a freed-man.
2 The account given of the death of Tiberius by Suetonius agrees generally with that of Tacitus, but he adds some particulars. Tiberius had gone to Astura, on the coast of Latium, near Antium, where he was taken ill. Thence he went to Circeii, where he took part in some camp sports, and got worse; but he held on till he reached Misenum. He there resumed his ordinary life, pleasures and all. Charicles took the emperor’s hand, merely ocuslandi gratia: the emperor, suspecting his intention, not merely sat longer than usual at table, but insisted upon standing, according to his custom, to receive the adeus of his guests (Tib. 72).
3 Dio says that Caligula kept food from the dying man, and that it was he...
Thus ended Tiberius, in his seventy-eighth year. He was the son of Tiberius Nero, and could claim descent from the Claudii on both sides, though his mother had been adopted into the Livian, and afterwards into the Julian family. He had been exposed to various chances from his infancy. He had followed his father, when proscribed, into exile; and after becoming the son-in-law of Augustus, he had many rivals to contend with, when the fortunes of Marcellus and Agrippa, and later again of Gaius and Lucius Caesar, were in the ascendant. His own brother Drusus was a greater favourite with the people. But the greatest trial of his life was his marriage with Julia, whose irregularities he had to tolerate or elude. On his return from Rhodes he was for twelve years undisputed heir in the Imperial family; he was master of the Roman world for three and twenty.

His character passed through like changes to his fortunes. Admirable in conduct, and in high esteem, while in a private station, or filling commands under Augustus; dark, and artful in affecting virtue, so long as Germanicus and Drusus lived, he presented the same mixture of good and evil until his mother died. Then came a period of fiendish cruelty, but masked libertinism, during the days when he loved or feared Seianus: until at last, freed from all who cast blankets on him (lviii. 38, 3); Suetonius mentions both things as rumours only (Tib. 73), adding another to the effect that Caligula had administered a slow poison.

1 Suetonius gives November 17, B.C. 42, as the date of the birth of Tiberius. He informs us that, in spite of sinister cries from the mob, 'To the Tiber with Tiberius!' the body was carried by soldiers to Rome, honoured with a public funeral, and there burnt; in the will Caligula and Tiberius Gemellus, son of Drusus were left equal heirs (Tib. 75, 76). Caligula pronounced his funeral oration (Dio, lviii. 38, 3); but set aside the heirship of young Tiberius as the act of a madman (Iiz. 1, 2).

2 See nn. on v. 7, 2. Marcellus died in B.C. 23; Agrippa in B.C. 12; Drusus in B.C. 9; Gaius Caesar in A.D. 2; Lucius Caesar in A.D. 4.

3 i.e. from his return from Rhodes in A.D. 2 to his accession in A.D. 14.

4 Cf. Dio, lviii. 38, 5: Ηλείστατο τον δονον τον ψέφωντα ὡς τε καὶ οὐκέτα, τε καὶ θανάτῳ εἶναι ὡς καὶ οὐκέτα εἰσφθείνειν.
fears, lost to all shame, he broke out in wickedness and wantonness alike, and showed himself in no character but his own.

1 It would be hard to imagine a more cruel epigram than that with which Tacitus thus closes his prose epic upon the life and reign of Tiberius. Truth compels him to admit that Tiberius was inter bona malae mixtus; but, whereas Dio, as quoted in the preceding note, is content to place the two lives, the good life and the evil life, side by side, each seeming, if regarded by itself, to represent the whole character of the man, the last word of Tacitus is that everything that was good in the life of Tiberius was assumed, while everything evil was his own. The very different estimate of Velleius Paterculus has been usually put aside as that of a styphant and panegyrist; but if his view of Tiberius is extravagant on the one side, we have seen reason to believe that the account of Tacitus is highly charged upon the other. In the note upon vi. 1, 5, and elsewhere, reasons have been advanced for doubting the grosser charges brought against the private life of Tiberius. As a counterpoise to the many instances of over-barbar judgments on his conduct which are to be found in the Annals, it is but fair to record what was said of him by a devoted adherent. Velleius was a soldier, and a man of the world; he had served under Tiberius, and wrote only of what he knew. At the worst, he represents the strong party view of the Imperialists, and his language doubtless reflects the opinions professed at the time by the servile crew of flatterers, as Tacitus would have styled them, of which the Senate was composed. Velleius himself was probably one of the victims who fell along with Sejanus. He did not live to see the darker days of Tiberian rule; he knew only its earlier and better period, described in such fair colours by Tacitus himself in Ann. iv. 6. Here is how Velleius describes that period:—

Horum xvi annorum opera quis sum inerantur oculti animisque omnium [in] partibus eloguatur? Sacratam parenthem saeculorum imperio, sed religionem, non appellavit sum, sed facit deum. Revoca in forum fides, sumnota e foro sedito, ambitio campo, discordia curia, sepultaque ac sinu obita iustitia, aquitas, industri civilitate redditis; accessit militibus auctoritas, senatus maiesta, iudiciis gravitas; compressa theatralis sedition, recte faciendi omnibus aut incusa voluntas aut imposita necessitas; hono- ran tur recta, prava puniuntur; suspecti potestem humilibi, non timet; ansecet, non consenit, humiliorum potens. Quando annona moderation, quando Pax laetior? diffusa in orientis occidentisque tractus et quidquid meri- diano antiquis tamini, Pax augusta [per] omnis terrarum orbis angulos a lactocinorium metu serva- t inmunis. Fortuita non civium tantummodo, sed urbium damna principis munificenti vindicat. Restitutae urbes Asiae, vindictas ab iniuriis magis- tratum provinciae; honor dignis paratis, posse in malis terra, sed aliqua; superatur aequitate gratia, ambitio virtute; nam facere recte civis suas princeps optimus faciendo docet, cunctum sit imperio maximus, exemplo maior est (ii. 126).

Side by side with this picture of a perfect administration under a spotless ruler may be placed the character of Sejanus as drawn by the same pen. It corresponds, in some essential features, with the description of Tacitus in Ann. iv. 1, and it has a special interest of its own. Highly coloured as it is, one may be sure that it gives the view of the character and services of Sejanus which was believed by the Roman society of the time to be held by Tiberius himself. After pointing out how the Scipios leaned upon Lælius, and Augustus upon Agrippa and Statilus Taurus, Velleius proceeds:—

Sub hie exemplis T. Caesar Scaen- num Aelium, princeps equestris ordinis patre natum, maestro vero genere clarissima vetereque et insigni honoribus complectum familiae, habente consu- lariis fratre, consobrinis, avunculum, ipsum vero laboris ac fidei capacissi- num, sufficiens etiam vigori animi comprope corporis, singularum princii- palium onerum adiutorem in omnia habuit atque habit, virum severissimae laetissimae, hilarissimae prisci, actu atioris simillimum, nihil sibi vincit- canteque eoque adequantem omnia, semperque infra aliorum assimulationes se metientem, vultu vilique tranqu- quillum, animo exornem.

The character of Tiberius will
probably always remain a subject of controversy. Mr. Tarver has given it a new interest by his fresh and stimulating book on 'Tiberius the Tyrant;'; in which, following Freytag and the late Professor Beesly, he does all that advocacy can do to rehabilitate Tiberius and depreciate the authority of Tacitus. But as M. Suard said to Napoleon, 'La renommée de Tacite est trop haute pour que l'on puisse jamais penser à la rabaisser; ' and we do not need to go beyond the pages of Tacitus himself to satisfy ourselves that he has dealt a hard measure of justice to Tiberius. But if he hated Tiberius much, he valued truth more; and his supreme virtue as an historian is that whatever his own prejudices may be, he puts into the reader's hands the materials for forming a judgment of his own. The phrase inter mala bonaque mixtus is eminently true of the character of Tiberius as presented in the Annals. We have the dark unrelenting monster of cruelty described to us in the last words of Book VI.; while the earlier books of the Annals present to us the picture of a man, proud, sensitive, ungenial; of a careful governor, a strict judge, a hard-headed unimaginative statesman, sternly just and overlogical, but capable of great acts of generosity. The one character belongs rather to the earlier, the other to the later years of his reign; but the worse fame has overcome the better: in the words used of Vitellius in vi. 32, 7, cesserunt prima postremis.

For the declension of his later years, Tacitus offers us two explanations. All was changed, he tells us, by the death of Drusus: see note on iv. 7, 1. The other cause may be given in the words of L. Arruntius, vi. 48, 4: Tiberius si ... vi dominationis communis et mutatus sit. He was broken down by the weight of empire. He had neither the generous nature and lofty soul of Caesar, nor the infinite patience and diplomatic finesse of Augustus; he brought the qualities of a marinet to the government of an empire. Cruelly mortified in his domestic relations, betrayed within his own house, his one chosen instrument breaking in his hands, he lost faith in every one and everything. Yet the government of Rome went on. Even in his worst days the tyranny of Tiberius was never incalculable and senseless like that of Gaius, Nero, and Domitian; intellectually and morally he stood head and shoulders above the evil emperors of the first century. But posterity looked upon him as the man who deflected the empire from the more generous lines which seemed to have been laid down for it by its founder, and Tacitus visited upon him the sins of the worst of his successors.
probably always remain a subject of controversy. Mr. Tarver has given it a new interest by his fresh and stimulating book on ‘Tiberius the Tyrant;’ in which, following Freytag and the late Professor Beecly, he does all that advocacy can do to rehabilitate Tiberius and depreciate the authority of Tacitus. But as M. Seurc said to Napoleon, ‘La renommée de Tacite est trop haute pour que l'on puisse jamais penser à la rabaisser;’ and we do not need to go beyond the pages of Tacitus himself to satisfy ourselves that he has dealt a hard measure of justice to Tiberius. But if he hated Tiberius much, he valued truth more; and his supreme virtue as an historian is that whatever his own prejudices may be, he puts into the reader’s hands the materials for forming a judgment of his own. The phrase inter mala homaque mixtus is eminently true of the character of Tiberius as presented in the Annals. We have the dark unremitting monster of cruelty described to us in the last words of Book VI; while the earlier books of the Annals present to us the picture of a man, proud, sensitive, ungenial; of a careful governor, a strict judge, a hard-headed unimaginative statesman, sternly just and overlogical, but capable of great acts of generosity. The one character belongs rather to the earlier, the other to the later years of his reign; but the worse fame has overcome the better: in the words used of Vitellius in vi. 32, 7, exserruit prima postremis.

For the declension of his later years, Tacitus offers us two explanations. All was changed, he tells us, by the death of Drusus: see note on iv. 7, 1. The other cause may be given in the words of L. Arrius, vi. 46, 4: Tiberius si ... vi dominationis convulsus et mutarius sit. He was broken down by the weight of empire. He had neither the generous nature and lofty soul of Caesar, nor the infinite patience and diplomatic finesse of Augustus; he brought the qualities of a martinet to the government of an empire. Cruelly mortified in his domestic relations, betrayed within his own house, his one chosen instrument breaking in his hands, he lost faith in every one and everything. Yet the government of Rome went on. Even in his worst days the tyranny of Tiberius was never incalculable and senseless like that of Gaius, Nero, and Domitian; intellectually and morally he stood head and shoulders above the evil emperors of the first century. But posterity looked upon him as the man who deflected the empire from the more generous lines which seemed to have been laid down for it by its founder, and Tacitus visited upon him the sins of the worst of his successors.
INDEX.

[The numerals refer to the pages of the text. The letters n. or nn. after a numeral refer to a note or notes on the page indicated.]

A.

Abdasaes, 412, 413.
Abdus, 398-9.
Abudius Ruso, an accuser, punished, 396.
Achias, province of, 92 and n., 98.
Aelius Avila, 225.
acta disurma, 187 n.
acta patrum, 342 n.
acta senatus, 341 n.
Actium, battle of, 8 and n., 153.
actor publicus, 128 n.
actors, legislation in coercion of, 95 and n.; salaries of, 95; expelled from Italy, 275.
Acutia, 417.
addicere bona, 283 n.
Agdandestrius, offers to poison Arminius, 182.
Adrana, the river, 69 and n.
aediles, their functions, 180 n.
Aedul, revolt of, 225-30.
Aetas, 401.
Aegaeae, 428.
Aegium, ruined by an earthquake, 274.
Aelius, see Galvis, Lamia, Sejanus.
Aemilia, see Lepida.
Aemilius, a centurion, 111, 112.
Aemilius, a soldier, 308; see also Lepidus.
Aegae, see Considius.
ararium, 52 n.; a. militare, 355 n.; 361 n.
Aesculapius Marcellus, 163.
Afer, Domitius, 312; his powers of oratory, 313 and n.
Afranius, 294.
Africa, its garrison, 264; see under Tacfarinas.
Agrippa, Asinius, death of, 322.
Agrippa, Fonteius, 128, 181.
Agrippa, Marcus Vipsanius, 5 and n.
Agrippa, Postumus, 7; character of, 9.
12 n., murder of, 12, 138.
Agrippa, Vibilius, sensational death of, 408.
Agrippina, daughter of Germanicus, memoirs of, 314 and n.; 337
Agrippina, wife of Germanicus, 48; character of, 49; her heroic conduct, 8a; her fertility, 144; gives birth to Julia, 153; embarks with ashes of Germanicus, 173; lands at Brundisium, her route to Rome thronged, 184-5; hailed by populace, 187; indiscretion of her friends, 188 n., and of A. herself, 272-3 n.; denounced by Sejanus, 273; reproaches Tiberius, 312; implores him to let her marry, 313; openly shows suspicion of Tiberius, 314; watched by Sejanus, 328; denounced by Tiberius to the Senate, 341-2; A. and Nero condemned, 345; ambitious, intolerant, but not impious, 350; her death, 389.
Ahenobarbus, see Domitius.
Albania, the, 168, 400, 401.
Albania, 264 n., princes of, 264.
Albucilla, accused of impiety, 418; is condemned, 419.
Alexander the Great, compared with Germanicus, 271-9.
Aliso, Port, 63 n., 208 n., 109.
Allaria, 66.
Amazons, the, 244.
Amenophis III., 161 n.
Ampestris, the, 109 and n., 120, 122.
Annyalca, 290.
Anchius, see Priscus.
Ancyrarum, Monumentum, 3 n., 25 n.
Andecavi, revolt of the, 225.
Ancrenari, the, 109 n., 118 and n.
Anna, see Rufilla.
Annaeus, see Pollio.
Ansius, 4 n.
Anthemusias, 410.

2 F
INDEX.

Bovillae, 140.
Britain, the princes of, 122 and n.
Bructeri, the, 64 and n., 73, 74.
Brundisium, treaty of, 22 n.
Bruttedius Niger, 248.
Brutus, L., 1.
Brutus, M., 3 and n.; 258, 293-4.
Byzantium, 154.

C.

Cadmia, 410.
Caecilius, Gaius, 366.
Caecilius, see Cornutus.
Caecina, Aulus Severus, 46, 47; his expedition against the Chatti and Marsi, 69; 73; his retreat from the Ema, 77-82; dream of, 78, 107; proposes that governors of provinces should not take their wives with them, 218.
Caecilia Vibenna, 325.
Caedilian hill, destroyed by fire, 324-5; origin of name, 325.
Caedilus, see Cursor.
Caesar, applied as sole name to various members of the Imperial family, 3 n.
Caesar, C. Julius, 1.
Caesar, see Augustus, Claudius, Gaius, Lucius, Nero, Tiberius.
Caesian forest, 65 and n.
Caesarian, see Apisonius.
Caesius, see Cordus.
Caesontius, Gaius, 38.
Caligula, see Gaius Caesar.
calles, 287 n.
Calpurnius, a standard-bearer, 54; see also Piso, Salvianus.
Camillus, 152.
Camillus, Furius, proconsul of Africa, 152.
Camillus, M. Furius Scribonianus, consul, 359.
campaigns in Germany, summary and result of, 123 n., 124 n.
candidati Caesaris, 90 n.
Caninius, see Galius.
Caninefates, the, 334.
Canopus, 160.
Cantabrians, 204 n.
Capito, Ateius, 93, 96; his show of independence, his character, 252; a distinguished lawyer, 257.
Capito, Fonteius, accused and acquitted, 296.
Capito, Lucilius, accused and condemned, 276.
Captol, burning of the, 375.
Cappadocia, 157.
Caprae (Capi), description of, 327; see Tiberius.
Carmania, 404 n.
Carrahae, battle of, 101-2 n.
Carstius, see Sacerdos.
Caspian Gates, the, 400 n.
Cassius, an actor, 87.
Cassius, C., 3 and n.; 258, 293-4.
Cassius Longinus, L., marries Drusilla, 377; 414.
Cassius Severus, 86 and n.; condemned, 282.
Cato, M. Porcius, the Censor, 317 and n.
Cato, Porcius, 328.
Catualda, chief of the Gotones, 163, 164.
Catullus, 204.
Catus Firmius, 126; punished for bringing a false charge, 291.
Celer, Domitius, urges Piso to hold Syria by force, 174.
Celer, Propertius, 91.
Celsus, condemned, 376.
Cenchreus, the, 243.
census, the, 46 and n.
centesima rerum venalium, 96 and n., 142.
centurio primi pilii, 333 n.
centurions, 33 n.
Cercina, an island, 66, 274.
Cestius Gallus, C., 222, 367; consul A.D. 35—37.
Cethegus, see Labo.
Cheerca, Cassius, 47.
Charicles, discerns the approaching end of Tiberius, 431.
Chariovalda, 111.
Chatti, the, 68 and n., 108, 122, and n.
Chauci, the, 52, 74.
Cerusci, the, 69 and n., 78, 110, 111, 115, 116, 117, 121, 145.
Cibyra, ruined by an earthquake, 274.
Cicero's Cato, 204.
Cinibii, the, 136.
Clina, dominatio of, 1.
Circus Maximus, the, burnt in A.D. 36, 412.
Circe, 295.
civilitas, meaning of, 133 n.
civitates, 286 n.
Cilania, 96 and n.
Claudia Pulchra, prosecution of, 312-13.
Claudia Quinta, 325.
Clandui, the, pride of, 9 and n.
Claudius, son of Tiberius, meets the ashes of Germanicus at Terracina, 186; his name omitted, 202-3; held in general contempt, 203; his son, 214; weak in intellect, 416 and n.
Clemens, Julius, 38, 40, 42.
Clemens, the slave, daring enterprise of, 138-40.
clipes, 179 n.
Clitae, the revolt of, 409.
Clitorius, see Priscus.
Cocceius, see Nerva.
Coelaeatae, the, 243.
cohors, meaning of, 43 n.
cohort, 33 n.; see urban.
INDEX.

Colchis, 264 n.
Cologne, 70 n.
coloniae, 185 n.; c. civium Romanorum, c. Latinae, 185 n.
Colophon, 154.
Cominius, Gaius, pardoned, 290.
comitia, under the empire, 31 n.
Commagene, 142 n.
commandant of the camp, office of, 36 and n.
commendatio, 30 n.
commentarii senatus, 341 n.
commoutis, 418 n.
concessions offered to the mutinous soldiers, 51, 65, 76.
conclamatio, 180 n.
confraratio, ceremony of, 275.
confiscation, avoided by suicide, 280.
congiarium, 4 n.
Considius Aequus, punished, 222.
Considius Proculeus, 235, 281.
consular elections under Tiberius, 98 and n., 99.
Coos, 173.
Corbulo, defeated the Frisii, A.D. 47—333 n.
Corbulo, Domitius, 216; takes charge of roads in Italy, 217.
Corbuls, Caecilius, 223; charged with extortion, 252.
Corbuls, Cremutius, impeached, 293; his defence, 904-5; starves himself, 905.
Coriolanus, an asconer, punished, 396; see also Dolabella, Lentulus, Scipio.
corns, the, 81 n., 177 n.
Cornutus, Caecilius, 287-8, 289.
corrector morum, 4 n.
corripiere reunion, 127 n.
Corvinus, see Messalla.
Cos., 139.
Cotta Messalinus, M. Aurelius, 130, 201, 281, 341, 364-5, 366.
Coys, 165, 166; put to death by Rheescopiris, 167; 223; sons of, 264.
Crassus, 1, 101 n.
Cremutius, see Cordus.
Creticans, see Sibariss.
Crispus, see Sallustius.
crupellaris, 287.
Crustorix, 335.
Ctesiphon, 411.
cutemus, 179 n.
curator viarum, 217.
Cursor, Caecilius, punished, 222.
Curritius, Titus, starts a servile movement, 286.
Curritius Atticus, 320, 371.
Cusus, the, 164.
Culius Lupus, a quaestor, with sea command, 247.
cycles in human affairs, 239.
Cyme, 148.
Cynthis, 251.
Cyrenius, 129 n.

Cyrillus, 158.
Cyzicus, people of, accused, 296.

D.

Dahae, the, 104.
Danae, forces on the, 264.
dare actionem et indicis, dare indices, 283 n.
Davara, 410.
derceverarii, 211; d. stilitus indicandis, 214 n.
Decidius Saxo, 201 n.
decimation, resort to by L. Apronianus, 205.
decretum ultimum or supremum, 280 n.
decumae, 286 n., 287 n.
decuriae of equites, 215.
Deltamia or Deltamia, 365.
Denter, Romulus, 372.
Dentality, territory of, 302.
deporatio in insulam, 201 n.
Detrius, 204.
Diana Leucophryna, 244; D. of the Marshes, temple of, 303.
dicere ius, 283 n.
dictatorship, the, 19 n.
diferaratio, ceremony of, 277 n.
Dili, the, 233.
Dinis, 310.
Dion Cassius, account of the fall of Sejanus, 341.
divine honours, paid to the emperors in their lifetime, 93, 87, 95, 297, and nn. documents, left by Augustus, 25 and n.
Dolabella, P. Cornelius, 231; syco-
phancy of, 250; is victorious over Taelinaris, 264-5; is refused a tri-
umph, 286; accuses Varus Quintilius, 296.
Domitius, see Afer, Corbulo, Celer.
Domitius Abenobarbus, Cn., 337, 359, 414, 418; see 304 n.: (son of Lucius, the foll.).
Domitius Abenobarbus, Lucius, 77 and n.: death of, 304 and n.; his career, 305.
Drusus, Nero Claudius, the elder, 6 and n.; his death in Germany and funeral procession to Rome, 188 and n.
Drusus junior, son of Tiberius, 7 n.; despatched to Pannonian army, 39; 39 n.; addresses the legions, 43; punishes the ringleaders, 44; returns to Rome, 45; character of, 44 and n., 93 and n.; his delight in blood, 93; meets the ashes of Germanicus at Terracina, 186; his reply to Piso, 190; postpones an ovation, 193; joint consul with Tiberius, 218; ova-
tion of, 204; opposes motion of Caecina, 230; thanks the Senate in a letter, 242; his character, 261; kindly to his nephews, 263; his death
INDEX.

a turning point in the government of
Tiberius, 267 n.; murmurs against
Sejanus, 268; poisoned by Sejanus,
268; honours voted to, his funeral,
270; story that he was poisoned by
Tiberius incredible, 271.
Drusus, son of Germanicus, assumes
the toga virilis, 269; played upon by
Sejanus, 325; marries Aemilia Lepida,
346; declared a public enemy, and
imprisoned, 346; personated by a
slave, 356; death of, 388-9; diary
kept of his doings in prison, 389-90.
Duilius, Gaius, 149.

E.
eclipse of the moon, Sept. 26, A.D. 14.
—42 and n.
Egypt, 159-61; put in a position by
itself, 160 and n.; held by two legions,
264.
Egyptian and Jewish rites expelled, 181;
E. writing, 161.
Elbe, the, 73, 114, 117; first crossed by
L. Domitius, 305.
Elephantine, 162.
Ens, the, 73, 74, 76, 109, 110.
Ennia, wife of Macro, entices Gaius
Caesar, 415.
Ennius, Lucius, 252.
Ennius, Manius, 52.
Ephesus, 243, 316 n.
equeles, the equestrian order, see knights.
equeles illustres, 150; and see Furneaux,
i. 87 and ii. 35.
Erato, 104 n., 106.
Esquiline Gate, 131.
Etisan gales, the, cause low ground to
be flooded, 400.
Etruscans, origin of the, 316 n.
Euboea, 153.
Eudemus, 262, 471.
exactions by magistrates and negotia-
tores, in provinces, 333 n.
exilium, 201 n.

F.
Fabius Maximus, 11 and n.
Falanius, a Roman knight, 87.
familia, used for gens, 9 n.
familia lobiitae, 86 n.
Fannius Casio, 22 n.
Fate, how regarded by the Stoics and
the Epicureans respectively, 385-6.
'Father of his Country,' title of, 85
and n.
Fetials, the, 247.
Fidenae, terrible accident at, 323-4.
fides, 569 n.
Firmius, see Catus.

Ficus, 52 n., 148 n., 266 n., 361 n.
Flaccus, Pomponius, 130, 167; pro-
praetor of Syria, his death, 391.
Flaccus Vespasianus, 126 and n.; put
to death, 371.
Flamen Dialis, the, 241; discussion as
to appointment of, 276-7; new regu-
lation made, 277.
Flaminian Way, 191 and n.
Flavus, brother of Arminius, 110, 111.
flows, where stationed, 263.
Fleum, a fort, 334.
Florus, Julius, 224-6.
Flotilla, built by Germanicus, 107; over-
taken by a storm, 120, 121.
Fonteius, see Agrippa, Capito.
Fors Fortuna, 140.
Fortuna Eques, 252.
forum Augustum, 50 n.; f. Iulium,
29 n.
Forum Iulii, a colony, 164.
Fosse of Drusus, the, 109.
franchise, the Roman, given as a reward,
71 and n.
freemen, largely employed by the
emperors, 267 n.
Free will and Necessity, 386.
Fregellanus, Pontius, sentenced, 419.
friendship, renunciation of, 194, 208.
Frilis, the, 74; their territory and
relation to Rome, 333; their revolt
and successes, 333-5; defeat Roman
army, 335; F. Maiiores and Minoros,
336 n.
frontiers of the empire, 30 n.
Fronto, Vibius, 168.
frumentatio, 266 n.
frumentationes, 4 n.
Fuxius, C. Gemius, 340.
Fulcius, see Trio.
furus censorium, 188 n.
Furias, see Camillus.
Furnius, 312.

G.
Gabinius, 101 n.
Gaetulicus, see Lentulus.
Gaius Caesar, called 'Caligula,' place
of birth of 55 n.; 82; pronounces
the funeral oration on Livia, 340;
protected by Livia and Antonia, 347;
gains the favour of Tiberius, 347;
maries Claudia, 383; his character,
383; courted by Macro, his popu-
ularity, 415; 421.
Gaius Caesar, son of Agrippa, 6 and n.,
105 n.
Galba, Gaius Sulpicius, 234 n.; suicide
of, 400.
Galba, Servius Sulpicius, 377, 384.
Gallia Belgica, Lugdunensis, Narbo-
nensis, 224 n.
Gallio, 88 n.
INDEX.

Gallio, Junius, punished for making a presumptuous motion, 362-3.
Gallus, Aelius, 355 and n.
Gallus, Asinius, 17, 26 and n., 27, 28, 92, 94, 130, 131, 134, 193; motion by, 281; officious motion by, 331; thrown into prison, 349; his death, 387.
Gallus, Caninius, 374.
Gallus, Togonius, 361.
Gallus, Vipsanius, 150.
Garamantes, the, 256, 284, 286.
Gardens of Caesar, the, 359.
Gaul, provinces of, 224 n.
Gellius Publicola, accuses Silanus, 249.
Geminus, condemned, 376.
Geminus, Atidius, 304.
Gemonian stairs, the, 197 and n., 353, 356.
Generalship of Germanicus, unduly exalted by Tacitus, 123 n.
Genius of Augustus, 87 n.
Geography of ancient historians, 118 n.
Germanicus Caesar, son of Drusus Nero, 15; receives proconsular power, 30; title of, 47 n.; his parental and character, 48; his loyalty to Tiberius during the mutiny, 49, 50; speech to mutineers, 49-50; speeches of, to soldiers, 54, 56-8; campaigns against the Germans, 62-4, 68-84, 107-193; granted title of ‘Imperator,’ 72; his night rounds in the camp, 112; has a happy dream, 113; addresses the army, 113; sets up a trophy, 190; summary of his campaigns in Germany, 123-4 nn.; comparison with Alexander the Great, 124 n., 171, 172; his triumph, 140; appointed to an imperium maius in the East, 143; 150-3; visits Egypt, 159-163; ovation voted to G., 164; renounces Piso’s friendship, 165; his dying speech, 170; death and character of, 171-2; grief in Rome at his death, 177-8; honours voted on the death of, 178; funeral procession through Italy, 185; his funeral, popular grief at, 187; the public complain of its simplicity, 188; mystery surrounding the death of, 203, 319.
Germany, Upper and Lower, provinces of, 45 n.
Gladiators, kept by governors, 37 and n.
Gotones, the, 162.
Gracchi, legislation of, 211.
Gracchus, Gaius (son of Sempronius), acquitted, 374; praetor, 379.
Gracchus, Sempronius, put to death, 66.
Gracchus, see Laco.
Granius Marcianus, 407; see also Marcullus.
Gyarus, 250.
INDEX.
INDEX.

M.

Macaulay, on popular rumour as to deaths of princes, 272 n.
Macedonia, 98.
Macedon, province of, 92 and n.
Macrinus, Pompeia, exiled, 382.
Macro, Naevius Sertorius, 351 a, 377, 388, 392, 406; gains influence with Tiberius, 415; courts Gaius, 415; 417, 418; stifies Tiberius at the last, 421.
Macedon, 215.
magi, the, 126 n.
magistrates, how elected under the empire, 30 n.
*magistri iurum, or Augustales, 87 n.
Magnesia, 244 and n.; 315.
Magnesiana, the, of Sipylus, 148.
*mancipia, the law of, 85 and n., 86; gradual development of the law of, 87 and n.; cases of, 89, 244, 252, 280, 282, etc.
Malloventius, 132.
Maluginensis, Servius, *Flamen Dialis, asks for a province, 241; Tiberius decides against him, 253; 276.
Mamarcius, see Scartius.
mancipia, 266 n.
maniple, 33 n.
Manlius, see Ennius, Lepidus.
Manlius, 190.
Marcellus, Granius, 88.
Marcellus, M. Claudius, 5 and n., 141; theatre of, 248.
Marcus, Publius, an astrologer, executed, 133.
Marcomanni, the, 147, 163.
Marcus, see Opsius, Piso.
Marcius, Sextus, 296; condemned, 382.
Maroboduus, 145, 146, 163; sent to Ravenna, 164.
Mars Ultor, temple of, 266 and n.
Mars, the, 53 and n., 70, 122 and n.
Marius, Vibius, 272, 318, 418.
Martins, the, 173, 190 and n.
Marsus, the, 184.
Massilians, petition of the, 304.
*mathematici, 126 n.
Mattiun, 69.
Mauretania, 264.
Mausoleum of Augustus, 17 n.
Mazippa, 151.
Medea, 401.
Medes, the, 402.
Media Atropatene, 102 n.
Megalasian games, 190 n.
Memmius, see Regulus.
Memnon, 163 and n.
Menelaus, 160.
Merula, Apidian, expelled the senate, 302.
Messalla, Corvinus, M. Valerius, 219 and n., 294, 373.
Messalla, or Messalinus, Valerius, son of above, 27, 205 and n.; speaks against Cæcina’s motion as to wives, 319.
Messalla, Volusia, 230; see also Cotta.
Sensenians, the, the contest with the Lacedaemonians about temple, 303.
Miltus, 246 n., 316 n.
military and naval forces of Rome, their total amount, 265 and n.
Minucius Tertius, 366, 367.
Misenum, treaty of, 21 n.
Mithradates, king of Pontus, 101 n.; massacre of Roman citizens ordered by, 275.
Mithridates I., II., III., kings of Parthia, 101–2 n.; M. II., 155, 244, 255.
Mithridates of Iberia, 399, 400.
mixed constitutions, not possible, 292.
Moesia, the province of, 98 and n., 264; difficulty as to the governors of, 304; monetary crisis, 378–381.
Mons Aurasius, 152 n.
Monumentum Ancyranum, 3 n., 25 n.
Moors, the, 151.
Musa, 103 n.
Musulamii, the, 151 and n.
Mutilia Priscia, 273.
Mutina, battles of, 21 n.
mutiny, of Pannonian army, 39–45; in the German army, 45–60.
Myrina, 148.

N.

Nabatae, the, 158.
Naevius, the poet, 86 n.
Nar, the, 97.
Naupactus, 96.
Necessity and Free Will, 386.
*negociatores, their exactions in provinces, 333 n.
Nero, son of Germanicus, 213; marriage of, 214; 269; heard with favour in the senate, 296; 278; imprudence of, 315; subjected to humiliations, 317; watched by Sejanus, 345; 341; N. and Agrippina condemned, 345; put to death, 346.
Nerva, Coecina, 319; deliberately dies of starvation, 390.
Nicophorion, 410.
Nicolopolis, 153, 357.
Nile, the, 160.
Nola, 11.
INDEX.

nominaatio, 30 n.
Noricum, 165 and n.
Numa, Marcus, 372.
Numantina, 383.
numbers, exaggeration of, 324 n.

O.
oath, an, added to make an assertion weighty, 89 and n.; o. of allegiance, 13 and n., 17; o. of obedience, to the acts of the emperor, 85 and n.
Octavia, chosen, 181.
Octavius Fronto, 131.
Odrusae, the, 223.
Olenius, prefect of the Frisii, 333-334.
Opsius, Marcus, 328, 331.
Orosphades, 405.
Orodes I., 101 n., 102 n.; O. II., 102 n.
Orodes, son of Artabanus, 400, 401; O. and Pharasmon, encounter of, 403.
Oscan drama, the, 275.
Othinus, 248, 417.
oration, decreed to Germanicus and Drusus, 164; 193, 204.

P.
Paconianus, Sextius, 363; death of, 407.
Paconius, Marcus, accuses Silanus, 249.
Paecorus, 101 n.
Pacuvius, a legate, 175.
Pagyda, 204.
Palatium, the, 139 n.
Pandateria, 65, 346.
Pannonia, province of, 32 n., 364.
Pansa, Vibius, 90 and n., 21 n.
Papia-Poppaeus, see les.
Papius, Sextius, throws himself out of the window, 490.
Papius Mutilus, 130.
parricide, the death of a, 288 and n.
Parthians, origin and history of, 100-102 and nn.; battle with the Sarmatians, 402.
Passienus, the orator, 384.
pater patriae, 15 n.
patria potestas, 277 and n.
Patuleius, 148.
Paxae, 395.
peace of soldiers, 54 n.
peace with Empire, established by Augustus, 213.
paecuniae vectigales, 366 n.
padaris senatoris, 247.
Pedo, 73.
Perennius, ferment the mutiny in Pannonia, 39; speech of, 33; 44.
Pergamum, 245 and n., 316.
Perinthus, 154.

period of service for legionaries and praetorians, 33 n.
Perpenna, 245.
Perseus, 515.
Persian Gulf, the, 162.
personification of rivers, 97 n.
Petitius Rufus, 398.
Petronius, Publius, 332, 414.
Pharsamenes of Iberia, 399, 400-3; encounter with Orodes, 403.
Philippopolis, 224.
Philipus, L. Marcus, 254.
Philopater, king of Cilicia, 142.
phoenix, the, its appearance in A.D. 33. —392-4 and n.
Phraates, 102, 102 n.
Phraates III. and IV., 101-2 n.
Phraates, son of Phraates IV., 399.
Phrixus, 402.
Pinarius Natta, accuses Cremutius Cordus, 293.
Piso, Gnaeus Calpurnius, 28 and n.; boldly interrogates Tiberius, 89, 90; 134; is appointed to the command of Syria, 143 and n.; his contumacious attitude towards Germanicus, 154-8, 168, 170; quarrels with Germanicus, 168-70; his insolent behaviour during illness of Germanicus, 165; his exultation at death of Germanicus, 173; his letter to Tiberius, passes Agrippina at sea, 174; forced to surrender, 177; visits Drusus in Illyricum, 190; his journey from Illyricum to Rome, 191; his trial, 192-196; the charge of poisoning breaks down, 196; commits suicide, 198; his memorandum read after his death, 199.
Piso, Lucius, son of above, 130, 132 and n., 193 and n., 230; accused and dies, 282.
Piso, Lucius, a praetor, murdered in Spain, 306.
Piso, Lucius, prefect of the city, death of, 371-3; see also 306 n.
Piso, L. Calpurnius, cos. A.D. 27.—323 and n.; see 306 n.
Piso, Marcus, son of Gnaeus, advises his father to go to Rome, 173; his energy, 175; is interrogated by Tiberius, 199; his punishment, 201-2.
Pituanius, Lucius, an astrologer, executed, 131.

Pius Aurelius, 91.
Planasia, 7, 136.
Plantina, wife of Cn. Piso, 143 and n., 156, 197; protected by Augusta, 198; and by Tiberius, 200; pardoned, 202; her execution, 390-1.
Planens, Munatius, 53 and n., 54.
Plautius Silvanus, 91 n., 283.
Plinius, Gaius, historian of the German wars, 86.
Pollio, Annius, 370.
INDEX.

Pollio, C. Asinius, father of Gallus, 97; cos. A.D. 23—259.
Pollio, Vedius, 22 and n.
Pompepioles, 159.
Pompeius, a Roman knight, condemned, 376.
Pompeius, Cn., I.; treats with Phraates III., 101 n.; his third consulship, 212; a law-breaker as well as a law-maker, 212; 204; theatre of, 254, 414.
Pompeius Macer, the praetor, 86.
Pompeius, Sextus, cos. A.D. 14,—13; 193, 217.
Pompeius, Sextus, son of Cn. Pompeius, 3 and n., 238.
Pomponius, see Atticus, Flaccus, Labeo.
Pomponius, Quintus, 381.
Pomponius Secundus, 355.
Pontius, 246.
Pontius Pilate, 137 n.
Poppaeus, see Sabinius.
Porcius, see Cato.
Porta Decumana, 80 and n.
Porta Praetoria, 80 n.
Porta Principali Dextra, 80 n.
Porta Principali Sinistra, 80 n.
Pratoria, 266 n.
praesentiales, 179 n.
praefectus fabrum, 318 n.
praefectus praetorii or praetorior, 14 and n.
praenomen imperatoris, 6 n.
praetor pergrinus, 31 n.
praetorians, pay of, 31 and n.; p. cohorts, two, with Germanicus, 115 and n., 119; p. guards, brought into a fixed camp, 260 and n.; where recruited, their number, 265.
praetorius, 53 n.
prefect of the city, history of the office of, 379—3.
principis, i.; meaning of the term, 2 n.; p. senatus, 2 n.; commands the senate and the comitia, 4 and n.; vague use of the term, 6 n.; 19 and n.
principate, the, as established by Augustus in B.C. 27 and B.C. 23—3 n.; ultimate effects of, 5 n.; divine honours paid to, 23, 87, 95, 207 and nn.
principes inventutus, 2 n., 6.
principia, 53 n.
Priscus, Anchialus, 223, 232.
Priscus, Chiorius, accused and condemned, 232.
proconsulare imperium, see imperium.
Procullian, 257 n.
Propertius, see Celer.
prosecutors, their rewards, 289.
provinces, the, contentment of the, 5; kindly treated under the empire, 93 and n.; enumeration of senatorial and imperatorial, 93—3, n.
provincials, effect of their influx into Rome, 238 and n.; gratitude of, 276.
Ptolemaeus, son of Juba, 284; compliments bestowed on him, 286.
Pyramus, the, 168.

Q.

Quadi, the, 164.
quaesitio viis purgandis, 214 n.
Querquetulans, old name of Caelian hill, 325.
quindicenniari sacris faciundis, 245.
Quintilianus, 374.
Quintilius, see Varus.
Quirinius, P. Sulpicius, 139 and n., 205, 231.
Quirites, 55 and n.

R.

Ractias, 58 and n.
Rameses, conquists of, 161.
Ratze, 97 and n.
regimen legum et morum, 4 n.
Regulus, Livinius, 193 and n.
relationem facere, 192 n.; r. remittere, 192 n.
relagatio, 201 n.
Remmius, slays Voneses, 168.
res prolatae, 134 n.
rewards of prosecutors, 289.
Rhegium, 65.
Rhescopuris, king of Thrace, 165—6; entraps Cotys and puts him to death, is brought to Rome, 167; killed, 168; 233.
Rhine, armies on the, 264.
Rhodes, retirement of Tiberius at, 9 and n., 10 n.; 65, 141, 319.
Rhoemetakes, king of Thrace, 165.
Rhoemetakes, son of Rhescopuris, 167, 283, 264, 308.
rivers, representations of, borne in triumph, 140 and n.
Romanus Hispo, the informer, 88, 89.
Rome, now a pure monarchy, 292.
Rubellius, see Blandus.
Rubrius, a Roman knight, 87.
Rubrius Fabatus, not allowed to escape, 376.
Rufulia, Anna, 222.
Rufius, Avidia, 56.
Rufius Helvius, wins a Civic Crown, 205.
Rutulianus, Junius, recorder of the acta patrium, his presumptuous interference, 341—2.
Rutilius, Publius, 248, 304.
INDEX

S.
Sabinianoi, 257 n.
Sabinus Calvinus, 370.
Sabinus, Poppaeus, 97 and n.; his successes in Thrace, 307–312, 397 n.; 357; death and character of, 408.
Sabinus, Titius, 279; entrapped and accused, 388–390; dirty trick played on him, 330; condemned and executed, 330, 340.
Sacerdos, Caristius, acquitted, 274; sentenced, 419.
Sacrovir, Julius, heads a rising in Gaul, 295–298; his defeat and death, 279.
Salian hymn, 179, and n.
Sallustius Crispus, 13 and n., 139, 214; his great influence, 215.
Sallustius, the historian, 215.
Saloninus, Asinus, 257.
saltus, 64 n., 76 n.
Salvianus, Calpurnius, accuses Marius, 296.
Samothrace, 154.
Sancia, accused, 381.
Sanctuary, right of, abused, 242; investigation of various claims, 242–6; claimed by Cos and Samos, 274; see also asylum.
Sanquinius, an accuser, 366.
Sanquinius Maximus, 364.
Sardis, 147, 246 n., 316.
Sarmatae, the, 400; their mode of fighting, 402.
Satirius Secundus, accuses Cremonius Cordus, 393, 395; 418.
Saturninus, 214.
scalo, 170 n.
Scaurus, Manemarcs, 28 and n., 216, 248, 370; accusation and death of, 395–6 and n.
Scaurus, Marcus, 248.
Scipio, Caecilius, 294.
Scipio, Cornelius, legate of ninth legion, 256.
Scipio, Publius (Africanus), 159; times of, 134.
Scribonia, 126.
Sicythia, 161.
Scythians, the, 586.
Segestes, 68, 70; speech of, 71; 72.
Segigemers, 84.
Segimundus, 70 and n.
Seius, see Strabo, Tubero.
Seianus, Aelius, 39 and n.; inflames the suspicions of Tiberius against Germanicus, 83; 214; honours paid to, 254; becomes all-powerful with Tiberius, 329 and n.; character of, 326; resolves to remove Drusus, 321; corrupts Livilla, 323; murders Drusus by a slow poison, 328; insinuates charges against Agrippina, 293, 297; pretensions to be allowed to marry Livia, 396–9; alarmed by the emperor’s answer, advises Tiberius to live away from Rome, 301; warns Agrippina to beware of poisoning, 314; saves Tiberius in an accident, 321; intrigues with Drusus, son of Germanicus, 322; openly hostile to Agrippina and Nero, 328; statute voted to, 336; base court paid to him in Campania, 336; loses his influence with Tiberius, 348–9; his power of fascination, 348; raised to the consulship, 350; consul, and at the height of his power, 350; forms a conspiracy, 351; his fall and death, 352–3; condemned to be strangled, his statues dragged down, 353; his children executed, 356, 361, 362, 365, 383, 388, 390; character of, as described by Velleius Paterculus, 423 n.
Seleucia, near Antioch, 169.
Seleucia, on the Tigris, its wealth and constitution, 410, 412.
Sennones, the, 143.
Sempronius, see Gracchus.
Senate, the, 4 and n.; High Court for trying foreign princes, 142 n.; criminal jurisdiction of, 150 n.; decides on religious claims, 181 n.; mode of procedure in, 301 n.
senatorial provinces, 92–3 n.
senators, named without praenomen, 91 n.; once called upon, could speak on any subject, 131 n.; see pedarii.
Sentius, Gnaeus, assumes command of Syria, 172; resists Piso, 175; and compels him to surrender, 176, 177; 190.
Seplienciiri Epiolones, 246.
Septimius, a centurion, 47.
Sequani, the, 229.
Serenus, Vibi, 128, 274; accused by his son, 287; charged with other offences by Tiberius, 286.
Serenus, Vibi, son of above, 287–8, 296.
Sertorius, Q., 255.
Servilius, an accuser, punished, 396.
Servilius, Marcus, 146, 206.
Servius, Quintus, 157.
Servius, see Maluginensis.
Severus, see Cassius, Caeceina.
Sextus, see Marius, Paconianus, Pompeius.
servi, or serviri, 67 n.
ships, ancient, how steered, 107 n.
Sibylline Books, the, 92; discussion as to, 374–5.
signa, of the cohorts, 176 and n.
Silanus, Gæeticus, governor of Syria, 106, 143.
INDEX.

Silanus, Decimus, returns from exile, his offence, 206.
Silanus, Gaius, is accused, 248; brow-beaten by Tiberius, 249; writes him a letter of remonstrance, 250; 257.
Silanus, Marcus, 208, 357, 358.
Silius, Gaius, 46, 108, 122, 226, 227, 228, 229; impeached, 279; condemned and commits suicide, 280.
Sinnaces, 399, 400.
Sipylius, see Magnesia.
Sipricus, 48.
slavery for debt in the provinces, 334.
slaves, torturing of, to give evidence against their masters, forbidden, 198 n.
Smyrna, 316, 317 n.
sociates vectigalium, 287 n.
Sodales Augustales, 67 n., 247.
Sosia Gallia, 279, 280.
Spartacus, 255.
Spain, provinces of, 284.
Spetunus, accident to Tiberius at Villa 6, 320.
Spurius Lucretius, 372.
Staius, 287.
standards of the legions, and of the cohorts, 35 n.; restoration of, to Augustus, by Parthiae IV., 103 n.
Statilus, see Taurus.
statue of the emperor, used as an asylum, 221 and 222 n.
Stertinius, 74, 84, 111, 118, 115 n., 116, 120.
Strabo, Seius, father of Sejanus, 13, 39, 249.
Stratonicea, 244.
subscriber, 88 n.
subscriptores, 88 n.
Suetonius, records every sinister rumour, 176 n.
Suevi, 59 and n., 244, 145, 164, suicide, why so often resorted to, 395.
Suillius, Publius, convicted of bribery and deported, 490.
Sulla, L. Cornelius, dominatio of, 1; 101 n., 155, 512, 317, 477.
Sulla, Lucius, a young noble, 216.
Sulpicius, see Galba, Quirinius.
suetovavrilia, 404.
Surena, the, crowns Tigidates, 411.
Syene, 162.

T.

Tacianatas, 151; renews war in Africa, 204; defeats a cohort, 204; commences a guerilla warfare, 205; 217, 255; end of war with, 283-6; finally defeated and killed, 286.
Tatius, his impartiality, a n.; his finely balanced periods, 3 n.; his powers of condensation, 18 n.; tendency to mention evil rumours, 11 n., 12 and n., 15 n., 21 n., 23 nn., 24 n., 66 and n., 93 and n., 199 n., 318, 319 and n.; asserts as fact what has been previously mentioned as rumour, 171 n., 327 n., 360 n.; thinks it necessary to record all rumours, 199 n.; warns his readers against sensational rumours, 274; states fairly views opposed to his own, 61 n., 90 n.; suggests foul play, 6 and n., 10 and n., 11 and n., 21 n.; pays handsome tribute to Tiberius, 416 n.; is hard on women, 82 n.; makes cruel comments, 151 n.; fails to appreciate political problems in Germany, 123 n.; undue partiality towards Germanicus, 128 n., and 172 n.; denunciation of de- latores and the law of maiestas, 125 and n.; his admiration for noble birth, 208 n., 391 n.; and for legal attainments, 292 n.; perverted view of Roman legislation, 212 n.; his idea of the function of history, 247 n.; takes sometimes a popular view of history, 291 n.; but regards truth as the supreme object of the historian, 274 n.; depreciates his own subject, 291-3 and 4 n.; cannot be regarded as a political philosopher, 292 n.; dislikes strict administration, 289 n.; a keen critic of human nature, 203 n.; names his sources of information, 314 n.; not fair to Livia, 332 n.; but more fair to her on her death, 339 n.; his belief in Fate, 337 n., 342-9 n., 385, 316 n.; his belief in astrology, 320, 385-6 and nn.; believes in the Phoenix, 304 and n.; rhetorical endings of his books, 337 n.
Tamatana, the goddess, 63.
Tarentum, treaty of, 22 n.
Tarpeian Rock, the, 288.
Tarraco, permitted to set up a temple to Augustus, 95 and n.
Tarsa, a Thracian leader, 310.
Tarver, Mr., his book on 'Tiberius the Tyrant,' 93 n., 392 n., and 424 n.
Tatius Gratianus, 407.
Tatius, Titus, 67.
Taurus, Mount, 69 and n.
Taurus Statilus, 254: prefect of the city, 373.
taxes, Farmed by sociates equitum, 267 n.: t. in kind, 333 and n.
Tedius, Q., 22.
Temnos, 140.
temple of Mars Ultor, 165 and n.
temple of Saturn, 140.
temple of Venus, see Venus.
temple to Tiberius, proposed by Spain, 296.
temples to Augustus, see Augustus.
tempulum, 63 n.
Tencteri, the, 64 n.
INDEX.

Tenians, the, 245.
Terentius, Marcus, his bold speech, 368, 369.
Terentinius, the, 306.
terror in Rome, 220-31.
Teutoburgian forest, 64 n., 74 and n.
Thala, 205.
theatrical riots, 94 and n.
Theophranes, 155.
Thevesta, 152 n.
Thothmosis III, 161 n.
Thracian fort, besieged and captured, 309-12.
Thracian tribes subdued, 307-12.
Thrasybulus, 384; how he established his credit with Tiberius, 385.
Thubuscum, 284.
Tiber, floods of the, 92 and n., 96, 97; causes of, 96 n.
Tiberius Claudius Nero, father of the emperor, 338.
Tiberius Claudius Nero, otherwise Tiberius Caesar, adopted by Augustus, 92; his character canvassed, 9; succeeds Augustus, 11, 23; his hesitation as to accepting the government, 15; he gives way, 29; studied ambiguity of his language, 24, 25 n.; jealousy of Livia, 29; prohibits excessive honours to her, 29, 30; his early campaigins, 40 n.; letter of T. read to the legions, 40; censured for not going in person to quell the mutiny, 60; his reasons for not going, 61; yet professes an intention to go, 61; displeased with Germanicus, 65, 81, 139; his moroseness, 67 n., 93; exasperated by anonymous verses, 87; 89; attends in the senate as an ordinary senator, 90 n.; takes his place on the judicial bench, 90 and n.; has a passion for detail, 91 n.; instances of his generosity, 91-2, 148, 181, 325, 414; sets his face against superstitious observances, 92 and n.; respects every utterance of Augustus, 94; 95; keeps governors long in the same command, 97, 98 n.; hailed as 'Imperator,' 117 and n.; recalls Germanicus from Germany, 124; 139, 133, 135; crushing reply to Hortianus, 137; prefers diplomacy to force, 165 and n.; dislikes settlements once made to be disturbed, 166; his joy at birth of twins to Drusus, 180; hires a price for corn, 181; proud reply to Agrippaeus, 182; declines title of Pater Patriae, etc., 182 and n.; his pleasure at death of Germanicus, 186; issues a consoling edict after his funeral, 189; remits Piso to the senate for trial, 192; speech at the trial, 194-5; mitigates punishment of Piso and family, 203; appoints a commission to inquire into the Papia-Poppaean law, 213; another to regulate the money-market, 213; joint consul with Drusus, 216; unconcerned by news of Gallic revolt, 228; his statue, 222; professes an intention to visit Gaul, 230; letter to senate on luxury of times, 235-7; recommends Drusus to the senate, 240; 243; his government deteriorates, 258; professes intention to visit provinces, 263; general character of his administration, 265-7; his fortitude on the death of Drusus, 268-9; commits his grandsons to the senate, 269; talks of restoring the Republic, 270; engrossed in public affairs, 273; exempted from tributes, 274; incensed by honour paid to Nero and Drusus, 278; his use of ancient formulæ, 280; his anxiety to get at the truth, 283 n.; abets informers, 289; declines divine honours, 297-8; evades petition of Sejanus to be allowed to marry Livia, 299; sensitive to personal attacks, 302; suspected by Agrippina, 314; retires into Campania, his motives, 318; his personal appearance, his return, 319; accident at Spelunca, 320; hates games of all kinds, 323; settles at Capri, 326-7; shrinks from public view, his vicious life, 327; his apprehension of plots, 321; prizes his own dissimilation, 322; makes no mention of Frisian disaster, 335-6; statues voted to, 336; his deference to his mother, 340; limits honours paid to his mother after her death, 340; attacks Agrippina and Nero, 341-2; denounces grandson and daughter-in-law, 343; summons Gaius to Capri, 347; begins to distrust Sejanus and resolves on his ruin, 349; denounces Sejanus in a secret dispatch to the senate, 351; accounts of debauched life at Capri to be doubted, 360 n.; his grim humour, 362 and n.; his pathetic letter to the senate, 365; asks for an escort to Rome, 377; orders a general massacre of friends of Sejanus, 383; consults an astrologer, 384 and n.; denounces Drusus after his death, 388; his occasional brutal frankness, 389 and n.; tries to dissuade Cocceius Nerva from suicide, 390; his policy towards Parthia, 398, 405 n.; his cruelty, 406; his toleration of free speech, 407; his want of self-confidence, 44 n., 420 n., 408 n.; builds temple to Augustus, restores theatre of Pompey, 414; hesitates as to succession, 415; regards opinion of poverty, 416; reproaches Macro, reproaches Macro, this prophecy to Gaius, 417; his
INDEX.

heath fails, 420; his death, career, and character, 420-424 and nn.; character of, as described by Velleius Paterculus, 423 n.; Tiberius as a constitutionalist, 425 n.; his occasional leniency, 451 n.; his kind treatment of the provinces, 93 n.; his balance of mind upset at last, 378 n.; reasons for his cruelty, 397 n.; his love of servitas, even at his own expense, 407 n.; his life embittered by divorce of Vipsania, 27 n.

Tigranes, king of Armenia, 101 n.; Tigranes I., II., III., and IV., 104 n., 105 and n.; T. IV., accused and punished, 408.

Tiridates 102 n.

Tiridates, grandson of Phraates IV., set up as king of Parthia by Tiberius, 399, 404; occupies Greek towns, is welcomed at Seleucia, 410; favours the popular party, 411; crowned by the Surenas, 411; his supineness, 412; retires into Syria, 413

Titus, see Sabinus.

Tmolus, 148

Togonius, see Gallius.

tolerance of Rome towards foreign cults, 88 n.

Torquatus, 252.

Trebezzes, 186 n.

Tryphes, 315.

Trebellianus, Rufus, 167, 202; death of, 427.

Trebellius, Marcus, reduces the Clitae, 410.

Treveri or Treviri, the, 55 n.; revolt of, 225-6.

trials for treason, different forms of, 192, 193 n.; see maiestas.

tribuni militum, 33 n.

tributian power (tributaria potestas), 3 n., 4 and n.; conferred on Tiberius, 7 and n., 93 and n.; 90 n.; title devised by Augustus, its meaning, conferred on M. Agrippa, Tiberius, and Drusus, 229-30; 239 n.

tributum, 265 n.; t. capitis, t. soli, 301 n., 317 n.

Trinacria, island of, 322.

Trio, Fulvius, 127 and n.; denounces Piso, 192; accuses Piso, 195; rewarded, 303, 351, 354, 358, 364; his suicide, 406.

Triumphal Gate, 17.

triumphant ornaments, 65 and n., 155.

triumvirate, the first and second, 1; 3 and n.; the second, 21 n.; confiscations by, 21 n.

tuba, the, 81 n., 177 n.

tubans, 164 and n.

Tubero, Seius, 118 and n., 259 n., 288.

Tullianum, the, 288, 353.

Turesis, a Thracian leader, 310.

Turoel, the, revolt of, 225.

Turranius, Gaius, 13.

Twelve Tables, the, 211, 379.

Tyrrhenus, son of Atys, 316.

U.

Ubii, the, 46 and n., 51, 52, 84; altar of the, 53, 70 and n.

urban cohorts, 265.

Urgulanus, 228, 283.

Usipetes, the, 64 and n.

usury, laws about, 376-9.

us, remarkable use of, 133 n., 134 n.

videntia, 234 n.

V.

Vahala, 208.

Valerius, see Messalla.

Valerius Naso, 318.

Vandotena, 65 n.

Vannius, 164.

Varilla Appuleia, 149.

Varro Viscilius, 226, 227; see also Murena.

Varus, Quintilius, defeat of, 8 and n.; disaster of, 22 and n.; 68, 71; scene of the disaster to, 74 n., 75; 84.

Varus, Quintilius (probably son of above), accused by Domitius Afer, 326.

vexillationis, 267 n.

Vedius, see Petlio.

Vegetable Market, 140.

Veline lake, the, 97.

Vellaeus, Publius, puts down the Thracians, 224.

Velleius Paterculus, on character of Tiberius and Sejanus, 423 n.

Ventidius, P., 101 n.

Venus, Stratonicis, 245; Paphian, 245; temple of, on Mt. Eryx, 304.

Veranius, Quintus, legate of Cappadocia, 127; 172, 193, 198, 203.

Vesicularis, see Flaccus.

Vespasian, 238.

Vestal Cornelia, the, sum granted to, 277.

vestibulum, 129 n.

Vestilla, 180.

Veterni, 59 and n.

Vestikarti, 33 n., 53 n.

Vestilium, 33 n., 53 n., 49 n., 116.

Via Flaminia, 191 n.

Via Quintana, 53 n.

vixia, of a Roman camp, 53 n.

Vibenna, see Caesae.

Vibilus, 164.

Vibius, see Moreo, Marsus, Serenus.

Vibulenus, his barangue, 37, 38; 44; see also Agrippa.
INDEX.

Vicus, 87 n.
Vicus Tuscus, 326.
Vigintidiviratus, 213 n.
vine-rod, instrument of military punishment, 38 and n.
Vinicianus, son of Pollio, 370.
Vinicius, Marcus, marries Julia, daughter of Germanicus, 377; 414.
Vinicius, Publius, 193.
Vipsania, first married to Tiberius and then divorced, 27 and n.; afterwards married to Asinius Gallus, 27 and n.; death of, 304.
Vipsanius, see Agrippa, Gallus.
Visellius, see Varro.
Vistilius, Sextus, accused, 369.
Vitellia, 432.
Vitellius, Lucius, appointed to command in the East, his character, 399, 400; crosses the Euphrates and retires, 402-6; 409.
Vitellius, Publius, his retreat by land, 83; 84, 107, 172, 192, 196, 203, 355; wife of, 417.

Vitellius, Quintus, 149.
Vitia, 370.
Vocal Memnon, 161 n.
Volesus, see Messalla.
Volusius, Lucius, 314.
Vonones, king of Parthia, 102, 103 and nn., 104, 106, 157, 159, 168.
Votienus Montanus, accused of vilifying the emperor, and punished, 302.
Vulciatus Moschus, 304.

W.
Weser, the, 112, 115, 117.

Z.
Zeno, son of Polemo, king of Pontus, 157.

THE END.

PRINTED BY WILLIAM CLOWES AND SONS, LIMITED, LONDON AND BECCLES.